

CORNELL UNIVERSITY LIBRARY



BOUGHT WITH THE INCOME OF THE SAGE ENDOWMENT FUND GIVEN IN 1891 BY HENRY WILLIAMS SAGE



DATE DUE								
			,					
			<u> </u>					
AUG	6.		200					
1			-					



The original of this book is in the Cornell University Library.

There are no known copyright restrictions in the United States on the use of the text.

THE

PALACE OF PLEASURE

VOL. II.

Ballantyne Press
Ballantyne, hanson and co.
Edinburgh and london



ELIZABETHAN VERSIONS OF ITALIAN AND FRENCH NOVELS
FROM BOCCACCIO, BANDELLO, CINTHIO, STRAPAROLA,

QUEEN MARGARET OF NAVARRE,

AND OTHERS

DONE INTO ENGLISH

BY WILLIAM PAINTER

NOW AGAIN EDITED FOR THE FOURTH TIME
BY JOSEPH JACOBS

VOL. II.



LONDON: PUBLISHED BY DAVID NUTT IN THE STRAND

MDCCCXC



TABLE OF CONTENTS.

VOLUME II.

TOME I.—Continued.

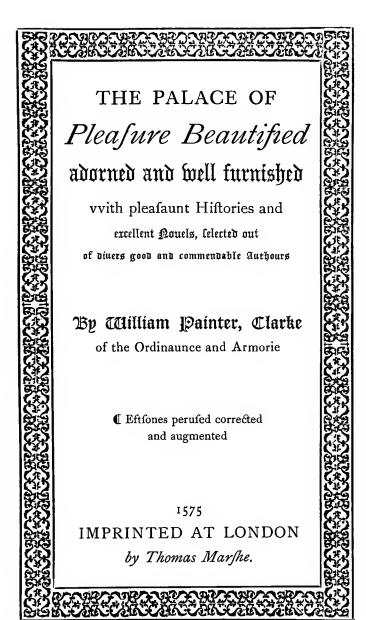
NOVEL											PAGE
XLVII.	GALGANO A	ND MA	DONN	A M	INOCC	IA		•			3
XLVIII.	DUKE OF V	ENICE	AND	RICC	IARDO	٠.		:			8
XLIX.	FILENIO SI	STERNO)								1.8
L.	MULETEER'	S WIFE	•								29
LI,	KING OF N	APLES					• •				32
LII.	PRINCESS (OF FLA	NDER:	3							38
LIII.	AMADOUR	AND FI	ORIN	DA		• .					45
LIV.	DUKE OF F	LOREN	ĆE								75
LV.	FRANCIS I.	AND C	COUNT	ĠŪI	LLAUI	Æ					81
LVI.	LADY OF P	АМРЕЬ	JNA								84
LVII.	STRANGE I	UNISHI	MENT	OF A	DULT	ERY					97
LVIII.	PRESIDENT	OF GR	ENOB	LE							101 🕊
LIX,	GENTLEMA	N OF P	ERCH	E							104
LX.	GENTLEMA	THAT	DIEI	OF	LOVE						107
LXI.	LADY, OF T	HE FR	ENCH	COUR	RT						113
LXII.	ROLANDINI	Ξ.									116
LXIII.	THE PRUD	ENT LA	DY								135
LXIV.	LADY OF T	OURS									139
LXV.	DOCTOR OF	LAWS									142
			T	'OMI	E II.						
TITLE											T 45
-		•	•	٠.	• '	•	•	•	•		147
DEDICA	_	•	•	•	•	•	•	•	•	•	149
CONTE		•	•	•	•	•	•	•	•	•	154
AUTHOI	RITIES .	•	•	•	•	•	•	•	•	•	158

vi

CONTENTS.

NOVEL						PAGE
II.	ALEXANDER AND SISIGAMBIS	3.				166
III.	TIMOCLIA OF THEBES .				٠	172
IV.	ARIOBARZANES					176
v.	ARISTOTEMUS THE TYRANT					209
VI.	TANAQUIL					22 I
VII.	SOPHONISBA					236
VIII.	PORIS AND THEOXENA .					252
IX.	LADY OF HIDRUSA .					256
x.	EMPRESS FAUSTINA .					260
XI.	TWO MAIDS OF CARTHAGE					264
XII.	LETTERS OF TRAJAN .					279
XIII.	LAMIA, FLORA, AND LAIS					301
XIV.	ZENOBIA					311
xv.	EUPHEMIA AND ACHARISTO					320
XVI.	MARCHIONESS OF MONFERRA	OTA				338
XVII.	ANSALDO AND DIANORA					342
XVIII.	MITHRIDANES AND NATHAN					348
XIX.	KATHARINE OF BOLOGNA					355 🛩
xx.	THORELLO AND SALADIN					363
XXI,	ANNE OF HUNGARY .					383
XXII.	ALEXANDER DE MEDICI					106

	V			
	•			
•				
	*			



VOL. II. A



The Palace of Pleasure.

THE FORTY-SEUENTH NOUELL.

A gentleman called Galgano, long time made fute to Madonna Minoccia: her husband sir Stricca (not knowing the same) divers times praised and commended Galgano, by reason whereof, in the absence of her husband, she sent for him, and yelded herself vnto him, tellinge him what wordes her husbande had spoken of him, and for recompence he refused to dishonest her.

N the Citie of Siena in Italie there was a rich yong Gentleman called Galgano, borne of noble birth, active, and wel trained in al kinde of exercise, valiaunt, braue, stoute and curteous, in the maners and orders of all countries verye skilfull. This Galgano loued a Gentlewoman of Siena named Madonna Minoccia, the wyfe of fir Stricca a comely knight, and wore in his apparell the colour and deuises of his Lady, bearing the same vppon his helmet and armour, in all Iustes, Tourneyes and triumphes, obseruing noble feaftes and banquettes for her fake. But for all those costly, fumptuous and noble practifes, this Lady Minoccia in no wyfe would give eare vnto his futes. Wherfore Galgano at his wittes ende, was voyde of aduife what to do or faye, feing the great crueltie and rigor raigning in her brefte, vnto whom hee dayle prayed for better successe and fortune than to himselfe. There was no feast, banquet, triumph, or mariage, but Galgano was there, to do her humble service, and that daye his minde was not pleafed and contented, wherein he had not feene her that had his louing harte in full possession. Very many times (like a Prince

that coueted peace) he fente Ambassadours vnto her, wyth presentes and meffages, but she (a proude and scornefull Princesse) dayned neither to heare them or receive them. And in this state stode this paffionate Louer a longe time, tormented with the exceeding hote Loue and fealtie that he bare her. And many times making his reuerent complaints to loue, did fay: "Ah Loue, my deare and foueraigne Lorde, how cruell and hard harted art thou, how vnmercifully dealest thou with me, rather how deaf be thine eares, that canst not recline the fame to my nightly complaintes, and dailye afflictions; How chaunceth it that I do in this maner confume my joyfull dayes with pining plaintes? Why doest thou suffer me to Loue, and not to be beloued?" And thus oftentimes remembringe the crueltie of loue, and his ladies tyrrany, hee began to dye in maner like a wight replete with despaire. But in fine, he determined paciently to abide the good time and pleasure of Loue, still hoping to finde mercie: and daily gaue himselfe to practise and frequent those thinges that might be acceptable and pleasant to his Lady, but shee still perfifted inexorable. It chaunced that fir Stricca and his fayre wyfe, for their solace and recreation, repaired to one of their houses hard by Siena: and upon a time, Galgano paffing by with a Sparhauke on his fifte, made as though he went on Hauking, but of purpose onely to see his lady. And as he was going by the house, fir Stricca espied him, and went forth to meete him, and familiarly taking him by the hand, prayed him to take parte of his supper with his wyfe and him: for which curtefie Galgano gaue him thanckes, and faid: "Sir, I do thancke you for your curteous requeste, but for this time I pray you to hold me excused, because I am going about certaine affayres very requisite and neceffary to be done." Then fayde fir Stricca: "At leaft wife drincke with mee before you depart." But giving him thankes he bad him farewell. Maifter Stricca feing that hee could not cause him to tary, toke his leaue, and retourned into his house. Galgano gone from maistre Stricca, sayd to himselfe: "Ah, beast that I am, why did I not accept his offer? Why should shamefastness let me from the fight of her, whom I loue better than all the world befides." And as he was thus penfife in complaintes his spaniells sprong a Partrich, wherat he let flee his Hauke, and the Partrich flying into fir Stricca his garden, his Hauke purfued and feaffed vppon the fame. Maister Stricca and his Ladye hearinge that pastime, ranne to the garden window, to see the killing of the Partrich: and beholding the valiante skirmishe betweene the foule and the hauke, the lady asked whose hauke it was: her husband made aunswere that he knew well inoughe the owner, by the goodnesse and hardines of the same. "For the owner of this hauke (quoth hee) is the trimmest and most valiaunt gentleman in all Siena, and one indued with beste qualities." The lady demaunded what he was? "Maister Galgano (said her husband,) who euen now passed by the gate, and I prayed him very earnestly to supper, but hee woulde not be intreated. And truly wyfe, he is the comliest gentleman, and moste vertuous personage, that euer I knewe in my life." With those wordes they wente from the windowe to supper: and Galgano, when he had lured his Hauke, departed awaye. The Lady marked those words and fixed them in minde. It fortuned within a while after, that fir Stricca was by the state of Siena sent in ambassage to Perugia, by reason wherof, his Lady at home alone, fo fone as her husband had taken his iourney, fent her most fecrete and trustie maide, to intreat maister Galgano, to come and speake with her. When the message was done to Galgano, (if his heart were on a merie pinne, or whether his spirits dulled with continuall forrowe were againe reuiued, they knowe that most have felte the painefull pangues of Loue, and they also whose flesh have beene pearced with the amorous arrowes of the little boy Cupide:) he made aunswere that hee would willingly come, rendringe thanckes both to the maistresse and maide, the one for her paine, and the other for her good remembraunce. Galgano vnderstanding that fir Stricca was gone to Perugia, in the eueninge at convenient time, repaired to the house of her whose fight he loued better than his owne eyes. And being come before his Lady, with great submission and reuerence hee saluted her, (like those whose hartes do throbe, as foretellinge the possession of good tournes and benefites, after which with longe fute and trauaile they have aspired) wherewith the Lady delighted, very pleafantly took him by the hande, and imbracing him, faid: "Welcome mine owne sweet Galgano, a hundred times I say wel-

come." And for the time with kiffes, makinge truce with their affections, the lady called for comfictes and wyne. And when they had dronke and refreshed themselues, the lady toke him by the hande and faid: "My fweete Galgano, night beginneth to paffe awaye, and the time of fleepe is come, therefore let vs yeld our felues to the feruice and commaundment of our very good Ladye, madame Cytherea, for whose fake I intreated you to come hither." Galgano aunswered, that he was very wel contented. within the chamber, after much pleasaunte talke and louing discourse betweene them, the Lady did put of her clothes, and went to bed. Galgano being fomewhat bashfull, was perceyued of the Lady, vnto whom she said: "Me thincke, Galgano, that you be fearful and shamefast. What do you lacke? Do I not please you? Doth not my personage content you? Haue you not the thing which you defire?" "Yes madame," faid Galgano: "God himfelf could not do me a greater pleasure, than to suffer me to be cleped within your armes." And reasoning in this fort, he put of his clothes also, and laide himselse by her, whom he had coueted and defired of long time. Being in the bed, he faid: "Madame, I befeech you graunt me one resquest." "What is that, Galgano?" (quoth she.) "It is this, madame," said Galgano: "I do much maruell, why this night aboue all other, you have fent for mee: confidering how long I have bin a futer vnto you, and although I have profecuted my fute, by great expence and trauaile, yet you would never yelde before now: what hath moued you now thus to do?" The Lady answered: "I wil tell you fir: true it is, that not many dayes agoe, paffing by this house, with your Hauke on your fifte, my husband told me that so sone as he sawe you, he wente oute to meete you, of purpose to intreate you to supper, but you would not tarrie: then your Hauke purfued a Partrich, euen into my garden, and I feing the Hauke fo egerly feafing vpon the same, demaunded of my husband whose Hauke it was. He told me that the Hauke did belong to the most excellent your man of all Siena: and that he neuer in all his life knewe a gentleman better accomplished with all vertues and good qualities, and therewithall gaue vnto you finguler prayse and commendacion. Whereuppon hearing him in fuch wife to prayfe you, and knowing righte well your affectionate minde and disposition towards mee, my hart attached with love, forced me to fende for you that I mighte hereafter auoyde disdaine and other scornefull demeaner, to impeache or hinder your loue: and this briefely is the cause." "Is this true?" faid Galgano. "Most certaine and true," aunsweared the Lady." "Was there no other occasion?" "No, verely:" faid the lady. "God defend," (quoth Galgano,) "that I should recompence the curtefie and good will of fo noble a gentleman (as your husband is) with reproch and villany. Is it meete that good turnes should be requited with vnkindnes? If euer man had cause to defende the honor of his vnknowen frend, cause haue I right good and apte. For now knowinge fuch a frende, that would by vertuous reportes haue aduaunced me to higher matters, than wherof I am in possession, should I reward with pollucion of his stocke and wife? No, no, lady! my raginge sute by loue, is by vertue quenched. Vertue onely hath staunched the slames of vile affections. Seeke another frende, to glut your lecherous minde. Finde out some other companion, to coole thy disordinate loue. Shal I be difloyal to him, that hath been faithfull vnto me? Shall I be traytor to him, that frendly hath commended me? What can be more required of humane hearte, or more defired of manlike mind, but wilfull bente, and fixed to do him good, that neuer erst by iuste desert deserved the same." With which wordes fodenly hee lept out of the bed, and when he had furnished himfelfe againe with his apparell, hee also put vppon him vertuous friendship, and takinge his leave of the Lady, never after that time he gaue himself to matters of Loue. And maister Stricca he continually observed both with finguler love and dutiful friendship: whereby it is vncertaine whether was most fingular in him, his continency at the very inftante by refrayning that vehement heate

of loue, which so long time with great trauaile and coste he had pursued, or his regard of frendship to fir Stricca vppon wordes of commendacion spoken behinde his backe. Both no doubte be singuler vertues meete for all men to be observed: but the subduing of his affections surmounted and passed.

THE FORTY-EIGHTH NOUELL.

Bindo a notable Architect, and his fonne Ricciardo, with all his familie, from Florence went to dwell at Venice, where being made Citizens for divers monuments by them done there, throughe inordinate expences were forced to robbe the Treasure house. Bindo beinge slaine by a pollicie devised by the Duke and state, Ricciardo by fine subtelties delivereth himselfe from four davingers. Afterwards the Duke (by his owne confession) understandinge the sleightes, giveth him his pardon and his doughter in mariage.

In the goodly citie of Venice there was once a duke, that was a noble gentleman and of greate experience and wifedome, called Valeriano di messer Vannozzo Accettani. In the chiefest Churche of which Citie called San Marco, there was a steple, very faire and fumptuous, and of greatest fame of any thinge at that time that was in Venice, which steeple was like to fall downe by reason of certaine faultes and decayes in the foundacion. Wherfore the Duke caused to be searched thorow out all Italie, fome cunning workeman that would take in hand the reparacion. and amendmente of the fame: with promise of so much money as he would demaund for doing thereof. Whereuppon an excellent Architect of Florence, named Bindo, hearing tel of this offer, determined to go to Venice for the accomplishmente of that worke, and for that purpose with his onelye sonne and wyfe, hee departed Florence. And when he had feene and furueyed the steeple, he went straight to the Duke, and told him that he was come thither to offer his feruice for repayringe of the fame, whom the Duke'curteously intertayned and prayed him, that he would so some as he coulde begin that worke. Whereunto Bindo accorded, and wyth great diligence and fmall time he finished the fame, in better forme and furety than it was at the first: which greatly pleafed the Duke, and gaue Bindo fo much money as he demaunded, making him befides a Citizen of Venice, for the maintenaunce of whose state, hee allotted him a sufficient stipend: afterwards the Duke called him vnto him, and declared that he would have a Treasure house made, wherein should be disposed and layde vp all the Treasure and common ornamentes for the furniture of the whole Citie, which Bindo by and by toke vppon him to do, and made it of fuch finguler, beautie, as it excelled all the monuments of the Citie, wherein all the faid Treasure was bestowed. In which worke hee had framed a stone by cunninge, that mighte be remoued at pleasure, and no man perceive it: meaning thereby to goe into the Chamber when he lifte: whereunto none in all the world was privile but himselfe. When this Palace and Treasure house was done, he caused all the furnitures of Silkes, hanginges, wrought with Golde, Canapees, clothes of state, riche Chayres, Plate, and other Ornaments of Golde and Siluer to be caried thither, whiche he called La Turpea del Doge, and was kept vnder fiue keyes: whereof foure were deliuered to foure of the chiefe Citizens, deputed to that office, which were called Chamberlaynes of the Treasure house, and the fift keye the Duke himfelfe did keepe, fo that the Chamber coulde not bee opened excepte they were all fiue presente. Nowe Bindo and his famelie dwelling at Venice, and beinge a citizen there, beganne to spende liberallye and to liue a riche and wealthye life, and hys fonne Ricciardo confumed difordinatelye, whereby in space of time, they wanted Garmentes to furnishe their bodies, whiche they were not able to maintaine for their inordinate expences: wherefore the father vpon a night calling his fonne vnto him, got a ladder, and a certaine yron instrumente made for the purpose, and taking also with him a litle lime, went to the hole, which Bindo artificially had made, who taking out the stone, crept in, and toke out a faire cup of gold, which was in a closet, and afterward he wente out, cowching the stone againe in due place. And when they were come home, they brake the cup and caused it to be solde by peece meale, in certaine Cities of Lombardie. And in this forte, they maintayned their disordinate life begonne. It chaunced not long after, that a Cardinall arrived at Venice, about affayres with the Duke, and the state. who the more honorablie to receive him, opened the Treasure house to take oute certaine furnitures within, as plate, clothes

of state, and other thinges. When the dore was opened, and had taken out the faide neceffaries, they founde a cuppe leffe than oughte to be, wherewith the Chamberlaines contended amonge themselues, and wente to the Duke, telling him that there wanted a cuppe: whereat the Duke marueiled, and faid that amonges them it must needes be gone. And after many denialls, and much talke, he willed them to fave nothing, till the Cardinall was departed. When the Cardinall was come, he was receyued with honorable interteignemente, and beinge departed, the Duke fente for the foure Chamberlaines, to confult about the loffe of the cup, commaunding them not to departe the Palace before the fame was found, faying that amongs them it muste needes be These four persons being together, and debating how and by what meanes the cup should be taken away, were at their At length one of them faide: "Let vs confider whether ther bee anye comminge into the Chamber besides the doore." And viewinge it they coulde not perceive anye entrie at And to proue the fame more effectuallye, they strawed all. the chamber aboute with fyne fifted chaffe, fetting the fame on fier, which done, they shutte fast the windowes and doores, that the finoke and fmoulder might not goe out. The force of which fmoke was futche as it iffued through the hole that Bindo made, whereby they perceived the way howe the robbery was committed, and went to the Duke to tell him what they had done. The duke vnderstanding the fact, wylled them to fave nothing, for that he woulde deuise a pollicie how to take the theese: who caused to be brought into the chamber a caldron of pitche, and placed it directly vnder the hole, commaunding that a fyre should be kept daye and night vnder the caldron, that the fame might continually boyle. It come to passe that when the money was fpent which the father and fonne had received for the cup. one night they went agayne to the hole, and remouing the stone, the father went in as he did before, and fell into the caldron of pitche (which continually was boyling there) vp to the waste, and not able to liue any longer, he called his fonne vnto him, and fayde: "Ricciardo myne owne fweete fonne, death hath taken me prysoner, for halfe my body is dead, and my breath also is

ready to departe. Take my head with thee, and burie it in fome place that it be not knowen, which done, commend me to thy mother, whome I pray thee to cherishe and comforte, and in any wyse take hede that warely and circumspectlye thou doe departe from hence: and if any man do aske for me, say that I am gone to Florence about certaine businesse." The sonne lamentably began to lament his father's fortune, faying: "Oh deare father, what wicked furie hath thus cruelly deuised sodaine death." "Content thy selfe, my sonne," sayd the father, "and be quiet, better it is that one should dye, than twoo, therefore doe what I have tolde thee, and fare well." The fonne tooke vp his father's head, and went his waye, the reste of his bodye remayned in the caldron, like a block without forme. When Ricciardo was come home, he buried his father's head fo well as he could, and afterwardes tolde his mother what was become of his father, who vnderstanding the maner of his death, began piteously to cry out, to whom her sonne holding up his hands, sayd: "Good mother holde your peace, and geue oner your weeping: for our life is in great perill and daunger, if your outcrie be heard. Therefore good mother, quiet yourselfe, for better it were for vs to liue in poore estate, than to die with infamie, to the vtter reproche and shame of all our familie." With whiche woordes he appealed her. In the morning the bodye was founde and caried to the Duke, who maruelled at it, and could not deuise what he should be, but fayd: "Surely there be two that committed this robberie, one of them we haue, let vs imagine how we may take the other." Then one of the foure Chamberlaines fayd: "I haue found out a trap to catche the other, if it will please you to heare mine aduife, which is this: Impossible it is, but this theefe that is dead, hath either wife, children, or some kinsman in the citie, and therfore let vs cause the bodie to be drawen throughout the streates, and geue diligent hede whether anye persone doe complaine or lament his death: and if any fuch be found, let him be taken and examined: which is the next way as I fuppose, to finde out his companion." Which being concluded, they departed. The body was drawen throughout the citie with a guard of men attending vpon the fame: as the execu-

tioners passed by the house of Bindo, whose carcasse laye vppon the hurdle, his wyfe stode at the wyndowe, and seing the body of her husband so vsed, made a great outcrie. At whiche noyse the fonne spake to his mother and fayde: "Alas, mother, what do you?" And beholding his father's corps vpon the hurdle, he toke a knife and made a great gashe into his hande, that the bloud aboundantly iffued out. The guarde hearing the noyfe that the woman made, ran into the house, and asked her what fhe lacked. The fonne answered: "I was carning a peece of stone with this knife, and by chaunce I hurt my hande, which my mother feeyng cryed out, thynking that I had hurt myfelfe more than I haue." The guarde feeing his hande all bloudy and cut, did belieue it to be true, and from thence went round about the liberties of the Citie, finding none that feemed to lament or bewayle that chaunce. And returning to the Duke, they tolde him howe all that labour was imployed in vayne, whereupon he appointed them to hang vp the dead body in the market-place, with fecret watche in like maner, to espie if any person by day or night. would come to complaine or be forrowefull for him. Which body was by the feete hanged vp there, and a continuall watche appointed to kepe the fame. The rumor hereof was bruted throughout the Citie, and euery man reforted thither to fee it. The woman hearing tell that her husbandes carcasse should be hanged vp in the market-place, faide diverse times to her sonne, that it was a very great shame for him to suffer his father's body in that shamefull fort to be vsed. To whom her sonne made answere, faying: "Good mother, for God's sake be contented, for that whiche they do is for none other purpose, but to proue me: wherefore be pacient a while, till this chaunce be past." The mother not able to abide it any longer, brake out many times into thefe words: "If I were a man as I am a woman, it should not be vndone now: and if thou wilt not aduenture thy felfe, I will one night give the attempt." The yong man feing the froward nature of his mother, determined to take away the body by this policie. He borrowed twelve friers frockes or cowles, and in the euening went downe to the hauen, and hired twelue mariners, and placed them in a backe house, gening them so much meate and

drinke as they woulde eate. And when they had well whitled and tippled themselues, he put vpon them those friers cowles, with vifards uppon their faces, and gaue euery of them in their hands a burning torch, making them to seme as though they had ben Diuels of hel: and he himfelf rode vpon a horfe al couered with blacke, befet rounde about with monstrous and vglie faces, euerye of them hauinge a burnyng candle in his mouthe, and riding before with a visarde of horrible shape vpon his head, sayde vnto them: "Doe as I doe:" and then marched forward to the market-place. When they came thether they ran vp and downe with roring voyces crying out like Deuils being then past midnight and very darke. When the watche fawe that straunge fight they were affrayde, thinking that they had bene Deuils indeede, and that he on horsebacke in that forme had ben the great Deuill Lucifer himselfe. And seing him runne towardes the gibet, the watche toke their legges and ran away. The vong man in the shape of the great Deuill toke downe the body and layd it before him on horsehacke, who calling his companie away, roode before in poste. When they were come home, he gaue them their money, and vncafing them of their cowles fent them away, and afterwardes buried the body fo fecretly as he could. In the morning newes came to the Duke that the bodye was taken awaye, who fent for the guarde to knowe what was become thereof. To whome they fayde these wordes: "Pleaseth your grace, about midnight last past there came into the marketplace a companie of Deuils, among whom we fawe the great deuil Lucifer himselfe, who as wee suppose did eate vp the bodye, which terrible fight and vision made vs to take our legges." The Duke by those wordes perceived evidently that the same was but a practife to deceive them of their purpose, notwithstanding he determined once again to deuise some meanes in the ende to knowe the truthe, and decreed a constitucion that for the space of xx dayes no fresh meate shoulde be folde in Venice: at which decree all the citie marueiled. Afterwardes he caused a verie faire fatte calfe to be folde, feffing the price of euery pounde at a fiorino, which amounteth to a French crowne or thereaboutes, and willed hym that folde it to note and marke them that bought it: thinking with himselfe, that he which is a theefe is licorous of mouth delicate

in fare and would not stick to gene a good price, although it cost him a French crown for euery pound: making proclamation, that he which would buye any fresh meate should resort to the marketplace where was to bee folde. All the Marchaunts and Gentlemen repaired to buye some of the veale, and understanding that enery pound would not be folde under a Frenche crowne, they bought none at all. This calfe and the price was bruted in all places, and came to the knowledge of the mother of this yong man, who faid vnto her sonne: "I have a minde to eate some of the veale, now folde in the market." Ricciardo annswered: "Mother make no haste to buye it, first let it be cheapened by other, and at length I will deuise a meane that you shall have it: for it is not wysedome for vs to be the firste that shall defire it." The mother like an ignoraunt and vnskilfull woman, was importunate to haue it. The fonne fearing that his mother would fende for fome of the veale, by other, caused a Pie to be made, and prepared a flagon full of wyne, both which were intermixed with thinges to cause sleepe, and taking bread, the fayd Pie, and the flagon of wyne, when it was night, putting on a counterfait beard, and cloke, went to the stall where that veale was to bee folde, which as yet was whole and vnbought. And when he had knocked at the shop dore, one of the guard asked who was there. To whom Ricciardo faid: "Can you tel me wher one Ventura doth kepe his shop?" Of whom one of them demaunded what Ventura? "I know not his furname," fayde Ricciardo, "that I would he had bene hanged, when I came first to dwell with him." "Why who fent thee?" faid one of the guarde. "His wyfe (quod Ricciardo) who bade me cary him this meate and wyne for his supper: but I pray you (fayde Ricciardo,) let me leaue the same with you, till I goe home to know better where he kepeth his stall. And maruell not, my maisters, though I know not where his shop is, for it is not long sithens I came to dwell in this Citie." And so leaving behind him the Pie, and the bread with the flagon of wyne, he made haste to departe, and tolde them that he wold come againe by and by. When he was gone, one of them toke the flagon and drancke, and afterwardes gaue it to his companion, and faid: "Drinke, for thou neuer diddest tast of better wyne in all thy life." His companion dranke, and merily communing of

this matter, they fel a fleepe. Ricciardo loking in at a hole of the dore, feing them a flepe, went in, and toke the calfe, and caried it home whole as it was, and faide to his mother: "Hold, mother, there is your luste, cut it out:" and by and by she cut out a great pece. The duke fo fone as he heard that the calfe was stolen, and the maner howe, did wonder very muche, purposing yet to knowe what hee was: and caused a hundred poore people to come before him, whose names being written, he said vnto them: Get ye to all the houses in Venice, vnder colour to begge almes. And marke if you fee in any house fleshe dressed, or any pece in making ready to be eaten at the fier, which if you doe, ye must be importunate in begging, till they give you either flesh or broth. And he among all you that shal bring me the first newes, I wil giue him xx crownes." These beggers dispersed themselues into euery corner of the Citie, crauing their almes, amongs whom one of them asked his almes at the house of Ricciardo, and approching nere, espied openly fleshe at the spit, and befought a morfell thereof for God's fake: to whom the vndifcrete woman feeing that she had plentye, gaue a litle pece. The poore man thanked the good wife, and prayed God to faue her life. And as hee was going down the steps of the dore, Ricciardo met him with the flesh in his hand. Wherewithall astonned, he willed him to retourne, and fayde he would give him more. The begger glad of that, went in againe, whome Ricciardo caried into his chamber, and when he was within, he strake suche a full blowe vpon his head with an axe, as he killed hym, and threwe him into a iakes, shutting the doore after him. In the euening, these poore men retourned to the duke, according to their promife, and fayde they coulde finde nothing. The Duke called them by their names, and compting the number founde one lesse than he had fent, whereat he maruelled. And after he had well aduifed with himselfe, what should become of him that lacked, he sayde: "Certainely the poore man is Slayne." Then caufing the councell to be affembled, he declared what he had done: and yet fayde that it were meete the party were knowen. Whereunto one of the Senatours fayde: Your grace hath duely made fearch by the belly and mouth, to finde out this verlet: I thinke it nowe necesfarie that triall be made by lechery, whiche commonly accompanieth licorous mouthes." Then it was concluded that the moste riotous and lecherous your men, fuche as the Duke had in greatest fuspicion, to the number of xxv. should be warned to appeare before him: whiche accordingly was done, amonges whome was These yonge roifters affembled in the palace, this Ricciardo. euery of them maruelled wherefore the Duke had caufed them Afterwarde the Duke commaunded xxv. beddes to come thether. to be made in one of his great chambers, to lodge euery of the favd xxv. persons by hymfelf, and in the middes of the chamber he commaunded a riche bed of estate to be set vp and furnished, wher was appointed to ly his own daughter, which was an exceading faire creature. And in the night when these yong men were layde in their beddes, manye gentlewomen attendant vpon the Lady, came in to bryng her to her lodging: and her father deliuered to her a fawcer full of black die, or stayning, and saide vnto her: "If any of these yong men that doe lie here by thee, doe offer to come to thy bedde, looke that thou marke him in the face with this flaining colour, that he may be knowen." At which wordes all the yong men maruelled and therefore durste not attempt to goe vnto her, but faid one to another: "Surely this commaundement of the Duke hath some secrete misterie in it." Notwithstanding Ricciardo determined about midnight to go to her bedde: and when the candle was out being a wake of purpose. he rose vp and went to the gentlewoman's bedde and began to imbrace and kiffe her. The maiden when she felt him, fodainly dipped her finger in the colour and stained his face, not perceived of him. When he had accomplished the thing he came for, hee retourned to his place: and then began to imagin vpon the Duke's wordes, and for what policie he fpake them. And lying a litle while still musing vpon the same, he went againe to the gentlewoman's bedde, having throughly disposed himself to the pleasures of this paradise lambe: and perceiuing her to dippe her finger in the fawcer and rubbe his face, Ricciardo toke away the fawcer from the bedde's fide, and round about bestowed the colour vpon the faces of his felowes, who were so faste a sleepe that they did not fele him. Some he marked

with two fpottes, some with fix and some with x. himselfe he painted but with foure befides those wherewith already he was berayed by the gentlewoman: whiche done he fet the faucer agayne by the bedde's fide, and when he had bidden her farewell, faire and foftly he returned againe to his bedde. In the morning betimes, the damofels of the chamber came in to helpe the ladye to make her readye, which done they wayted vpon her to the duke, who asked her how the matter stode. She aunswered well, for she had done his commaundement: and tolde him howe one came vnto her three times, and every time she gave him a tainte in his face. The duke by and by fent for them that were of his counsell. To whome he faid: "Sirs, I have founde out this good fellow, and therfore I have fent for you, that we altogether may goe to fee him." They went all into the chamber, and viewing them round about, they perceived all their faces coloured, whereat they fell into a great laughter: then one of them fayde to another: "Suerly this fellowe hath the fubtilest head that euer was knowen:" and concluded that one of the company had fet that colour in their faces. The yong men beholding one another paynted in that forte, brake into great sporte and pastime. Afterwardes the duke examined enery of them, and feeing that he was not able by any meanes to vnderstande by whome it was done, he determined to knowe the man before he departed, and promifed to him that should confesse the truthe, to give his daughter to him in mariage, and with her a very great dowrie, and a generall pardon. Wherefore Ricciardo vnderstanding the duke's minde, toke him asyde, and tolde hym the whole matter particularly from the beginning to the ende. The duke imbraced hym, and gaue him his pardon, and with great ioye and triumphe he folemnized the mariage betwene hym and his daughter. Wherewithall Ricciardo encouraged, proued a very floute and valiaunt man in fuche wyfe almoste as the affaires of the whole state passed through his handes.

And liued a long time after, with the loue and good wyll of the whole cominaltie of Venice.

VOL. II. B

THE FORTY-NINTH NOUELL.

Philenio Sisterno, a Scholler of Bologna, being mocked of three faire Gentlewomen, at a banket made of set purpose he was reuenged on them all.

AT Bologna, whiche is the noblest citie of Lombardie, the mother of studies, and accomplished with al things nedefull and requisite for futch a florishing state, there was a yong scholler, a Gentleman of the countrie of Crete named Philenio Sisterno, of very good grace and behauiour. It chanced that in his time, there was a great feast made in the citie, wherunto were bidden the fayrest dames, and beste of reputation there: there was likewyse many Gentlemen and Schollers of Bologna, amonges whom was this Philenio Sifterno: who following the manner of young men, dallying fometime with one, fometime with another, and perceiuing them for his purpofe determined to daunce with one of them: and comming to one whiche was called Emerentiana, the wyfe of fir Lamberto Bentiuoglia, hee prayed her to daunce: who, beyng verie gentle and of no less audacitie than beautiful, refused not. Then Philenio leading forth the daunce very foftly, fometymes wrynging her by the hand, spake fomewhat fecretly vnto her these wordes: "Madame, your beautie is fo great, that without doubt it furmounteth all that ever I fawe, and there is no woman in the world to whome I beare fo great affection, as to your persone, whiche if it were correspondent to me in Loue, I would thinke myself the beste contented man in the world. otherwyse I shall in shorte tyme bee depriued of life, and then you shall be the cause of my death: and louing you (Madame) as I doe. and as my dutie requireth, you ought to take me for your feruaunt, vfing me and those litle goodes whiche I have as your owne: and I doe assure you, that it is impossible for me to receive greater favour from heauen, then to fee myselfe subjecte to sutch a gentlewoman, as you be, whiche hath taken me in a nette lyke a byrde." Nowe Emerentiana, whiche earnestly had marked those sweet and pleasaunt woordes, like a wyfe gentlewoman, femed to geue no eare thereunto, and made him no aunswere at all. The daunce ended, and Emerentiana being

fet down in her place, this young scholler went to take another gentlewoman by the hand, and began to daunce with her: whiche was not fo fone begonne, but thus he faid vnto her: "It nedeth not Madame, that by woordes I doe expresse the feruant Loue which I beare you, and will fo doe, fo long as my poore spirite shall gouerne and rule my members: and if I could obtaine you for my Maistresse and singuler Ladye, I would thinke myself the happiest man aliue. Then louing you as I do, and being wholly yours, as you may easely vnderstand, refuse me not I besech you for your humble feruaunt, fithe that my life and all that I have dependeth vpon you alone." The yong gentlewoman, whose name was Panthemia, perceiging his meaning, did not aunswere him any thing at that time: but honeftly proceded in her daunce: and the daunce ended, fmyling a litle, she sat downe with the other dames. done, amorous Philenio rested not vntil he had taken the thirde by the hand, (who was the gentlest, fairest, and trimmest dame in all Bologna,) and began to daunce with her, romyng abrode, to shewe his cunning before them that came to behold him. And before the daunce was finished, he saide thus vnto her: "Madame, it may so be, as I shall seme vnto you very malapert to manifest the fecret Loue that I have and doe beare you at this instant, for which you ought not to blame me but your beautie, which rendreth you excellent aboue al the rest, and maketh me your slaue and pryfoner. I speake not of your commendable behauiour, of your excellent and maruellous vertues, which be fuch and of fo great effect, as they would make the gods descend to contemplate the same. If then your excellent beautie and shape, so well fauoured by nature, and not by art, may feeme to content the immortall Gods, you ought not to be offended, if the same do constraine me to loue you, and to inclose you in the privile cabane of my harte: I befeeche you then, gentle Madame (the onely comfort of my life) to have pitie vpon him that dieth a thousand times a daye for you. In fo doing, my life shall be prolonged by you, commending me humbly vnto your good grace." This faire gentlewoman called Simphorofia, vnderstanding the sweete and pleasaunt woordes vttered from the very harte of Philenio, could not disfemble her fighes, but waying her honor, because she was maried,

gaue him no answere at all. And the daunce ended, she retourned to her place. Nowe it chaunced, as thefe three ladies did fit together iocundly disposed to debate of fundrie mery talke, behold Emerentiana, the wife of Seignior Lamberto, not for any enill, but in sporting wife faid vnto her companions: "Gentlewomen, I have to tell you a pleafaunt matter which happened to this day." "What is that?" faid her companions. "I have gotten this night, (faid she) in dauncing, a curteous louer, a very faire Gentleman, and of so good behauiour as any in the worlde: who faid that he was fo inflamed with my beauty that he tooke no rest day nor night:" and from point to point, rehearfed vnto them, all that he had faid. Which Panthemia and Simphorofia vnderftanding, answered that the like had chaunced vnto them, and they departed not from the feaste before eche of theim knewe him that was their louer: whereby they perceived that his woordes proceded not of faithfull Loue, but rather of follie and diffimulation, in fuche wife as they gave fo lyghte credite thereunto, as of custome is geuen to the woordes of those that bee sicke. And they departed not from thence vntill all three with one accorde, had confpired enery one to give him mocke. Philenio continuing thus in Loue, fometime with one, fometime with another, and perceiuing that enery of them feemed to Loue him, hee determined with himselfe, if it were possible to gather of them the last frute of his Loue. But he was greatly deceyued in his defire, for that all his enterprife was broken: and that done, Emerentiana whiche could not any longer diffemble the loue of the foolishe scholer called one of her maydes, which was of a fayre complexion and a ioly wenche, charging her that she should deuise meanes to speake with Philenio, to gene him to vnderstande the lone which her maistresse bare vnto him: and when it were his pleasure fhe willingly would one night have him at home at her house. Which newes when Philenio heard, he greatly rejoyced, and faid to the maid: "Returne to your Maistresse, faire maide, and commend me vnto her, telling her in my behalf, that I doe praye her to loke for me this euening, if her husband be not at home." During which time, Emerentiana caused a certaine number of fagots of sharpe thornes to be made, and to be layd vnder her bedde

still wayting for her minion. When night was come, Philenio toke his fworde, and went to the house of his enemy, and calling at the dore with the watchworde the same incontinently was opened: and after that they had talked a litle while together, and banketted after the best maner, they withdrew themselues into the chamber to take their reste. Philenio had no soner put of his clothes to goe to bedde, but Seignior Lamberto her husband came home: which the Maistresse of the house perceiuing, made as though she had bene at her wittes ende, and could not tell whether to conuey her minion, but prayed him to hide himself vnder the bedde. Philenio feeing the daunger, wherein both he and the wife were, not taking with him any other garmentes, but only his shirte, crept vnder the bed where he was so cruelly pricktand scratched with the thornes, as there was no parte of his body (from the toppe of his head to the fole of his foote) free from bloud, and the more he fought to defende himselfe in that darke place, the more sharpely and piteously he was tormented, and durst not crie for feare least Seignior Lamberto would kill him. I will leaue to your confideration in what plight this poore wretche was in, who by reason of his miserable being, as he was brechelesse in that terrible purgatorie, even so was he speachlesse and durft not speake for his life. In the morning when Segnior Lamberto was gone forth, the poore scholler put on his clothes so well as he could, and all bloudy as he was, returning to his lodging, was like to die: but being deligently cured by phisicians, in short time he recouered his former health. Shortly after, Philenio began to pursue again his loue towardes the other two, that is to say, Panthemia and Simphorofia, and found convenient time one euening to speake to Panthemia, to whom he rehearfed his griefes and continual tormentes, praying her to have pitie vpon him. The fubtile and wife wenche Panthemia, fayning to have compasfion vppon him, excused her selfe by lacke of meanes to content his defire, but in thend vanquished with faire supplications and maruellous fighes, shee made him to come home to her house, and being vnready, dispoyled of all his apparell to go to bed with his Lady she required hym to go with her into a litle closet, wher all her fwete fmels and perfumes were, to the intent he might be well

perfumed before he went to bedde. The yong dolt not doubting the fubtiltie of this wicked woman, entred the closet and fetting his foote vpon a borde vnnnayled from the ioyst, fell so depe into a store house where marchauntes vse to lay there cottons and wolles, as he thought he had broken his necke and his legges, notwithstanding as fortune would he had no hurt. This poore scholler being in that darke place, began to seke for some dore or ladder to go out, and finding nothing for his purpose he cursed the houre and time that euer he knew Panthemia. When the dauning of the day began to appeare, the fimple fot diferied in one place of the storehouse certain ventes in the wall, which gaue fome light, because they wer old and couered ouer with mosse, in fuch wife, as he began with maruelous force, to pluck out the stones in the moste decaied place of the wall, and made so great a hole, as he went out. And being in a lane hard by the great streate, barefoote and bare legged, and in his shirt, he went home to his lodging vnknowen of any. A litle whyle after Simphorofia vnderstanding of the deceits whiche the other two had done to Philenio, attempted to geue hym the thirde, whiche was not inferior to the other twayne. And for that purpose, she began a farre of to caste her amorous lokes vpon him, letting hym to knowe that shee was in great distresse for his Loue. This poore foule having already forgotten his fortune paste, began to walke vp and downe before her house, like a man altogether tormented and pained with Loue. Then Simphorofia, feing him to be farre in loue with her, fent hym a letter by an old woman, whereby she aduertifed hym, that his beautie and good behauior, fo puiffantly did gouerne her affections as she could take no rest night nor day, for the earnest love that she bare him: wherefore she praied him if it were his pleafure to come and speake with her. Philenio receiving that letter, and perufing the contentes, not confidering the deceite prepared for him, ne yet any longer remembring the iniuries past, was more ioyfull and glad then euer he was before: who taking pen and paper, aunswered her againe, that he for his parte suffered no lesse tormentes for her sake, yea and in respect of vnfayned Loue, that he loued her farre better than she did hym, and at al tymes when shee pleased, hee woulde be at her

commaundement to doe her feruice: the aunswere read, and oportunitie found, Simphorofia caused him to come home to her house, and after many false fighes, she saide vnto him: "My deare frend Philenio, I knowe none other in all the world, that hath brought me into this state and plighte wherein presently I am, but you, because your beautie, good grace and pleasaunt talke, haue so fette my harte on fyre as I feele it to kindle and burne like drye woode." Which talke Maister scholler hearing, thought affuredly that she confumed for love of him: this poore Nodgecock, contriuing the time in sweete and pleasaunt woordes, with his dareling Simphorofia, the time approched that he should go to bed with his faire lady, who faid vnto him: "My fwete frend Philenio, abide a whyle, and let vs make fome banket and collation:" who taking him by the hande, caried him into her closet adioyning, wher was a table ready furnished with exquisit conficts and wynes of the best. This gentlewoman had made a composition in the wyne, to cause this yong gallant to sleepe for a certain time. Philenio thinking no hurte, toke the cup and filled it with the wyne, and dranke it vp at one draught. His spirits reuiued with this refreshing, after he had bene very well perfumed and washed in swete waters, he went to bedde and within a while after this drinke began to woorke, and hee flepte fo foundly, as canon shot, or the greatest gonnes of the worlde were not able to wake hym: then Simphorofia perceiuing the drinke beginne to woorke, called one of her sturdy maides that wel was instructed in the game of this pageant: both whiche carying this poore fleepy scholler by the feete and armes, and opening the dore very foftlye, they fayre and well bestowed hym in the middeste of the streete, a good stone's caste of from the house, where he lay all the nighte. But when the dawning of the daye dyd appeare, or an houre before, the drynke loft his vertue, and the poore foule began to awake, and thinking that he had bene a bedde with the gentlewoman he perceived hymfelf brechelesse and in his shirt more dead then aliue, through the colde that he had endured, by lying starke naked vppon the earth. The poore wretche was not able to help himselfe so much as with his armes and legges, ne yet to stande vppon his feete without great paine: notwithstanding, through

creping and fprawling, hee got home to his house, vnseene of anye, and prouided fo well as hee could for recouery of his health: and had it not been for his youth, which did helpe him at that instant, his sinewes had been benommed for euer. In the ende, having atteined his former state of health he still remembred the iniuries past, and without shewing any signe of anger or displeafure, made as though he loued them all three better then euer he did before, and fometime feemed to be in lone with the one, and fometime with an other: they againe for their part nothing miftrusting the malice of Philenio, set a good face on the matter, vfinge amorous cheere and countenance towards him, but when his backe was tourned, with mockes and floutes they toke their pleafure. He bearing in his brest secrete despite, was still desirous with his hand to marke them in the face, but like a wife man, waying the natures of women, he thought it woulde redounde to his greate shame and reproche, if hee did them any hurt: and therefore restrayning the heate of his choler vsed pacience. And yet by deuifing and practifing, how he might be euen with them and reuenged, hee was in great perplexitie. Very shortly after it chaunced that the scholler had invented a meane, easely to fatisfie his defire, and so fone as hee had fully resolued what to do, fortune therunto was fauorable: who hyred in the citie of Bologna a very faire house which had a large hall, and comodious chambers: and purposed to make a greate and sumptuous feast, and to inuite many Ladies and Gentlewomen to the fame: amongs whom these three were the first that should be bidden: which accordingly was done; and when the feast day was come the three gentlewomen that were not very wife at that instante, repaired thither nothing suspecting the scholler's malice. In the end a litle to recreate the Gentlewomen and to get them a stomacke, attendinge for supper time, the Scholler toke these his three louers by the hand, and led them friendly into a chamber, fomewhat to refresh them. When these three innocent women were come into the Scholler's Chamber, hee shut fast the doore, and going towards them, he fayde: "Beholde faire ladies, now the time is come for me to be reuenged vpon you and to make you fuffer the penaunce of the torment wherwith ye punished me for my great Loue."

The Gentlewomen hearing those cruell woordes, rather dead then aliue, began to repent that euer they had offended him, and befides that, they curfed themselues, for giuinge credit vnto him whom they ought to have abhorred. The Scholler with fierce and angry countenaunce commaunded them vpon paine of their liues to ftrippe themselues naked: which sentence when these three goddeffes heard, they began to loke one vppon another, weeping and praying him, that although he woulde not for their fakes, yet in respect of his owne curtesie and naturrall humanitie, that hee woulde faue their honor aboue all thinges. This gallant reioyfing at their humble and pitifull requestes was thus curteous vnto them, that he would not once fuffer them to fland with their garmentes on in his presence: the women casting themselves downe at his feete wept bitterly, befeeching him that he woulde have pitie vpon them, and not to be the occasion of a slaunder so great and infamous. But he whose hart was hardened as the Diamonde, faid vnto them, that this facte was not worthy of blame but rather of reuenge. The women dispoyled of their apparel (and standing before him, so free from couering as euer was Eue before Adam) appeared as beautifull in this their innocent state of nakednes, as they did in their brauerie: in fo much that the yong scholler viewing from toppe to toe, those fayre and tender creatures, whose whitenesse surpassed the fnow, began to have pitie vppon them: but calling to his remembraunce the injuries past and the daunger of death wherein he was, he rejected all pitie and continued his harde and obstinate determination. Then he toke all their apparell, and other furnitures that they did weare, and bestowed it in a little chamber, and with threatning words commaunded all three to lie in one bed. The women altogether aftonned, began to fav to themselues: "Alas, what fooles be we? what wil our husbands and our frendes fay, when they shal vnderstand that we be found naked and miserablie slaine in this bed? It had been better for vs to have died in our cradels, than apprehended and found dead in this state and plight." The Scholler seeing them bestowed one by another in the bed, like hufband and wyfe, couered them with a very white and large sheete, that no part of their bodies might be feene and knowen, and shutting the Chamber

doore after him Philenio went to feeke their husbands, which were dauncing in the hall: and the daunce ended, he intreated them to take the paines to goe with him: who was their guide into the Chamber where the three Muses lay in their bedde, saying vnto them: "Sirs, I have broughte you into this place to shewe you some pastime and to let you see the fayrest thinges that euer you faw in your liues. Then approching neere the bed, and holding a torch in his hand, he began fayre and foftly to lift vp the fhete at the bed's feete, discouering these fayre ladies even to the knees. Ye should have seen then, how the husbands did behold their white legges and their wel proporcioned feete, which don he disclosed them even to the stomack, and shewed their legges and thighes farre whiter than alablaster, which seemed like two pillers of fine marble, with a rounde body so wel formed as nothing could be better: confequently he tourned vp the sheete a litle further, and their stomackes appeared somewhat round and plumme, having two rounde breasts so firme and feate, as they would have conftrayned the great God Jupiter to imbrace and kiffe them. Whereat the husbandes toke fo great pleasure and contentmente, as coulde be deuised: I omitte for you to thincke in what plighte these poore naked women weare, hearinge theyr husbandes to mocke them: all this while they laye very quiet, and durst not so much as to hem or coughe, for feare to be knowen: the husbands were earnest with the Scholler to discouer their faces, but hee wifer in other mennes hurtes than in his owne, would by no meanes confent vnto it. Not contented with this, the yong scholler shewed their apparel to their husbands, who seing the fame were astonned, and in viewing it with great admiration, they faid one to another: "Is not this the gowne that I once made for my wife? Is not this the coyfe that I bought her? not this the pendant that she weareth about her necke? be not these the rings that fet out and garnisht her fingers?" Being gone out of the chamber for feare to trouble the feaft, he would not fuffer them to depart, but caused them to tarie supper. The Scholler vnderstandinge that supper was ready, and that the maister of the house had disposed all thinges in order, he caused the geastes to fit downe. And whiles they were remouing and placing the

stooles and chayres, he returned into the chamber, wher the three dames lay, and vncouering them, he fayd vnto them: "Bongiorno, faire Ladies: did you heare your husbandes? They be here by, and do earnestly tarie for you at supper. What do ye meane to do? Vp and rise ye dormouses, rubbe your eyes and gape no more, dispatche and make you ready, it is time for you now to repayre into the hall, where the other gentlewomen do tarie for you." Behold now how this Scholer was reuenged by interteigning them after this maner: then the poore desolate women, fearing least their case would forte to som pitiful successe, dispayring of their health, troubled and discomforted, rose vp expecting rather death than any other thing: and tourning them toward the scholler they faid vnto him: "Maister Philenio, you have had sufficient reueng vpon vs: the best for you to do now, is to take your sword, and to berene us of oure life, which is more lothfome vnto vs than pleafaunt: and if you will not do vs that good tourne, fuffer vs to go home to our houses vnknowen, that our honours may be faued." Then Philenio thinking that he had at pleafure vfed their persons, deliuered them their apparel, and so sone as they were ready, he let them out at a litle dore, very fecretlye vnknowen of anye, and fo they went home to their houses. So sone as they had put of their fayre furnitures, they folded them vp, and layd them in their cheftes: which done, they went about their houshold bufines, till their hufbands came home, who being retourned they founde their wives fowing by the fire fide in their chambers: and because of their apparell, their ringes and iewels, which they had feene in the Scholler's Chamber, it made them to fuspect their wives, every of them demanding his feuerall wife, where she had bin that nighte, and where their apparell was. They well affured of themselues, aunswered boldly, that they were not out of their house all the evening, and taking the keyes of their cofers shewed them their aparell, their ringes and other things, which their husbandes had made them. Which when their husbandes faw, they could not tell what to fay, and forthwith rejected all fuspicion, which they had conceiued: telling them from point to point, what they had feen that night. The women vnderflanding those woordes, made as though they knew nothing and

after a little fport and laughter betweene them, they went to bed. Many times Philenio met his Gentlewomen in the streates and sayde vnto them: "Which of you was most asraide or worste intreated?" But they holding downe their heads, passed forth not speaking a word: in this maner the Scholler was requited so well as he could of the deceites done against him, by the three Gentlewomen aforesaid.

THE FIFTYETH NOUELL.

The piteous and chaste death of one of the muleters wives of the Queene of Navarre.

In the citie of Amboife, there was a muleter that ferued the Queene of Nauarre, fifter to king Fraunces the firste of that name, which was broughte a bedde of a fonne at Blois: to which towne the faid muleter was gone to be paide his quarter's wages: whose wyfe dwelled at Amboife beyond the bridges. It chaunced that of long time one of her husband's feruauntes did so disordinately loue her, as vppon a certaine day he could not forbeare but he muste vtter the effect of his loue borne vnto her. Howbeit shee being a right honest woman, tooke her man's fute in very ill part, threatning to make her husband to beat him, and to put him away, and vsed him in fuche wyfe, that after that time he durst not speake thereof any more, ne yet to make figne or femblance: keeping yet that fier couered within his breft, vntill his Maister was ridden out of the towne, and that his Maistresse was at euensong at Saint Florentine's, a Church of the Caftle, farre from her house: who now being alone in the house, began to imagine how he might attempt that thinge by force, which before by no supplication or feruice he was able to attaine. For which purpose, hee brake vp a borde betweene his Maistresse chamber and his: but because the curteins of his maister and maistresse bed, and of the servauntes of the other fide couered and hid the walles betweene, it could not be perceyned, nor yet his malice discried vntill suche time as his Maistresse was gone to bed, with a litle wenche of xII. yeares of age: and fo fone as the poore woman was fallen into her first sleepe, this varlet entred in at a hole which he had broken, and conveyed himself into her bed in his shirt, with a naked fworde in his hande: who fo fone as she felt him layed downe by her, lepte out of her bed, perswading him by all possible meanes meete for an honest woman to do: and he indued with beaftly loue, rather acquainted with the language of his mulets

than with her honest reasons, shewed himselfe more beastly then the beafts with whom he had of long time bin conversant: for feing her so oft to runne about the table that he could not catch her, and also that she was so strong, that twife she ouercame him, in dispaire that he should neuer enioy her aliue, hee gaue her a great blow with his fword ouer the raines of the back, thinking that if feare and force could not make her to yeld, paine and fmart should cause her. Howbeit, the contrarie chaunced: for like as a good man of armes when he feeth his owne bloud, is more fet on fier to be reuenged vpon his enemies to acquire honor: euen fo the chafte hart of this woman, did reenforce and fortefie her courage in double wife, to auoyde and escape the hands of this wicked varlet, denising by all meanes possible by fayre words to make him acknowledge his fault: but he was fo inflamed with furie, there was no place in him to receive good counsell. And eftsones with his sword, he gashed her tender bodye with divers and sondry strokes, for the auoyding wherof, fo fast as her legges could beare her, she ran vp and downe the chamber: and when through want of bloud fhe perceived death approch, lifting vp her eyes vnto heaven, and ioyning her hands together, gaue thanckes vnto God, whom she termed to be her force, her vertue, her pacience and chastitie, humblie befeeching him to take in good part the bloude whiche by his commandemente was sheade in honor of that precious bloude, which from his owne fonne did iffue vppon the Croffe, whereby shee did beleeue, firmelye and stedfastlye that all her finnes were wiped awaye and defaced from the memorye of his wrathe and anger, and in fayinge: "Lorde receive my foule which was dearely bought and redeemed with thy bounty and goodnes:" fhee fell downe to the ground vpon her face where the wycked villaine inflicted her bodye with manifold wounds: and after she had lost her speache and the force of her body, thys most wicked and abhominable varlet toke her by force, whiche had no more strength and power to defende herselse: and when he had fatisfied his cursed defire, he fled away in such hast, as afterwards for all the pursute made after him he could not be found. The yong wench which lay

with her, for feare hid herselfe vnder the bed. But when she perceyued the villaine departed, shee came vnto her Maistresse and finding her speachlesse and without mouing, she cryed out at the window vnto the nexte neighbours to come to fuccour her: and they which loued her and esteemed her so wel as any woman in the towne, came prefently vnto her, and brought diuers furgeons with them, who findinge vpon her body xxv. mortall woundes, they did fo much as in them laye to helpe her: but it was impossible. Howbeit shee laye one houre without speache, makinge fignes with hir eyes and hands, declaring that she had not lost her vnderstanding: being demaunded by the priest, of the fayth wherin she died, and of her saluacion, she aunswered by such euident fignes, as her lively speach and communication coulde not have declared it better, howe that her truft and confidence was in the death of Iefus Chrift, whom she hoped to fee in the Celestiall citie, and so with a joyfull countenaunce, her eyes erected vp to the heavens, she rendred her chast body to the earth, and her foule to her Creator: and when shee was shrouded ready to the buriall, as her neighbours were attending to followe her to the Church, her poore husbande came home, and the first fight he sawe, was the body of his dead wife before his doore, wherof before that infant hee had no newes. And when he vnderstode the order of her death, he then doubled his forrowe, in fuch wyfe that he was also like to die. In this fort was this marter of chaftitie buried in the church of S. Florentine, where all the honest dames and wives of the citie endeuoured themselves to accompany her, and to honour her with fuche reuerence as they were able to do: accomptinge themselves most happie to dwell in that towne, where a woman of fuch vertuous behauiour did

dwell. The foolish and wanton seing the honour done to that deade bodye, determined from that time forth to renue their former life, and to chaunge the same into a better.

THE FIFTY-FIRST NOUELL.

A king of Naples, abusing a Gentleman's wife, in the end did weare the hornes himselfe.

In the citie of Naples when king Alphonfus raigned, in whofe time wantonnesse bare chiefest sway, there was a Gentleman so honest, beautifull and comely, as for his good conditions and wel knowen behauiour an old Gentleman gaue to him his daughter in mariage, which in beautie and good grace was paffingly well beloued and comfortable to her husband. The Loue was great betwene them, till it chaunced upon a shrouetide that the king went a masking into the citie, where enery man endeuoured to intertaine him the best he could. And when he came to this Gentleman's house, he was best receyued of any place in all the towne, aswell for banqueting, as for musicall songes, and the Gentlewoman, the fayrest that the king sawe in all the citie to his contentacion. And vpon the end of the banket, she fang a fong with her husbande, with a grace fo good as it greatly augmented her beautie. The king feeing fo many perfections in one body, conceyued not fo great pleafure in the fweete accords of her husband and her, as he did howe to deuise to interrupt and breake them: and the difficultie for bringinge that to passe, was the great amitie that hee fawe betweene them, wherefore he bare in his hart that passion so couert, as he possibly could. But partly for his owne folace and comforte, and partly for good will of all, hee feafted all the Lords and Ladyes of Naples, where the Gentleman and his wife were not forgotten. And because man willingly beleeueth that he doth fee, he thought that the lokes of that gentlewoman promifed vnto him some grace in time to come, if the presence of her husband were no let therunto. And to proue whether his coniecture were true, he fent her hufbande in commission to Rome, for the space of xv. dayes or 111. wekes. And so sone as he was gone, his wyfe which hitherto had not felt any long absence from her husband, made great forrow for the same, whereof she recomforted by the king, many times by fweete perswasions and by presents and gifts, in such fort, that she was not onely comforted, but contented with her husbande's absence. And before the three weekes were expired of his returne, the was to amorous of the king as the was no lefte forowful of his comming home, then she was before for his departure. And to the intent the king's presence might not be loste, they agreed together, that when her husband was gone to his possesfions in the countrie, she should fend word to the king, that he might have fafe repair vnto her, and fo fecretly that his honour, (which he feared more then he did the fact) might not be impaired. Vpon this hope, this Ladie's hart was fet on a merie pin: and when her husband was come home, shee welcomed him so wel, that albeit he knewe how the king made much of her in his absence, yet he would not beleeue that he fo did for any dishonest fact. Howbeit by continuance of time, this fier that could not be couered, by litle and litle began to kindle, in fuch wife as the husband doubted much of the truth, and watched the matter so neere, as he was almost oute of doubt. But for feare, least the partie which did the wrong, should do him greater hurt, if he feemed to know it, he determined to diffemble the matter: for he thought it better to liue with some griefe, then to hazard his life for a woman that did not love him: notwithstanding, for this displeasure, he thought to be euen with the king if it were And knowinge that many times despite maketh a woman to do that which Loue cannot bring to passe, specially those that have honourable harts and stoute stomacks, was so bold without blushing, vpon a day in speaking to the Queene, to fay unto her, that he had pitie vpon her, for that shee was no better beloued of the king her husband. The Queene which heard tell of the loue betwene the king and his wife: "I cannot (quoth fhe) both enjoy honour and pleasure together: I knowe well that honor I haue, whereof one receiveth the pleafure, and as she hath the pleafure, so hath not she the honor." He which knewe wel by whom those words were spoken, said vnto her: "Madame, honor hath waited vpon you [euen from your birth, for you be of so good a house, as to be a queene or Empresse, you cannot VOL. II.

augment your nobilitie, but your beautie, grace, and honestie, hath deserved so much pleasure, as she that depriveth you of that which is incident to your degree, doth more wrong to her felf then to your person. For she for a glorie that hath turned her to shame, hath therewithall lost so much pleasure, as your grace or any Lady in the realme may have. And I may faye vnto you (Madame) that if the kinge were no king as he is, I thincke that he could not excel me in pleafing of a woman: being fure that to fatisfie such a vertuous personage as you be, he might exchaunge his complexion with mine." The Queene fmiling, answered him: "Although the king be of more delicate and weaker complexion than you be, yet the loue that he beareth mee, doth fo much content mee, as I esteeme the same aboue all thinges in the world." The gentleman faid vnto her: "Madame, if it were fo, I woulde take no pitie vpon you, for I know wel that the honest loue of your hart, would yeld vnto you great contentment, if the like were to be found in the king: but God hath foreseene and preuented the same, least enioyinge your owne defire, you would make him your God vppon earth." "I confesse vnto you (saide the Queene) that the Loue I beare him, is fo great, as the like place he could not find in no woman's hart, as he doth in mine." "Pardon me, madame (faide the Gentleman) if I speake more francklye, your grace hath not sounded the depth of ech man's harte. For I dare be bold to fay vnto you, that I do know one that doth loue you, and whose loue is so great. as your loue in respecte of his is nothing. And for so much as he feeth the kinge's love to faile in you his doth grow and increase, in such fort, that if your love were agreable vnto his, you should be recompensed of all your losses." The Queene aswel by his words as by his countenaunce, began to perceive, that the talke proceded from the bottom of his hart, and called to her remembraunce that long time he had endeuored to do her fervice, with fuch affection, as for love he was growen to be melancolike, which she thought before, to rife through his wine's occasion, but now she affuredly beleued that it was for her sake. And thus the force of Loue, which is well discryed when it is not fayned, made her fure of that, which was vnknowen to all the world. And beholding the gentleman which was more amiable than her husband, and seing that he was forsaken of his wife, as she of the king, pressed with despite and ialousie of her husband, and prouoked with loue of the gentleman, began to fay with finger in eye, and fighing fobbs: "O my God, must vengeaunce get and win that at my hand, which Loue cannot doe?" The gentleman well vnderstanding her meaning, aunsweared: "Madame, vengeance is fweete vnto him which in place of killinge an ennemye, giueth life to a perfecte freinde. I thincke it time that trouth doe remoue from you the foolishe love, that you beare to him which loueth you not: and that iust and reasonable loue should expell from you the feare, which out not remaine in a noble and vertuous hart. But now madame, omittinge to fpeake of the greatnesse of your estate, let vs consider that we be both man and woman, the most deceived of the world, and betrayed of them which we have most dearely loued. Let vs now be reuenged (madame) not onely to render vnto them, what they deferue, but to fatisfie the loue which for my part I can no longer beare, except I should die. And I thincke, that if your harte be not harder than flinte, or Diamont, it is impossible but you must perceive som sparke of sier, which increaseth more than I am able to diffemble: and if pitie of me which dieth for your loue, doth not moue you to loue me, at least wyse let loue of your felf constraine you, which (being so perfect a creature as you be) doth deferue to enjoy the hartes of the noblest and most vertuous of the world. Suffer I fay, the contempt and forfaking of him, [to] moue you, for whom you have difdayned al other perfons." The Queene hearing those wordes, was fo rauished, as for feare to declare by her countenaunce the trouble of her spirite, leaning vppon the Gentleman's arme, went into a garden hard by her Chamber, where she walked a long time not able to speake a woord. But the Gentleman seeing her halfe wonne, when he was at the ende of the Alley where none could fee them, hee certified her by effect, the loue which fo long time he kept secrete from her. And both with one consent reioyced in revenge, whereof the passion was importable. And there determined, that fo oft as hee went into the Country, and the king

from his Castell into the Citie, he should retourne to the Castel to fee the Quene. Thus deceyuing the deceyuers, all foure were partakers of the pleafure, which two alone thought to enioy. The accord made, they departed, the Lady to her Chamber, and the Gentleman to his house, with such contentacion, as they had quite forgotten al theyr troubles past. And the feare which either of them had of the affembly of the king and of the Gentlewoman, was tourned to defire, which made the Gentleman to go more oft then he was wonte to doe into the countrye, being not past halfe a mile of. And fo fone as the king knew therof, he fayled not to vifite his Lady, and the gentleman the night following went to the Castle to salute the Queene, to do the office of the kinge's Lieutenaunt, fo fecretly as no man did perceiue it. This voyage endured long time, but the king because he was a publike person, could not fo well diffemble his Loue, but all the worlde did vnderstand it, and all men pitied the gentleman's state. For divers light persons behinde his backe would make hornes vnto him, in figne of mockerie, which he right well perceyued. But this mockerie pleafed him fo wel, as he esteemed his hornes better then the king's Crowne. The king and the Gentleman's wife one day, could not refraine (beholding a Stagge's head fet vp in the Gentleman's house) from breaking into a laughter before his face, faying, how that head became the house very well. The gentleman that had fo good a hart as he, wrote ouer that head thefe words.

These hornes I weare and beare for every man to view, But yet I weare them not in token they be trew.

The king retourning againe to the Gentleman's house, finding this title newlye written, demanded of the gentleman the fignification of them.

Who faid vnto him:

"If princesse secret things, be from the horned hart concealed, Why should like things of horned beastes, to Princes be revealed. But content your selfe: all they that we are hornes be pardoned to we are their capps upon their heads: for they be so sweete and pleasaunt, as they uncappe no man, and they we are them so light, as they thincke they have none at all." The king knew well by

his wordes that he smelled something of his doings, but he neuer suspected the loue betwene the Queene and him. For the Queene was better contented wyth her husbande's life, and with greater ease dissembled her griefe. Wherefore eyther parts lived long time in this loue, till age had taken order for dissolucion thereof.

"Behold Ladyes (quoth Saffredante) this Historye which for example I have willinglye recited to thintente that when your husbands do make you hornes as big as a Goate, you maye render unto him the monstrous heade of a Stagge." "Peace (quoth Emarsuite fmyling) no more wordes, least you reviue some sleeping sweet soule, which without sturwould not awake, with any whispring."

THE FIFTY-SECOND NOUELL.

The rashe enterprise of a Gentleman against a Princesse of Flaunders, and of the shame that he received thereof.

THERE was in Flaunders a Lady of an honorable house, which had two husbands, by whom shee had no children that were then liuinge. Duringe the time of her widowhoode shee dwelte within one of her brothers, that loued her very well, which was a noble man, and had maried a king's doughter. This yong Prince was muche giuen to pleasure, louinge huntinge, pastime, and the company (of fayre Ladyes, accordingly as youth requireth. He had a wyfe that was curst and troublesome, whom the delectations of her husband in no wyse did contente and please: wherefore this noble man caused his fifter daily to keepe company with his wyfe. This Gentlewoman his fifter was of pleafaunt converfation, and therewithal very honest and wyfe. There was in the house of this noble man, a Gentleman whose worship, beautye and grace did furpasse all the rest of his companions. This Gentleman perceyuing the fifter of his Lorde and Maister to be pleasaunte and of ioyfull countenaunce, thoughte to proue if the attempt of an honest frende would be vouchsaued, but he founde her aunswere to be contrary to her countenaunce: and albeit that her aunfwere was fuch as was meete for a Princesse and right honest Gentlewoman, yet because she perceyued him to be a goodly personage, and curteous, she easily pardoned his bold attempt, and feemed that she toke it not in ill part when he spake vnto her. Neuertheleffe fhee warned him, after that time, to moue no fuch matter, which he promifed, because he would not lose his pleasure, and the honour that hee conceyued to entertaine her. Notwithstandinge, by processe of time his affection increased so much as he forgot the promife which he had made her, wherefore he thoughte good not to hazarde his enterprife by wordes, for that hee had to long against his wyll experimented her wyse and difcrete aunsweares: and therewithall he thought if he could

finde her in some conucient place (because she was a yong widow, of lufty yeares and good complexion) it were possible shee woulde take pitie vppon him, and of herfelf. And that he might bring his purpose to effecte, he said to his Maister that he had befides his owne house very goodlie game, and that if it pleased him to kill three or foure Stagges in the moneth of May, he should fee very good pastime. The Lord as well for the love hee bare to the Gentleman, as for the pleasure he had in hunting, graunted his request: and went to his house, which was so faire and well furnished, as the best Gentleman in all the countrey had no better. The gentleman lodged his Lord and Lady in one fide of the house, and in the other directly against it her whome he loued better than himselfe. The Chamber where his maistres laye, was so well hanged with tapistrie, and so trimely matted, as it was impossible to perceive a falling dore, harde by the bed's fide, descending to his mother's chamber, which was an old Lady, much troubled with the Catarre and Rume. And because she had a cough, fearing to difeafe the Princesse which lave aboue her, she chaunged her chamber with her fonne. And every night the olde Gentlewoman brought comficts to the Lady for her recreation, vpon whom the Gentleman wayted, who (for that he was well beloued and very familier with her brother) was not refused to be prefent at her rifing and going to bedde. Whereby he daily toke occasion to increase his loue and affection: in suche sorte as one night, after he had caused the Ladye to fit vp late, (she being furprifed with fleepe) he was forced to depart the chamber, and to repaire to his own. Wher when he had put on the most brauest perfumed shirt that he had, and his cap for the night so trimmely dreffed, as there wanted nothing, he thought in beholding himfelf, that there was no Lady in the world that would refuse his beautie and comlinesse. Wherefore promising himselfe a happie fuccesse in his enterprise, hee went to his bed where he purposed not long to abide, for the defire that he had to enter into another, whiche should be more honourable and pleasaunt vnto him. And after he had fent his men away, he rose to shut the dore after them, and hearkened a good while, whether he could heare any noyse in the Ladie's chamber aboue. And when he was

fure that euery man was at rest, he began to take his pleasaunt iourney, and by litle and litle opened the falling dore, whiche was fo well trimmed with cloth, that it made no noyfe at all, and went up to the Ladie's bed fide, which then was in her first fleepe, and without respecte of the bonde and promise that he made vnto her, or the honorable house wherof she came, without leaue or reuerence, he laid himfelfe down besides her, who felt him betwene her armes before the perceived his comming. But she which was somewhat strong, vnfolded her felf out of his handes, and in asking him what he was, began to strike, to bite and scratche, in suche wyse, as he was constrained (for feare least she should crye out) to stoppe her mouth with the couerlet, which was impossible for him to do. For when she sawe him to presse with all his force to despoyle her of her honor, she spared no part of her might to defende and kepe her felfe, and called (so loude as fhe could) her woman of honor, that laye in her chamber, whiche was a very auncient and fober gentlewoman, who in her fmock, ran straight to her maistresse. And when the Gentleman perceived that hee was discouered, hee was so fearfull to be knowen of the Ladye, as fone as he could hee shifted himself down by his trapdore. And where before he conceived hope and affuraunce to be welcome, now he was brought in despaire for retourning in so vnhappy state. When he was in his chamber, he found his glaffe and candle vpon the table, and beholding his face all bloudy with the fcratchings and bitinges, whiche shee had bestowed vpon him, the bloud wherof ran down his fayre shyrt, better bloudied then gilted, he began to make his moone in this wife: "O beautie, thou art nowe payed thy defert, for vppon thy vayne promife haue I aduentured a thing impossible. And that which might have bene the augmenting of my delight is nowe the redoubling of my forowe. Being affured that if she knewe howe contrary to my promife I haue enterprifed this foolishe fact, I should vtterly forgoe the honest and common conversation whiche I have with her above al other. That which my estimation, beautie and good behauiour doe deferue, I ought not to hyde in darkenesse. To gaine her loue, I ought not to haue affayed her chafte bodye by force, but rather by feruice and humble pacience, to wayte and attend till

loue did vanquishe. For without loue all the vertue and puissance of man is of no power and force." Euen thus he passed the night in fuch teares, griefes and plaintes, as can not be well reported and vttered. In the morning, when he beheld his bloudy face all mangled and torne, he fained to be very ficke, and that he could abide no light, til the company were gone from his house. The Ladye whiche thus remained victorious, knowing that there was no man in all her brother's Court, that durst attempt a deede fo wicked, but her hofte which was fo bolde to declare his loue vnto her, knew well that it was he. And when she and her woman of honour had fearched all the corners of the chamber to knowe what he was, and could not finde hym, she fayd vnto her woman in great rage: "Affure your felfe it can be none other, but the Gentleman of the house, whose villanous order I wyll reueale to my brother in the morning, in fuch forte, as his head shalbe a witnesse and testimony of my chastitie." Her woman seing her in that furie, fayd vnto her; "Madame, I am right glad to fee the loue and affection which you beare to your honor, for the increase wherof you doe not spare the life of one, which hath aduentured himselfe so muche for the love that hee beareth vnto you. But many times such one thinketh by those meanes to increase loue, which altogether he doth diminishe. Wherefore (Madame) I humbly befeche you to tell me the truthe of this facte." And when the Ladie had recompted the same at lengthe, the woman of honour fayd vnto her: "Your grace doth fay that he got no other thyng of you, but scratches and blowes with your fiftes." "No, I affure you (quod the Ladie) and I am certaine if hee gette hym not a good Surgeon, the markes will be feene to morowe." "Wel Madame (quod the gentlewoman) fithens it is so, me thinketh you haue greater occasion to prayle God, then to muse vpon reuenge: For you may beleue, that fithens he had the courage to enterprife fo great an exploit, and that despite hath failed him of his purpose, you can deuise no greater death for him to suffer, then the same. If you defire to be reuenged, let Loue and shame alone bring that to passe, who knowe better which way to tormente him than your felfe, and with greater honor to your persone. Take heede Madame from falling into fuch inconvenience as he is in, for in place of great pleasure whiche he thought to haue gayned, he hath received the extremest anoyance, that any gentleman can suffer. And you Madame, by thinking to augment your honor, you may decrease and diminish the same. And by making complaint, you shal cause that to be knowen, which no man knoweth. For of his part (you may be affured) there shall neuer be anything reuealed. And when my Lorde your brother at your requeste, shall execute the iustice which you defire, and that the poore Gentleman fhal be ready to die, the brute will runne that he hath had his pleasure vpon you. And the greatest numbre will say, that it is very difficult for a Gentleman to doe fuche an enterprise, except the Lady minister some great occasion. Your grace is faire and yong, frequenting your life in pleasant company, there is none in all the Court, but feeth and marketh the good countenaunce you beare to that Gentleman, whereof your selfe hath some suspicion: which will make every man suppose that if he hath done this enterprife, it was not without some consent from you. And your honor which hetherto hath borne your port a loft, shall be disputed vpon in all places where this historie shall be remembred." The Princeffe well waying the good reasons and aduise of her gentlewoman, knewe that she spake the truthe: and that by moste just cause she should be blamed: confidering the familiaritie and good countenaunce which dayly she bare vnto the Gentleman. Wherefore she inquired of her woman of honour, what was beste to bee done. Who aunswered her thus. "Madame, fith it pleaseth you to receiue mine aduise, by waying the affection whereof it procedeth, me thinke you ought in your hart to reioyce, that the goodlieft, and moste curteous Gentleman that liveth, could neither by love, or force, despoile you of your greatest vertue and chastitie. For which (Madame) you are bounde to humble your felfe before God. acknowledging that it is not done by your vertue, bicause many women walking in a more paineful and more vnpleasaunt trade then you do, haue humiliated and brought low by men farre more vnworthy of loue, then he which loueth you. And ye ought now to feare more than euer you did, to vse any femblance and take of amitie, bicause there have bene many that have fallen the second time into daungers and perils, which they have auoyded at the first. Remember (Madame) that loue is blind, who blaseth mens eyes in fuch fort, as where a man thinketh the waye moste fure, ther his most readie to fal. And I suppose Madame, that you ought not to feme to be privie of this chaunce, neither to him, ne yet to any els, and when he remembreth anye thing to you, doe make as though you did not vnderstande his meaning, to auoyde twoo daungers. The one of vaine glorie for the victorie you have had, the other to take pleafure in remembring things, that be fo pleafaunt to the flesh, which the most chaste have had much a do to defend theimfelues from feling fome sparkes, although they seke meanes to shunne and anoyde them with all their possible power. Moreouer, Madame, to thende that he thinke not by fuche hazard and enterprife to have done a thing agreable to your minde, my counfell is, that by litle and litle, you doe make your felfe straunge, and vse no more your wonted grace vnto him, that he may know how much you despife his folly and confider how great your goodnesse is, by contenting your felf with the victory which God hath geuen you, without feeking any further vition or renengement. And God graunt you grace (Madame) to continue that honestie which hee hath planted in your hart, and by acknowledging that all goodnesse procedeth from him, you may loue him and ferue him, better than euer ye did." The Princesse determined to credite the counsayle of her gentlewoman, flepte with fo great ioye as the poore gentleman waked with forrow. On the morrow the noble man ready to depart, asked for his hoste, vnto whom answere was made that he was fo ficke, as he could not abide the light, or endure to heare one speake. Wherof the Prince was fore abashed, and would have vifited him, but that it was told him he was a flepe, and was very loth to wake him. Wherefore without bidding him farewell, he departed, taking with him his wife and fifter, who hearing the excuse of the Gentleman that would not see the Prince, nor yet his companie, at their departure, was perfuaded that it was he, that had done her al that torment, and durst not shew the markes which she had signed in his face. And although his Maister did fende oftimes for him yet came he not to the Court, vntill he was healed of his woundes, except that whiche loue and despite had made in his harte. When he came to the Courte and appeared before his victorious enemie, he blushed for shame of his ouer throwe. And he which was the stoutest of all the company was so assonned as many times being in her presence, hee could not tell which way to loke or tourne his face. Wherfore she was assured that her suspicion was certain and true, by litle and litle estraunging her self from him, but it was not done so sleightly or politikely but that he perceived well enough, and yet he durst make no semblaunce, for feare of worse adventure.

Notwithstanding he conserved both love in his hart, and pacience in his minde, for the losse of his Ladie's fauour, which he had right well deserved.

THE FIFTY-THIRD NOUELL.

The love of Amadour and Florinda: wherein be conteined mani fleightes and dissimulations, together with the renowmed chastitie of the said Florinda.

In the Countie of Arande, in Aragon, a region in Spaine, there was a Ladie whiche in the best time of her youth, continued the widow of the Earle of Arande, with one fonne, and one daughter, called Florinda. The fayde Lady brought vp her children in all vertue and honestie, meete and conuenable for Lordes and Gentlemen, in fuch forte, as her house was renowmed to be one of the most honorable in all the Region of Spaine. Many times she repaired to Tolledo, where the kinge of Spaine helde his Court, and when she came to Sarragosa, which was harde adjoyning to the court, she continued long with the Queene, and in the Courte, where she was had in so good estimation as any Lady might be. Vpon a time going towardes the king, according to her custome, which was at Sarragofa, in his caftle of Iafferie, this Lady paffed by a village that belonged to the Viceroy of Catalongne, who still continued vppon the frontiers of Parpignon, for the great warres that were betwene the Frenche king and him. Howebeit, at that time peace being concluded, the Viceroy with all his captaines were come to do reuerence to the king. The Viceroy knowing that the Countesse of Arrande did passe through his countrie, went to mete her, as well for auncient amitie, as for the honor he bare vnto her being allied to the kyng. Nowe this Viceroy had in his companye diuers honest Gentlemen, whiche through the frequentation and continuance of the long warres, had gotten fuche honour and fame, as every man that might fee them and behold them did accompt them felues happy. But amonges all other, there was one called Amadour, who although he was but xvIII. or xix. yeares of age, yet he had fuch an affured grace and witte fo excellent, as he was demed amongs a thousand persones worthy to have the government of a common wealth, whiche good witte was coupled with maruellous naturall beautie, fo that there

was no eye, but did content it felf eftfones to beholde hym. And this beautie fo exquifite, was affociated with wonderfull eloquence, as doubtfull to fay, whether merited greatest honor, either his grace and beautie, or his excellent tongue. But that which brought him into best reputation, was his great hardinesse, whereof the common reporte and brute was nothing impeached or staied for all his youth. For in fo many places he shewed his chiualrie, as not only Spain but Fraunce and Italie, did fingularly commend and fet forth his vertue: bicaufe in all the warres wherin he was present, he neuer spared him self for any daunger. And when his countrie was in peace and quiet, he fought to ferue in straunge places, being loued and estemed both of his frendes and enemies. This Gentleman for the loue of his Captaine was come into that countrey, where was arrived the Countesse of Arande, and in beholding the beautie and good grace of her daughter, which was not then past xII. yeres of age, he thought that she was the fairest and most vertuous personage that euer he fawe: and that if he could obtaine her good will, he should be so well fatisfied as if he had gained all the goods and pleasures of the worlde. And after he had a good whyle viewed her, for all the impossibilitie that reason could deuise to the contrary, he determined to loue her, although fome occasion of that impossibilitie might ryfe through the greatnesse of the house wherof she came, and for want of age which was not able as yet to vnderstande the passions of loue. But against the feare thereof he was armed with good hope, perfuading himfelfe, that time and patience would bring happie ende to his trauayle: and from that time gentle Loue whiche without any other occasion than by his own force was entred the harte of Amadour, promifed him fauour and helpe by all meanes possible to attaine the same. And to prouide for the greatest difficultie, which was the farre distance of the countrie wher he dwelt, and the fmall occasion that he had thereby any more to fee Florinda, he thought to marry against his determination made with the ladies of Barfelone and Parpignon, amonges whom he was fo conuerfant by reason of the warres, as he femed rather to be a Cathelan, than a Castillan, although he wer borne by Tollede, of a riche and honourable house, yet bicause he was a yonger brother, he injoyed no great patrimonie or reuenue. Notwithstanding, loue and fortune seing him forsaken of his parentes, determined to accomplishe some notable exployt in him, and gaue him (by meanes of his vertue) that which the lawes of his countrey refused to gene. He had good experience in factes of warre, and was fo well beloued of al Princes and Rulers, as he refused many times their goodes, being resolued not to care or esteme the benefites of Fortune. The Countesse of whome I spake, arrived thus at Saragossa, was very well intertained of the king, and of his whole Court. The Gouernour of Catalogne, many times came thither to vifite her, whom Amadour neuer failed to accompany, for the onely pleasure he had to talke with Florinda: and to make himselfe to be knowen in the company, hee went to Auenturade, whiche was the daughter of an old knight that dwelt hard by the house, whiche from her youth was brought vp with Florinda, in such familiar forte, as she knewe all the fecrets of her harte. Amadour, as well for the honestie that he found in her, as for the liuing of III.M. ducates by the yeare which she should have with her in mariage, determined to gene her fuch intertaignement, as one that was disposed to marry her. Wherunto the gentlewoman did willingly recline her eare: and bicaufe he was poore, and the father of the damofell rich, she thought that her father would neuer accorde to the mariage, except it were by meanes of the Countesse of Arande. Wherupon she went to madame Florinda, and faide vnto her: "Madame, you fee this Castillan gentleman, which so oftentimes talketh with me. I doe beleue that his pretence is to marry me: you do know what a father I have, who will neuer geue his confent, if he be not perfuaded therunto by my Lady your mother and you." Florinda which loued the damofell as her felfe, affured her that shee would take yoon her to bring that matter to passe, with so earnest trauaile as if the cafe were her own. Then Auenturade brought Amadour before Florinda, who after he had faluted her, was like to fall in a fowne for ioy, and although he were compted the moste eloquent persone of Spaine, yet was he now become mute and dumb before Florinda, wherat she maruelled much: for albeit she was but XII. yeares of age, yet she vnderstode that there was no man in Spaine that had a better tongue, or a more conuenable grace than he. And feing that he faid nothing vnto her, she fpake vnto him in this wife: "The fame which is bruted of you (fir Amadour) throughout the whole countrie of Spaine, is fuch as it maketh you knowen and estemed in this company, and giueth defire and occasion to those that know you, to imploy themfelues to do you pleasure: wherefore if there be any thing wherin I may gratifie you, vie me I befech you." Amadour that gased vpon the beautie of that lady, was rapt and furprifed, not well able to render thankes vnto her. And although Florinda maruelled to fee him without aunswere, yet she imputed it rather to bashfulnesse than to any force of loue, and departed without further talke. Amadour knowing the vertue which in fo tender yeares began to appeare in Florinda, faide vnto her whome he purposed to marry: "Doe not maruell, though my speache do fayle before Madame Florinda, for the vertues and discretion, hidden in that yonge personage, did so amase mee, as I wiste not what to saye: but I praye you Auenturade (quod he) who knoweth all her fecretes, to tell me, if it be otherwyse possible, but that she hath the harte of all the Lordes and Gentlemen of the Court: for they which know her and doe not love her, be stones, or beastes." Aventurade whiche then loued Amadour more than all the men in the worlde, and would conceale nothing from him, faid vnto him: that Madame Florinda was generally beloued: but for the custome of the countrie, fewe men did speake unto her. "And (quod she) as yet I fe none that make any femblance of loue vnto her, but two young Princes of Spaine, which defire to marry her, whereof the one is the sonne of the Infant Fortune, and the other of the Duke of Cadouce." "I praye you then (quod Amadour) to tell me which of them as you think, doth loue her best." "She is fo wife" faid Auenturade, "that she will confesse or graunt her loue to none, but to fuch as her mother pleafeth. But yet fo far as we can judge she fauoureth muche better the sonne of the Infant Fortune, than the Duke of Cadouce: and for that I take you to be a man of good judgment, this day you shall haue occasion to confider the truth: for the sonne of the Infant Fortune is brought vp in Court, and is one of the goodliest and perfectest

yong Gentlemen in al christendome: and if the mariage do procede, according to our opinion, which be her women, he shalbe assured to have Madame Florinda: and then shalbe ioyned together the goodliest couple in the world. And you must vnderstand, that although they be both very yong, she of x11. yeares of age, and he of xv. yet is there three yeares past fince their loue first began: and if you be disposed aboue other to obtain her fauour, mine aduise is, that ye become friend and servaunt vnto him." Amadour was very joyfull to heare tell that his Lady loued fome man, trusting that in tyme he should wynne the place, not of husbande, but of feruaunt: for he feared nothing at all of her vertue, but a lacke of disposition to loue. And after this communication, Amadour bent himselfe to haunt the societie of the fonne of the Infant Fortune, whose good will he fone recouered, for all the pastimes whiche the yong Prince loued, Amadour could doe right well: and aboue other, he was very cunning in riding of horsses, and in handling al kindes of armes and weapons, and in all other pastimes and games meete for a yong Gentleman. Warres began in Languedoc, and Amadour was forced to retire with the Gouernour, to his great forrowe and grief, for he had there no meane to returne to the place where he might fe Florinda. For which cause he spake to his owne brother, whiche was Steward of the king of Spaine's houshold, and declared vnto him what courtefie he had found in the house of the Counteffe of Arande, and of the damofel Auenturade: praying him that in his absence he would do his indeuour, that the mariage might proceede, and that he would obtain for him the credit and good opinion of the king and Queene, and of al his friendes. The Gentleman which loued his brother, as well by nature's instigation, as for his great vertues, promifed him his trauaile and industrie to the vttermoste. Which he did in such wise as the old man her father, nowe forgetting other naturall respect, began to marke and beholde the vertues of Amadour, which the Countesse of Arande, and specially faire Florinda, painted and set foorth vnto him, and likewyse the Yong earl of Arande whiche increased in yeares, and therewithall in loue of those that were vertuous, and geuen to honest exercise. And when the mariage was agreed VOL. II.

betweene the parentes, the faid Steward sent for his brother whilest the truce endured betwene the two kings. About this time, the king of Spain retired to Madric, to anoyd the enil aire that was in many places, where by the aduife of diuers of his counfell, and at the request of the Countesse of Arande, he made a mariage betwene the yong Duchesse the heire of Medina Celi, and the yong Earle of Arande, as wel for the vnion of their house, as also for the loue he bare to the said Countesse. And this mariage was celebrated in the Castell of Madric, whereunto repaired Amadour, who so well obtained his suite, as he maried her, of whom he was muche better beloued, than his fmal loue toward her deferued, fauing that it was a couerture and meanes for him to frequent the place where his minde and delight inceffantly remained: after he was maried, he became well acquainted and familiar in the house of the Countesse, so that he was fo conversaunt amonges the Ladies, as if he had bene a woman: and although hee was then but xxII. yeares of age, he was fo wife and graue, as the Countesse imparted vnto him all her affaires, commaunding her fonne and daughter to intertayne him, and to credite all thinges wherein hee gaue counfell. Hauing wonne this great estimation, he behaued him selfe so wyse and politike, that even the partie whiche he loued knewe no parte of his affection: but by reason of the loue that Florinda bare to the wife of Amadour, whome shee loued more than any other woman, she was fo familiar with him, as shee diffembled no part of her thought, declaring vnto him all the loue that she bare the sonne of the Infant Fortune: and he that defired nothing more than throughly to winne her, ceassed not from continuance of talke, not caring whereof he spake, so that he might hold her with long discourse: Amadour had not after his mariage continued a moneth in that companie, but was conftrained to retire to the warres, where hee continued more than twoo yeares, without retourne to fee his wife, who still abode in the place where she was brought vp. During the time, Amadour wrote many letters vnto his wife, but the chiefest substance therof confisted in commendations to Florinda, who for her part failed not to render like vnto him, many times writing fome pretie worde or posie with her own hand, in the

letter of Auenturade. Which made her husband Amadour diligent many times to write again vnto her, but in al this doing Florinda conceived nothing, but that he loued her with fuch like loue as the brother oweth to the fifter. Many times Amadour went and came, but in the space of five yeares he never sawe Florinda twoo monethes together: notwithstanding, Loue in despite of their distaunce and long absence, ceassed not to increase: and it chaunced that hee made a voyage home to fee his wyfe, and founde the Countesse farre from the court, bicause the kyng of Spain was done to Vandelousie, and had taken with him the yong Earle of Arande, whiche then began to bere armes. The Countesse was retired to a house of pleasure, which shee had vpon the frontiers of Arragon and Nauarre, and was right joyfull when fhee fee Amadour, who almoste three yeares had bene absent. He was very well recieued of euery man, and the countesse commaunded that he should be vsed and entreated as her howne sonne. During the time that he folourned with her, she communicated vnto him all the affaires of her house, and committed the greatest trust thereof to his discretion, who wan fuch credite in the house as in all places where he lifte, the dores were opened vnto him: whose wysedome and good behauiour made him to be estemed like a Sainct or Aungell. Florinda, for the loue and good wyll she bare unto his wyfe and him, made muche of him in all places where fhe fawe him: and therfore tooke no hede vnto his countenaunce, for that her hart as yet felt no passion, but a certen contentation in her felfe, when she was in the prefence of Amadour, and of any other thing she thought not. Amadour to anoyde the judgement of them that have proved the difference of Louers countenaunces, was very ware and circumfpect: for when Florinda came to speake vnto hym secretly (like one that thought no hurt) the fier hydden in his brefte, burned fo fore, as he could not staye the blushyng colour of his face, nor the sparkes whiche slewe out of his eyes: and to the intent, that through long frequentation, none might espie the same, he intertaigned a very favre Ladye called Paulina, a woman in his tyme accompted fo fayre, as fewe men whiche behelde her, coulde efcape her bondes. This Ladye Paulina vnderstanding howe Amadour vsed his Loue

at Barfelone and Parpignon, and how he was beloued of the fayrest Ladies of the Countrie, and aboue all of the Countesse of Palamons, whiche in beautie was pryfed to be the fayrest in all Spayne, and of many other, fayde vnto hym: "That shee had great pitie of hym, for that after so manye good Fortunes, he had maried a wyfe fo foule and deformed." Amadour vnderstanding well by those woordes, that she had defyre to remedy her owne necessitie, vsed the best maner he coulde deuise, to the intent that in makyng her beleue a lye, he should hyde from her the truthe. But shee fubtile and well experimented in Loue, was not contente with talke, but perceyuing well that his harte was not fatisfied with her Loue, doubted that hee coulde not ferue his Lady in fecrete wife, and therefore marked hym fo nere, as daylye she had a respecte and watche vnto hys eyes, whiche hee coulde fo well diffemble, as she was able to judge nothyng, but by darke fuspicion, not without great payne and difficultie to the Gentleman, to whome Florinda (ignoraunt of all their malice) dyd reforte many tymes in prefence of Paulina, whose demeaner then was so familiar, as he with maruellous payne refrayned his lookes against his harte and defire: and to auoyde that no inconvenience should ensue, one daye fpeaking to Florinda, as they were both leaning at a wyndow, fayd these words: "Madame, I beseche you to tell mee whether it is better to speake or to die." Whereunto Florinda answered readily, faying! "I will euer geue councell to my frendes to speake and not to dye: for there be fewe wordes spoken but that they may be amended, but the life lost cannot be recouered." "Promise me then" said Amadour, "that not onely ye will accept those wordes which I will fay, but also not to be assonned or abashed, till ye have heard the end of my tale." To whom she aunswered: "Say what it please you, for if you do affray me none other shall assure me." Then he began to saye vnto her: "Madame, I haue not yet bene defirous to disclose vnto you the great affection which I beare you, for twoo causes: the one, bicause I attend by my long service, to shewe you the experience thereof: the other, for that I doubted you would thinke a great prefumption in me (which am but a poore gentleman) to infinuate my felfe in place whereof I am not worthy: and although

I were a Prince as you be, the loyaltie yet of your harte, will not permitte any other, but him which hath already taken possession (the fonne I meane of the Infant Fortune) to vse in talke any matter of loue: but Madame, like as necessitie in time of great warr constraineth men to make hauoke of their owne goodes, and to confume the greene corne, that the enemy take no profit and reliefe thereof, euen fo doe I hazard to aduaunce the frute, which in time I hope to gather, that your enemies and mine may injoye thereof none advauntage. Knowe ye Madame, that from the time of your tender yeares, I have in such wyse dedicated my selfe to your feruice as I ceasse not still to aspire the meanes to achieue your grace and fauour: and for that occasion, I did marry her whome I thought you did loue best: and knowing the loue you beare to the fonne of the Infant Fortune, I have indeuoured to ferue him as you have fene: and that wherein I thought you dyd delighte, I have accomplished to the vttermoste of my power. You doe fee that I have gotten the good wil of the Countesse your mother, of the Earle your brother, and of all those that doe beare you good wyll: in futche forte as in this house I am estemed, not like a feruaunt, but as a fonne: and all the labour whiche I haue fustayned these five yeares past, was for none other cause, but to lyne all the daies of my life with you: and vnderstand you wel that I am none of those whiche by these meanes doe pretende to receiue of you anye profite or pleafure, other than that which is good and vertuous: I do know that I can never marrie you, and if I could I would not for letting the loue that you beare vnto him, whom I defire to be your husbande, likewise to lone you in vicious forte, like them that hope to recompence their feruice with dishonour of their Ladies, I am fo farre of from that affection, as I had rather be dead than to fee you by defert worthy of leffe loue, and that your vertue shoulde by any meanes be diminished for any pleasure that might happen vnto mee. I do pretend and craue for the ende and recompence of my fervice, but one thing: which is, that you will continue my loyall and faithfull maistresse, neuer to withdrawe from me your wonted grace and fauour, and that you will maintaine mee in that estate wherein I am. Reposinge your trust and fidelitie in me more than in any other, making your felfe fo affured of me, as if for your honor or any cause touching your person, you stand in neede of the life of a Gentleman, the same shal right willingly be employed at your commaundement: in like maner all thinges vertuous and honest which ever I shal attempt I befeech you to thinke to be done onely for the loue of you: and if I have done for Ladies of leffe reputacion than you be, any thing worthy of regard, be affured that for fuch a maistreffe as you be, my enterprises shal increase in such fort, as the things which I found difficult and impossible, shall be easelie for me to accomplishe: but if you do not accept mee to be wholy yours, I determine to give over armes, and to renounce valiaunce, because it hath not succoured me in necessitie: wherfore, Madame, I humblie beseech you that my iust request may not be refused, sith with your honour and confcience you cannot well denie the fame." The yong Lady hearing this vnaccustomed sute, began to chaunge her colour, and to caste downe her eyes like an amased woman, notwithstandinge, being wyse and discrete she said vnto him: "If (Amadour) your request vnto me be none other than you pretende, wherefore have you discoursed this long Oration? I am afraid lest vnder this honeste pretence there lurketh some hidden malice to deceive the ignoraunce of my youth, wherby I am wrapt in great perplexitie how to make you aunswere: for to refuse the honest amitie which you have offered, I shall doe contrary to that I have done hitherto, for I have reposed in you more trust than in any liuing creature: my conscience or mine honour cannot gainesay your demaunde, nor the loue that I beare to the fonne of the Infant Fortune, which is grounded vpon fayth of mariage: where you fay that you pretende nothinge but that is good and vertuous, I cannot tell what thing should let me to make you aunswere according to your request, but a feare that I conceive in hart, founded vpon the small occasion that you have to vse that speache, for if you have alreadye what you demaunde, what doth constraine you to speake so affectuouslie?" Amadour that was not without an aunsweare, said vnto her: "Madame, you speake very wifely, and you do me fo much honour, for the confidence and truste which according to your fayinge you do repose in me, as if I doe not content my felfe with fuch a benefite, I were the yn-

worthiest man aliue: but vnderstande Madame, that he which goeth about to builde a perpetual mansion, ought to have regard to a fure and firme foundacion: wherfore I which defire perpetually to remaine your feruaunte, doe feeke not onely the meanes to kepe my felfe neare about you, but also to foresee that none doe vnderstand the great affection that I do beare you: for although my mind be fo vertuous and honest, as the same may disclose it selfe before the whole worlde, yet there bee some so ignorant and vnskilfull of louers harts, as manye times will judge contrary to trouth, wherof proceedeth fo ill brute and report, as if the effectes were wicked: the cause which hath made me so bold to fay and declare vnto you thus much, is the fuspicion that Paulina hath conceyued, for that I cannot loue her: who doth nothing els but marke and espie my countenaunce in euerve place. and when you vie your familiar talke with me before her, I am fo afraide to shewe any figne whereby shee maye grounde or verifie her iudgemente, that I fall into that inconvenience, which I would willingly anoyde: wherefore I have thought good to befeech you (before her and those which you do know to be so malicious) to refraine from talkinge with mee fo fodainlye, for I had rather dye, than anye liuinge creature should have mistrust thereof: and were it not for the loue which I beare vnto your honour, I had not yet declared the fame vnto you, for I do hold my felfe sufficiente happy and content of the onely loue and affiaunce that you put in me, crauing nought els butt the continuance of the same." Florinda wel fatiffyed with this aunswere, began to feele in harte a further thing to growe than euer she did before: and hearing the honest reasons alleaged by him, faid, that her honestie and vertue shoulde make aunsweare for her, and therewithall affented to his demaunde: whereof whether Amadour were joyful, Louers neede not doubt: but Florinda credited more his counfell, than he would have had For shee being fearefull and timerous, not onely before Paulina, but in all other places, vsed farre other countenaunce than she was wont to do: and in this alienation of her former familiarity, she misliked the conversation that Amadour had with Paulina, whose beauty was fuch, that she could not otherwise beleeue, but that hee loued her: and Florinda to passe ouer her

heauinesse, daily vsed the company of Auenturade, that began maruelously to be ialous betweene her husbande and Paulina, whereof shee made complaint many times to Florinda, who comforted her so well as shee coulde, like one attached with the same disease: Amadour coniecturinge by the countenaunce of Florinda, that not onely shee was estraunged from hym through his former aduertisement, but also that there was some other displeasure conceyued, comming vpon a time, from euenfong out of the Monasterie, he fayd vnto her: "Madame, what countenaunce do you make me?" "Such as I thincke doth please you best," answered Florinda. Then Amadour suspecting a matter, to know whether it were true, began to faye: "Madame, I haue fo vsed Paulina, as she beginneth to give ouer her opinion of you." She answered him: "Ye cannot do a better thing either for your selfe or for me: for in doing your felfe a pleafure, you do honour vnto me." Amadour judged by these words that she thought he toke pleasure to talke of Paulina, wherewith he became fo desperate, as hee could not forbeare to fay vnto her in anger: "Madame, you begin very fone to torment your feruante: there was neuer paine more greeuous vnto mee, than to be forced to speake to her whom I loue not: and fithens al that which I do for your feruice is taken in ill part, I wil neuer speake againe vnto her, whatsoeuer happen: and to diffemble mine anger and contentacion, I wil addresse my felfe to some place hereby, till your fancie be ouer past: but I hope I shall receive newes from my captaine, to retourne to the warres, where I will fo longe continue, as you shall well knowe, that nothing els but you alone doth force me to tarrie here." And in faying fo, without attending for her aunswere, hee incontinently departed, and fhee remayned fo fad and penfive as any woman coulde be: and loue began to shewe his greate force in such wyse as shee knowing her wrong incessantly, wrote to Amadour praying him to retourne home, which he did within a few dayes after that his choler was past, and to tell you what businesse there was, to interrupte and breake the ialousie conceived, it were superfluous: but in the ende, he wanne the field, fo that the promised him, not onely to beleeue that he loued not Paulina, but also helde her selfe affured that it should be to him a martirdome intollerable, to

speake vnto her or any other, except it were to do her seruice: after that love had vanquished this presente suspicion, and that the two louers began to take more pleasure in their mutuall talke than euer they did before: newes came that the king of Spaine was about to addres his Armie to Saulfe, wherfore he that was wont to be there with the first, was not like now to fayle to augment his honour: but true it is, that his griefe was prefently more greate, than at other times before, aswell for losinge the pleasure which he enjoyed, as for feare to finde fome mutacion and chaunge at his returne, because he saw Florinda pursued by great Princes and Lords, and alreadye come to the age of xv. yeares, and thought that if she were maried in his absence, he should neuer haue occafion to fee her againe, except the Countesse of Arande would appointe his wyfe to waite vppon her: for accomplishment wherof he made fuch frends, as the Countesse and Florinda promised him, that into what soeuer place she were maried his wyfe Auenturade should attende vpon her: and although it was in question that Florinda should be maried into Portugall, yet determined that his wyfe should neuer forsake her: and vppon this affuraunce, not without vnfpeakeable forow, Amadour departed and left his wife with the Countesse. When Florinda was alone, her seruaunt departed, shee gaue her selfe to all vertuous life, hopinge thereby to atteine the fame of a most perfecte Lady, and to be counted worthie the interteignemente of fuch a feruaunt. Amadour arrived at Barfalone, was banqueted and intertayned of the Ladies after the old maner, but they finding him so altered and chaunged, thought that Mariage could neuer haue had fuch power vppon man, as it had ouer him: for he feemed then to disdaine, what somtime he greatly defired, and specially the Countesse of Palamons, whom he derely loued, could deuise by no meanes to make him go alone home to his lodging: Amadour tarried at Barfalone so little while as hee coulde, because hee might not come late to the place where hee purposed to winne and atchiue honour: and being arrived at Saulse, great and cruell warres were comenced betwene the two kinges, which I purpose not to recite, ne yet the noble enterprises done by Amadour, whose fame was bruted aboue the rest of his companions. The duke of Nagyers arrivinge at Parpignon, had

charge of two thousand men, and prayed Amadour to be his Lieuetenaunte, who with that hand ferued fo well, as no crie was hard in al the skirmishes, other than of Nagyers. It chaunced that the king of Thunis, which of long time had warre with the Spaniards, vnderstandinge howe the kinges of Spaine and Fraunce were together by the eares at Parpignon and Narbonne, thought that in better time he could not anoye the king of Spaine: wherefore he fent a great nomber of Foists and other vessels, to robbe and spoile those frontiers which were ill guarded and kept: they of Barsalone seing a nomber of Shippes passe before the Towne, aduertifed the king that was at Saulse, who immediatly sent the Duke of Nagyers to Palamons: and when the shippes discried that the place was well guarded, they made as though they would paffe further: but about midnight they retourned, and landed fo many men, that the Duke of Nagyers was taken prisoner. Amadour which was very vigilant, hearing allarme, prefently affembled fo many men as he could, and defended him felf fo wel, as the force of his enemies a long time could not hurt him: but in thende knowing that the Duke of Nagyers was taken prisoner, and that the Turks were determined to burn the Citie of Palamons, and then to fier the house which he strongly had forced against them, hee thought it better to render himself, than to be cause of the loffe of fo manye good fouldiors as were vnder his gouernmente, and also by putting himselfe to raunsome, he hoped in time to come to fee Florinda: then he submitted himselfe to a Turke called Derlyn, the gouernor of the king of Thunis, who conueyed him home to his maister, where he was well entertaigned, and better kept: for they thought that having him in their hands, they had gotten the only Achilles of Spaine. In this fort Amadour continued almost the space of two yeares, in the service of the king of Thunis: newes came into Spaine of this ouerthrow, wherof the frends of the Duke of Nagyers, were very forowfull: but they that loued the honor of their countrie, thoughte Amadour to bee the greatest losse, the brute wherof was noysed in the house of the Countesse of Arande, wher at that time the poore gentlewoman Auenturade lay very fore ficke. Countesse suspecting very much the affection that Amadour

bare vnto her daughter, which he fuffered and diffembled for his vertue's fake, called her daughter afide, and told her the pitious newes. Florinda which could well diffemble faid unto her, that it was a great loffe for al their house, but specially the pitied the state of his poore wife, because at that time she was fo fore ficke. But feing her mother weepe fo bitterly, she let fal fome teares to keepe her company, least through to much diffimulacion her loue might be discouered. After that time, the Countesse spake to her many times, but she could neuer perceine by her countenance, any cause of certaine suspicion. I will leave to speake of the voyages, the prayers, the supplications and fastings, which Florinda did ordinarily make for the fafegard and prosperitie of Amadour, who incontinently so fone as he was ariued at Thunis, fent newes to his frends, and by a fure meffenger aduertized Florinda, that he was in good health and hope to retourne. Which newes was to the poore Lady, the only meanes to releue and eafe her forow. And doubt ye not, but the meanes of writing, was vtterly debarred from Amadour, wherof Florinda acquited herself so diligently, as by her letters and epiftles, he received great confolation and comfort. The Countesse of Arande received commaundement from the king to repaire to Saragofa, where hee that time was arrived. And there she found the yong Duke of Cardonne making sute to the king and Queene, for mariage of her daughter. The Countesse vnwilling to disobey the king, agreed, thinkinge that her daughter being very yonge, had none other affection, but that which already had taken fure impression. When the accorde was concluded, shee fayde vnto her daughter, that she had chosen that matche, as best worthy to joyne with her person. Her daughter confidering howe in a thing already done it was to late to take counsell, said vnto her, that God was to be praised in all things. And feing her mother so far alienated from her intent, she thought it better to shew her selfe obedient, than to take pitie vpon herselfe. And to comfort her in that sorowe, she vnderstode that the infant Fortune was at the point of death. But before her mother or any other person, she shewed not so much as one figne or token therof, strayning her grief fo much, as

the teares by force retiringe to her harte, did cause the bloud to iffue forth at her Nose, in such abundance, as her life was in present daunger. And to recouer her of that disease, shee was maried vnto him, for whose fake shee had rather have chaunged her life for prefent death. After the mariage, Florinda went wyth her husbande into the Duchy of Cardonne, and in her company Auenturade, to whom she fecretly made complaint, as wel of her mother's rigor, as also of the sorow she conceyued for the losse of the sonne of the Infant Fortune. But of her griefe for Amadour, she spake no worde, but by way of comforting her. This yong lady then determined to have God and the respect of her honoure before her eies, and so wel to diffemble her griefes, as none at any time should perceive that shee misliked her hufband. In this fort Florinda paffed long time, in a life no leffe pleafaunt than death. The report whereof she fent to her good feruaunt Amadour, who vnderstanding her great loue, and wel disposed hart, and the loue shee bare to the Infant Fortune, thought that it was impossible she could live long, and lamented her flate more than his owne. This griefe augmented his paine of imprisonmente, wishinge to have remayned a flaue all the days of his life, fo that Florinda had had a husbande respondent to her desire, forgettinge his owne griefe by feeling that his frende did fuffer. And because he vnderstode by a secret friend which he had gotten in the Court of the king of Thunis, that the king was minded to offer him the gibbet, or els to make him renounce his fayth, for the defire hee had to retaine him still, and to make him a good Turke, he behaued himself so well, wyth him that toke him prisoner, that he gaue him leave to depart vpon his fayth, taxing him at so greate raunsome, as he thought a man of so small substance was neuer able to pay. And so without speaking to the king his maister, hee let him go vpon his fayth. After he had shewed himselfe at the Court of the king of Spaine, he departed incontineutly to his frends to get his raunsome, and went straight to Barfalone, whether the yong Duke of Cardonne, his mother, and Florinda, was gone aboute certaine affaires. Auenturade fo fone as she heard tell that her husband was come, declared the same

to Florinda, who feemed for her fake greatly to reioyce therat. But fearing that the defire she had to see him would make her chaunge countenaunce, and that they which knew not the cause therof, would conceive some ill opinion, she stode still at a window to fee him come a far of: and fo fone as she espied him, shee went downe a paire of darke staires that none mighte perceive her chaunge of colour. When she had imbraced Amadour, shee led him into her chamber, and from thence to her mother in law, which had neuer feene him before. He had not continued there two dayes, but he was fo well beloued, as he was before in the house of the Countesse of Arande. I will omitte the words and talke betwene Florinda and Amadour, and the complaintes which he made vnto her of his ill aduenture, that hee had fuftayned in his absence. And after manye teares vttered by her, for the heavines she had taken, aswel for the mariage against her wil, as for the losse of him that she loued fo dearely, and for him whom she thoughte neuer to see againe. shee determined to take her consolation in the loue and fidelitie that she bare to Amadour, which notwithstanding she durst not open and declare: but he that much doubted therof, loft no occasion and time to let her know and vnderstande the great loue he bare her. And euen vppon the point that she was ready to receive him, not as a feruaunt, but for her affured and perfect frend, there chaunced a maruellous fortune: for the king, for certaine matters of importance, incontinently fent forth Amadour, wherof his wyfe conceyued fuch forrow, as hearing those newes, she souned and fell from the stayres where she stode, wherewith she hurte herselfe so sore, as neuer after she reuiued. Florinda (that by the death of her had lost all comfort) made fuch forrow, as one that was deflitute of good frends and kinffolke, but Amadour toke the same in worst part: for he had not onely lost one of the most honest women that euer was, but also the meanes that he should neuer after that time have occasion to visit Florinda. For which cause he fell into such ficknes, as he was like to have died fodaiuly. The old Ducheffe of Cardonne, inceffantly did visite him, and alledged many philosophical reasons to make him paciently to receive death, bu it auayled nothing: for if death of thone fide did torment him, loue on the other did augment his martirdome. Amadour feing that his wyfe was buried, and that the king had fent for him, (hauing no occasion of longer abode there) he entred into fuch dispaire, as hee seemed to be oute of his wittes. Florinda which in comforting him was almost desolate, remayned by him one whole afternone, vfinge very honest and discrete talke vnto him, thinking thereby to diminishe the greatnesse of his forrowe, and affured him that shee would denife wayes how he might visite her more oft than he did thinke for. And because he must depart the next morning, and was fo feeble and weake that he could not rife from his bed, he intreated her to come and fe him at night after enery man was retired to bed: which she promifed to doe, not knowing that loue's extremety was voyd of reason. And he that saw no hope ener after that time to see her againe, whom fo long time he had ferued: and of whom he had neuer receyued other interteignment than that you have heard, was fo beaten and ouercom with loue long diffembled, and of the despaire he conceined, that (all meanes to vse her company taken away) he purposed to play double or quit, either to lose her, or to win her fauour for euer, and to pay himself at one instant the rewarde which he thought he had right wel deserved. Wherfore he caused the curtaines of his bed to be drawen, that they which came into the chamber mighte not fee him, complayning of ficknes more than he was wont to do, wherby they of the house thought he would not have lived xxiv. houres. After every one of the house had visited him at night, Florinda (at the special request of her husband) came to fee him, thinking for his comfort to vtter vnto him her affection, and how aboue all other she would loue him, fo far as her honor did permit: and fitting downe in a chayre at the bed's head, she began to comfort him, and therwithal powred out many teares. Amadour feing her forowful and penfife, thought that in her great torment he might easely attaine the effect of his intent, and lifted himself vp in his bed, which Florinda perceyning, she would have staied him, because she thought that through weakenes he was not able to moue: and kneeling vpon his knees, he faid vnto her: "Muft

I for euermore forgo your fight mine owne deare Lady?" And in faying so he fel downe betwene her armes like one that fainted for lack of strength. Then poore Florinda imbraced him, and of long time held him vp, doing all that was possible for his comfort. But the medecine she gaue him to ease his forow, did rather increase the same more strong: for in fayning himself half dead, without speaking any word, he attempted that which the honor of womanhode doth defend. When Florinda perceiued his ill intent, she could scarce beleue the same, considering his honest requests made before time, and therfore asked him what it was that he defired. But Amadour fearing to heare her aunfwere which he knew well could be none other but chaste and vertuous, without further talke, purfued his purpose so earnestly as he could, wherwith Florinda beinge astonned did suspect he had bin out of his wittes rather than beleue that he wente about her dishonor. Wherefore with loude voice she called a gentleman that was in the chamber. Which Amadour hearing, vtterly in dispaire, threw himself so sodenly into his bed, as the gentleman thought he had beene dead. Florinda rifing out of the chaire, faid vnto him: "Goe quickly and fetch fome good vineger." Which the gentleman did. Then Florinda began to fay vnto him: "Amadour, what follie hath inchaunted your wifedome? And what is that which you would have done unto me?" Amadour that through the force of loue had lost al reason, said vnto her: "Doth my long feruice merite a recompence of fuch cruelty?" "And wher is the honesty then," faid Florinda, "which so many times you have preached vnto me?" "Ah, madame!" faid Amadour: "I beleue it is impossible your felfe more faithfully to loue your owne honour than I do. For when you were vnmaried, I could fo wel fubdue my harte and affection, as you did neuer understand my will and defire. And now that you be maried, to the intente your honour may reste in couerte, what wrong do I to aske that which is mine owne, for by force of loue I haue won you? He that first enioped your harte, hath so ill followed the victorie of your bodye, as hee hath well deserued to lofe altogether. He that possesseth your body, is not worthy to have your hart, wherefore your body is none of his, ne yet he

hath no title in the same. But I Madame, these side or sixe yeares haue fusteyned suche paynes and trauaile for your fake, as you are not ignoraunt but to me appertayneth both your body and harte, for whose sake I have vtterlye forgotten mine owne. And if you can finde in your hart to defende mee from my right, doubt ye not but they which have proued the forces of loue, wil lay the blame on you, which hath in this fort robbed me from my libertie, and with your heavenly graces hath obfcured my fences, that not knowing hereafter what to do, I am conftrayned to go without hope for euer to fee you againe. Notwithstanding warrante your felfe, that in what place so euer I am, you shall still possesse my harte, which shall continue your's for euer, be I vppon the lande or water, or betweene the hands of my moste cruell enemies. But if I could recouer before my departure, that furety of you which the greatnesse of my loue deferueth, I shall be strong enough paciently to beare the griefes of my long absence. And if it please you not to graunt me this request, you shal shortly heare tell that your rigor hath rendred vnto me a most vnhappy and cruel death." Florinda no lesse aftonned than forie, to heare fuch words proceede from him, of whom she neuer had any such suspicion, weepinge saide unto him: "Alas, Amadour, is this the meaning of those vertuous words which fithens the beginning of my youth ye have vttered vnto me? Is this the honor of the conscience, which you have many times perswaded me rather to die than lose the same? Haue you forgotten the good examples recited vnto me of vertuous dames that have refifted foolish love? And is this the maner of your contempt of Ladies that were foolish and vaine, whose light behauiour you diffembled fo much to abhorre? I cannot beleeue Amadour that you are driven into fuch madnes and furie, as the feare of God, your owne conscience, and the estimacion of mine honor, should be altogether out of your minde and memorie. But if it so be as you say, I do praise the goodnes of God, which hath preuented the mishap that nowe I am fallen into, in shewing me by your words, the hart which I did not know. For having lost the sonne of the Infant Fortune, who not onely is maried into another place, but also loued another, and

I now maried to him, which I cannot loue, I thought and determined wholly, with all mine hart and affection to loue you, founding the fame youn that vertue which I knew to be in you, which loue by your meanes onelye I have conceived, and therfore. did more esteeme my honor and conscience, than the price of mine owne life. Vppon affurance of this stone of honestie, I am come hither thinking to build a most fure foundacion. But (Amadour) in one moment thou haste declared, how in place of a pure foundacion, thy buildinge is reared vpon a light fand, and vnconstant ground, or els vpon a filthy and foul quamire. And where I began to erect a good part of the lodgings of this building vpon the ground of the fidelitie, hoping to dwel there for euer, fodenly thou hast ouerthrowen the whole plot. Wherfore, you must immediately breake in sonder the hope and credit that euermore you have found in me, and determine that in what place foeuer I be, not to purfue me either by worde or countenaunce. And do not thinke, that I can or will at anyetime hereafter change this mine opinion, reciting this my last adieu with great forrow and griefe. But if I had made an othe of this perfect amitie and loue, I know mine harte would have died vpon this breach, although the aftonishment in that I am deceived, is fo great, as I am wel affured it will make my life either short or forowfull: and therefore I bid you farewel and that for euer." I purpose not to tel you the sorow which Amadour felt by hearing those words, because it is impossible not only to write them, but also to thincke them, except it be of fuch as have had experience of the like. And feing that vppon this cruel conclusion she would have gone away, he caught her by the arme, knowing well that if he did not remoue that ill opinion, which by his owne occasion she had conceyued, hee should lose her for euer. Wherfore he faid vnto her with a very faint chere: "Madame, al the dayes of my life I have defired to loue a woman endued with honestie and vertue: and because I have found so few, I would fain haue tried whether your person had bin worthy of estimacion and loue, wherof now I am wel assured, and humblie do praise God therefore, because mine hart is addressed to fuch perfection: befeching you to pardon this fond and bold VOL. II.

attempt, fith you fee that the end doth redound to your Florinda, which began to owne honor and contentacion." know by him the malice of other men, like as she was hard to beleue the euill wher it was, euen fo she was more difficile to credite the good where it was not, and faid vnto him: "I pray to God your words be true: yet am I not so ignorant but that the state of mariage wherein I am, hath made me euidently to know the strong passion of blind loue which hath forced you vnto this follie: for if God had losed my hande, I am wel affured you would not have plucked back the bridle; they that attempt to feeke after vertue, do not take the way that you do tread: but this is fufficient if I have lightly beleeved any honestie in you, it is time for me now to know the truth, that I may rid my felf from vou." And in faying fo, Florinda went out of the chamber, and all the nighte long, she never left weeping, feeling such great griefe in that alteracion, as her hart had much to do, to fustaine the affaults of forrow that love had made: for although reason thoughte neuer to loue him againe, yet the hart which is not fubiect to our fancie, would not accord to that crueltie: for which confideracion, she loued him no lesse than she was wont to do, and knowing that loue was the cause of that fault, she purposed for fatiffaction of loue, to Loue him with all her hart, and yet for the obedience and fealtie due to her honor, she thought neuer to make any femblance. In the morning Amadour departed in this fort, troubled as you have hearde, neuertheleffe his couragious heart centred not in dispaire, but renued a fresh hope once againe to fee Florinda, and to win her fauour: then he toke his journey towards the Court of Spaine (which was at Tolledo) taking his way by the Countesse of Arande, wher late in an evening he arrived, and found the Countesse verye sicke for the absence of her daughter Florinda: when shee saw Amadour, shee kissed and imbraced him, as if he had beene her owne child, aswel for the loue fhe bare vnto him, as for the like which she doubted that he bare to Florinda, of whom very earnestly she inquired for newes, who tolde her the best that he could deuise, but not the whole truth, and confessed vnto her the loue betweene Florinda and him, (which Florinda had still conceiled and kept fecrete) praying her

ayde to bring him againe into her fauour: and fo the next morning he departed. And after he had done his bufinesse with the Queene, he repayred to the warres, fo fadde and changed in all his condicions, as the Ladies, Captaynes and all they that were wonte to keepe him companie, did not know him. His apparell was all blacke, mourning for the death of his wife, wherby he couered the forrow which was hid in his hart. In this wyfe Amadour paffed three or 4 yeres before he returned to the Court. And the Countesse of Arande which heard tell that Florinda was so much altered, as it would have moved any hart to behold her, fent for her, hoping that she would have come, but her expectacion was frustrate, for when Florinda vnderstode that Amadour had told her mother the good will betweene them, and that her mother being fo wife and vertuous giving credite to Amadour, did beleue his report, fhe was in marueilous perplexitie, because of the one fide she faw that her mother did esteeme him so well, and on the other fide if the declared ynto her the truth, Amadour woulde conceine displeasure: which thing she had rather die than to do: wherefore she thought herselfe strong inough to chastise him of his folly, without helpe of frends. Againe, she perceyued that by dissembling the euil which she knew by him, she should be constrained by her mother and her frends, to speake and beare him good countenaunce, wherby she feared he would be the more encoraged: but seing that he was far of, she passed the lesse of the matter: and when the Countesse her mother did commaunde her, she wrote letters vnto him, but they were fuch as he might wel gather that they were written rather vpon obedience, than of good wil, the reading wherof bred forrow vnto him in place of that ioye he was wonte to conceiue in her former wrytings. Within the terme of two or three yeres, after he had done fo many noble enterprifes as al the paper of Spaine could not containe them, he deuised a new inuention, not to wynne and recouer the harte of Florinda (for he demed the same quite lost) but to have the victorie ouer his enemy, fithens the had vsed him in that forte, and reiecting al reason and specially feare of death, into the hazarde wherof he hafted himfelfe, he concluded and determined his enterprise in fuch forte, as for his behauiour towardes the Gouernour, hee was

deputed and fent by him to treate with the king of certaine exploytes to be done at Locates, sparing not to impart his message to the Countesse of Aranda, before he told the same to the king, to vse her good aduise therein: and so came in poste straight into the Countie of Aranda, where he had intelligence in what place Florinda remained, and fecretly fent to the Countesse one of his frendes to tell her of his comming, and to pray her to keepe it close, and that he might speake with her that night in secrete wise that no man might perceine: the Countesse very joyfull of his comming, tolde it to Florinda, and fent her into her husbande's chamber, that she might be ready when she should fend for her after eche man was gone to bed. Florinda whiche was not yet well boldened by reason of her former feare, making a good face of the matter to her mother, withdrewe her felfe into an oratorie or chappell, to recommend her felfe to God, praying him to defend her hart from al wicked affection, and therwithal confidered how often Amadour had prayfed her beautie, which was not impaired or diminished, although she had bene sicke of longe time before: wherefore thinking it better to doe injurie to her beautie by defacing it, than to fuffer the harte of fo honest a personage by meanes thereof wickedly to be inflamed, shee tooke vp a stone which was within the Chappell, and gaue her felfe fo great a blowe on the face that her mouthe, eyes and nofe, were altogether deformed: and to thintent no man might suspect what she had done, when the Counteffe fent for her in going out of the Chappell, she fell downe vppon a great stone, and therewithall cried out so loude, as the Countesse came in and founde her in pitious state, who incontinently dreffing her face, and binding it vp with clothes, conneyed her into her chamber, and prayed her to goe into her closet to entertaigne Amadour, tyll she were weary of his companie: whiche she did, thinking that there had bene fomebody with hym: but finding him alone, and the doore shut vpon her, Amadour was not so well pleafed as fhe was difcontented: who nowe thoughte eyther with lone or force to get that, whiche hee had fo long tyme defyred: and after he had spoken a sewe woordes vnto her, and found her in that mynde hee lefte her, and that to dye for it shee woulde not chaunge her opinion, desperatly he sayde vnto her: "By God

madame, the fruite of my labour shall not be thus taken from me for fcruples and doubtes: and fithe that Loue, pacience, and humble defires, cannot preuayle, I will not spare by force to get that, which except I have it will be the meanes of mine overthrowe." When Florinda fawe his face and eyes fo altered, and that the fairest die and colour of the world, was become so red as fier, with his most pleasaunt and amiable loke transformed into horrible hew and furious, and therewithall difcried the very hote burning fier, to sparkle within his harte and face: and how in that fury with one of his firong fiftes he griped her delicate and tender hands: and on the other fide shee seeing all her defences to fayle her, and that her feete and handes were caught in fuche captivitie as she could neither run away nor yet defend her selfe: knewe none other remedie, but to proue if he had yet remaining in him any griftes of the former loue, that for the honour therof he might forget his crueltie. Wherefore she fayd vnto him: "Amadour, if now you doe accompt me for an enemy, I befech you for the honestie of the love which at other times I have found planted in your harte, to geue me leave to speake before you doe torment me." And when shee faw him recline his eare, she pursued her talk in this wyfe: "Alas, Amadour, what cause have you to seke after the thing wherof you shall receive no contentation, inflicting vppon me fuch displeasure as there can be no greater? you have many times proued my wil and affection in the time of my youthfull dayes, and of my beautie farre more excellent than it is now, at what tyme your passion might better be borne with and excused, than nowe: in fuch wyfe as I am nowe amafed to fee that you haue the harte to torment me at that age and great debilitie wherewith I am affected: I am affured that you doubt not but that my wyl and mind is fuch as it was wont to be: wherefore you can not obtayne your demaunde but by force: and if you fawe howe my face is arrayed, you would forget the pleafure whiche once you conceived in me, and by no meanes would forcibly approche nere vnto me: and if there be lefte in you yet any remnantes of loue, it is impossible but that pitie may vanquishe your furie: and to that pitie and honestie whereof once I had experience in you, I do make my plaint, and of the same I do

demaund grace and pardon, to thintent that according to theffect of your wonted perswasion and good aduise you may suffer me to liue in that peace and honestie, which I have determined and vowed during life: and if the loue which you have borne me be converted into hatred, and that more for revengement than affection, you doe purpose to make me the moste unhappy of the world, I affure you, you shall not be able to bryng your intent to paffe, befides that you shall constrayne me against my determination, to vtter and reueale your villany and difordinate appetite towardes her which did repose in you an incredible affiance: by discouering whereof, thinke verely that your lyfe cannot continue without perill." Amadour breaking her talke sayde vnto her: "If I die for it, I will presently be acquieted of my torment: but the deformitie of your face (whiche I thinke was done by you of fet purpose) shall not let me to accomplishe my will: for since I can get nothing of you but the bones and carcafe, I will holde them fo fast as I can." And when Florinda sawe that prayers, reason, nor teares could not auayle, but that with crueltie he woulde nedes followe his villanous defire, which she had hetherto still auoided by force of refistence, she did helpe her selfe so long, till she feared the loffe of her breath, and with a heavy and piteous voice she called her mother fo loud as fhee could crie, who hearing her daughter crie and cal with rufull voyce, began greatly to feare the thing that was true: wherfore she ran fo fast as she could into the warderobe. Amadour not being so nere death as he faide he was, left of his holde in fuche good time, as the Ladye opening her closet, founde him at the dore, and Florinda farre enough from him. The Counteffe demaunded of him, faying: "Amadour what is the matter? tell me the truthe." Who like one that was neuer vnprouided of excufe, with his pale face and wanne, and his breath almoste spent, sayde vnto her: "Alas, madame, in what plight is my lady Florinda? I was neuer in all my life in that amafe wherin I am now: for as I fayd vnto you, I had thought that I had injoyed part of her good will, but nowe I know right well that I have none at all: I thinke madame, that fithe the time she was brought vp with you, shee was neuer lesse wife and vertuous than shee is nowe, but farre more daungerous

and fqueimishe in speaking and talking then behoueth, and euen nowe I would haue loked vpon her, but she would not fuffer me: and when I viewed her countenaunce, thinking that it had bene fome dreame or vision, I defired to kiffe her hande, according to the fashion of the countrey, which shee vtterly refused. True it is Madame, I have offended her, wherof I crave pardon of you, but it chaunced only for that I toke her by the hand, which I did in a maner by force, and kiffed the fame demaunding of her no other pleasure: but she like one (as I suppose) that hath fworne my death, made an outcry for you (as you have hearde) for what cause I know not, except that shee were afraide I would have forced fome other thing: notwithstanding Madame, whatsoeuer the matter be, I protest vuto you the wrong is myne, and albeit that she ought to love al your honest servaunts, yet fortune fo willeth as I alone, the moste affectioned of them all, is clerely exempt out of her fauour: and yet I purpose still to continue towardes you and her, the same man I came hither, beseching the continuance of your good grace and fauour, fithens that without defert I have loste hers." The Countesse which partely beleved, and partelye mistrusted his talke, went vnto her daughter, and demaunded wherfore the cried out fo loud. Florinda answered that fhe was afrayde: and albeit the Counteffe fubtilly asked her of many things, yet Florinda would never make other answere, for that having escaped the handes of her enemy, she thought it punishement enough for him to lose his labour: after that the Counteffe had of long tyme communed with Amadour, she lefte him yet once againe to enter in talke with Florinda before her, to fee what countenaunce shee would make him. To whom he spake. fewe wordes except they were thankes for that she had not confessed the truthe to her mother, praying her at least wife that seing he was dispossessed out of her hart, she would suffer none other to receive his place: but she answering his former talke, saide: "If I had had any other meanes to defend my felfe from you than by crying out, she should never have heard me, and of me you shall neuer heare worse, except you doe constrayne me as you haue done, and for louing any other man, you shall not neede to feare: for fithe I have not found in your harte (which I estemed the most

vertuous in all the world) the good fuccesse that I defired, I wyll neuer beleue hereafter that vertue is planted in any man. And this outrage shall make me free from all passions that Loue can force." And in faying fo she tooke her leave. The mother which behelde her countenaunce, could fuspecte nothing, and after that tyme, shee was persuaded that her daughter bare no more affection to Amadour, and thought affuredly that the was voyde of reason. because she hated al those things which she was wont to loue: and from that time forth there was fuch warre betwene the mother and the daughter, as the mother for the space of VII. yeares would not speake vnto her, except it were in anger: which she did at the request of Amadour: during which time, Florinda converted the misliking of her husband, into mere and constant loue, to anoyde the rigour and checkes of her mother: howbeit, feing that nothing could preuayle, she purposed to beguile Amadour, and leauing for a day or two her straunge countenance towards him, she counfelled Amadour to loue a woman, whiche as she favd. did commonly dispute and talke of their loue. This lady dwelt with the Queene of Spaine, and was called Lorette, who was very ioyfull and glad to get fuch a feruant: and Florinda founde meanes to cause a brute of this newe lone to be spred in enery place, and specially the Countesse of Arande (being at the Court) perceived the fame, who afterwards was not fo displeased with Florinda, as she was wont to be: Florinda vpon a tyme heard tel that a Captain the husband of Loret, began to be ialous ouer his wife, determining by some meanes or other, he cared not howe, to kill Amadour. Florinda notwithstanding her dissembled countenance, could not fuffer any hurt to be done to Amadour, and therefore incontinently gaue him advertisement thereof: but he retourning againe to his former follies, answered, that if it would please her to intertaigne him euery day three houres, he would neuer speake againe to Lorette, whereunto by no meanes shee would confent. Then Amadour faide vnto her: "If you will not haue me to liue, wherefore go ye about to defend me from death? except ye purpose to torment me aliue with greater extremitie then a thousand deathes can do: but for so much as death doth flie from me, I will neuer leaue to feeke him out, by whose approche only I shall have rest." Whilest they were in these tearmes, newes came that the kyng of Granado was about to enter into great warres against the king of Spain: in suche wyse as the king fent against hym the Prince his sonne, and with hym the constable of Castile, and the Duke of Albe, twoo auncient and fage Lordes. The duke of Cardonne and the counte of Arande not willing to tarie behinde, befought the kyng to geue eyther of them a charge: whiche hee did according to the dignitie of their houses, appointing Amadour to be their guide: who during that warre, did futche valiaunt factes as they feemed rather to be desperately than hardily enterpryfed: and to come to the effect of this discourse, his great valiaunce was tryed euen to the death: for the Moores making a bragge as though they would geue battayle, when they fawe the army of the Christians, counterfaited a retire, whome the Spaniardes purfued, but the olde Constable and the duke of Albe doubting their pollicie, flood ftill, against the will of the Prince of Spaine, not fuffering him to passe ouer the Ryuer, but the counte of Arande and the Duke of Cardonne, (although they were countremanded) did followe the chase, and when the Moores fawe that they were purfued with fo fmall a number, they returned, and at one recountrie kylled the Duke of Cardonne, and the Counte of Arande was fo fore hurte as hee was lefte for dead in the place. Amadour arriving vpon this overthrowe, inuaded the battayle of the Moores with futche rage and furie, as hee rescued the twoo bodyes of the Duke and Countie, and caused them to be conveyed to the Prince's campe, who so Immented their chaunce, as if they had bene his owne brethren: but in fearching their woundes, the Countie of Arande was founde to be aliue, and was fent home to his own house in a horselitter, where of long time he was ficke, and likewife was conueied to Cardonue the dead bodie of the yong Duke. Amadour in rescuing those two bodies, tooke fo little heede to him felfe, as he was inclosed with a great number of the Moores, and because he would bee no more taken, as well to verifie his faith towardes God, as also his vowe made to his Lady, and also considering that if he were prysoner to the kyng of Granado, either hee should cruelly be put to death, or els forced to renounce his faith, he determined not to make his

death or taking glorious to his enemies: wherefore kiffing the croffe of his fworde, and rendring his body and foule to the handes of almighty God, he stabbed him selfe into the body with sutche a blow, as there neded no second wound to rid him of his life: in this forte died poore Amadour, so muche lamented as his vertues did deserue. The newes hereof was bruted throughout Spaine, and came to Florinda who then was at Barselone, where her husbande in his life tyme ordeined the place of his buriall: and after shee had done his honourable obsequies, without making her own mother, or mother in law privile, she surrendred her selfe into the monasterie of Iesus, there to live a religious life, receiving him for her husband and friende, whiche had delivered her from the vehement love of Amadour, and from a displeasaunt life so great and vaquiet as was the company of her husband.

In this wife she converted all her affections, to pietie and the perfit love of God, who after she had long time lived a religious life, shee yelded vp her foule in such ioye as the Bridegrom doth when he goeth to visite his spowes.

THE FIFTY-FOURTH NOUELL.

The incontinencie of a duke and of his impudencie to attaine his purpose, with the iust punishement which he received for the same.

In the Citie of Florence (the chiefest of all Thuscane) there was a Duke that maried the Lady Margaret the bastarde daughter of the Emperour Charles the fift. And bicause shee was very young, it was not lawfull for him to lye with her, but taryng till she was of riper yeres, he interteigned an vfed her like a noble gentleman. And who to spare his wife, was amorous of certaine other Gentlewomen of the citie. Amonges whom he was in loue with a very fayre and wyfe Gentlewoman, that was fifter to a Gentleman, a feruaunt of his, whome the Duke loued fo well as himselfe, to whome he gaue so muche authoritie in his house, as his word was fo wel obeied and feared as the Duke's him felf, and there was no fecrete thing in the Duke's minde, but he declared the same vnto him, who might ful wel haue bene called a second himself. The duke seing his fifter to be a woman of great honestie, had no wayes or meanes to vtter vnto her the loue that he bare her (after he had invented all occasions possible) at length he came to this Gentleman which he loued fo well, and faid vnto him: "My friend, if there were any thing in all the world, wherein I were able to pleafure thee, and woulde not doe it at thy request, I should be afraid to say my fantasie, and much ashamed to craue your help and affistance: but the loue is such which I bare thee, as if I had a wife, mother, or daughter, that were able to faue thy life, I would rather imploy them, than to fuffer thee to die in torment: and if thou doe beare vnto me that affection which am thy maister, thinke verely that I doe beare vnto thee the like. Wherefore I will disclose vnto thee suche a secrete and priuie matter, as the filence thereof hath brought me into futche plight as thou feeft, whereof I doe loke for none amendement but by death or by the feruice whiche thou maiest doe me, in a certayne matter which I purpose to tell thee." The Gentleman hearing the reasons of his maister, and seing his face not fayned,

but all beforent with teares, tooke great compassion vpon him and fayd: "My Lorde, I am your humble feruaunt: all the goodes and worship that I have doth come from you. You may fave vnto me as to your moste approued frende. Assure your felf, that all which resteth in my power and abilitie, is already at your commaundement." Then the Duke began to tell him of the loue that hee bare vnto his fifter, which was of futche force, as if by his meanes he did not enioue her, his life could not long continue. For he faide, that he knew right well that intreatie and prefentes were with her of no regard. Wherfore he praied him, that if he loued his life, fo well as he did his, to finde meanes for him to receive that benefite, which without him he was in despaire neuer to recouer. The brother which loued his fifter and honor of his kindred, more than the Duke's pleafure, made a certain reuerence vnto him, humbly befeeching him to vse his trauaill and pain in all other causes saving in that, bicause it was a sute so slaunderous and infamous, as it would purchase dishonor to his whole familie, adding further, that neither his hart nor his honor could ferue him, to confent to do that feruice. The Duke inflamed with vnspeakeable furie, put his finger betwene his teeth, and biting of the nayle, faid unto him in great rage: "Well then fithe I finde in thee no frendship, I know what I have to doe." The Gentleman knowing the crueltie of his Maister, being fore afraide, replied: "My Lorde, for fo much as your defire is vehement and earnest, I will fpeake vnto her and brynge you aunswere of her mynde." And as he was departing, the Duke fayde vnto him: "See that thou tender my life as thou wylt that I shall doe thyne." The Gentleman vnderstanding well what that woorde did meane, abfented him felfe a day or twaine to aduife what were best to be And amonges divers his cogitations, there came to his remembraunce the bounden dutie which he dyd owe to his Maister. and the goodes and honours which he had receyued at his handes. on the other fyde, hee confidered the honour of his house, the good life and chastitie of his syster, who (he knewe well) would neuer confent to that wickednesse, if by subtiltie shee were not surprised. or otherwyse forced, and that it were a thing very straunge and rare, that he should goe about to defame hymselfe and the whole

stocke of his progenie. Wherefore hee concluded, that better it were for hym to die, than to commit a mischief so great vnto his fifter, whiche was one of the honestest women in all Italie. And therewithall confidered how he might deliuer his countrie from futch a tyrant, which by force would blemishe and spot the whole race of his auncient stock and familie. For he knew right wel that except the duke were taken away, the life of him and his affinitie could not be in fecuritie and fafegarde: wherfore without motion made to his fifter of that matter, he deuised how to saue his life and the reproche that should follow. Vpon the second daye he came vnto the duke, and tolde hym in what forte he had practised with his fifter, and that although the same in the beginning was harde and difficult, yet in the ende he made her to confent, vpon condicion that hee would keepe the fame fo fecrete as none but hymfelfe and he myght knowe of it. The duke defirous and glad of those newes, dvd sone believe hym, and imbracing the messanger, promised to geue him whatsoener he would demaunde, praying hym with all speede that hee might inioye his desyred purpofe. Whereupon they appointed a tyme: and to demaunde whether the duke were glad and joyfull of the same, it were superfluous. And when the defired night was come, wherin he hoped to have the victorie of her whom he thought inuincible, he and the gentleman alone withdrewe themselues together, not forgetting his perfumed coif and fwete shirte wrought and trimmed after the best maner. And when eche wight was gone to bed, both they repayred to the appointed lodging of his Lady, where being arrived they founde a chamber in decent and comly order. The gentleman taking of the Duke's night gowne, placed hym in the bedde, and fayde vnto hym: "My Lorde, I wil nowe goe feeke her, which can not enter into this chamber without blufhing, howbeit I truste before to morrowe morning she wyll be very glad of you." Which done, he left the Duke, and went into his own chamber, where he founde one of his feruantes alone, to whome he fayde: "Hast thou the harte to followe me into a place where I shall be reuenged vpon the greatest enemie that I have in the worlde?" "Yea fir," anniwered his man. Whereupon the Gentleman toke him with him fo fodainly, as he had no leafure to arme him felfe with other weapon but with his onely dagger. And when the Duke heard him come againe, thinking he had brought her with hym that he loued fo derely, hee drewe the curteine, and opened his eyes to behold and receive that joye which he had fo long loked for, but in place of feeing her which he hoped should be the conferuation of his life, he fawe the acceleration of his death, which was a naked fworde that the Gentleman had drawen, who therwithall did strike the Duke, which was in his shirte voyde of weapon, although well armed with courage, and fitting vp in his bedde grafped the Gentleman about the body, and fayde: "Is this thy promife whiche thou hast kept?" And seeing that he had no other weapon but his teeth and nayles, he bitte the gentleman in the arme, and by force of his owne strengthe he so defended himselfe, as they bothe fell downe into the flower. The gentleman fearing the match, called for hys manne, who finding the Duke and his maister fast together, that he wyst not whether to take, he drewe them both by the feete into the middest of the chamber, and with his dagger affayde to cut the Duke's throte. The duke who defended himselfe, till suche time as the losse of his bloud made him fo weake and feeble that he was not able to contende any longer. Then the Gentleman and his man laide him againe into his bed, where they accomplished the effect of that murther. Afterwardes drawing the curteine, they departed and locked the dead body in the chamber. And when he faw that he had gotten the vicctorie of his enemy, by whose death he thought to set at libertie the common wealth, he supposed his facte to be vnperfect if he did not the like to fiue or fixe of them which were nerest to the Duke. and best beloued of him. And to attaine the perfection of that enterpryse, he bad his man to doe the like vnto them one after another, that hee had done to the Duke. But the feruaunt being nothing hardie or coragious, faid vnto his maister: "Me thinke, fir, that for this time ye have done enough, and that it were better for you now to denife wave howe to faue your owne life, than to feeke meanes to murder any more. For if we do confume fo long space of time to kill euery of them, as we have done in murdering of the Duke, the day light will discouer our enterprise before we haue made an ende, yea although wee finde them naked and

without defence." The gentleman whose euill conscience made him fearfull, did beleue his feruaunt, and taking him alone with him, went to the bishop that had in charge the gates of the citie, and the vse of the Postes, to whom he sayd: "This evening (my Lord) newes came vnto me that mine owne brother lieth at the point of death, and crauing licence of the Duke to goe fe him he hath giuen me leaue. Wherefore I beseche you commaunde the Postes to deliuer me two good horse, and that you will sende worde to the porter that the gates may be opened." The bishop which estemed no lesse his request than the commaundement of the Duke his maister, incontinently gaue him a billet, by vertue wherof both the gates were opened, and the horse made ready according to his demaunde. And vnder colour and pretence of vifiting his brother, he rode to Venice, where after he had cured himselfe of the duke's bitinges fastened in his slesse, he tranailed into Turkey. In the morning the duke's fernauntes feing the time fo late before their maister retourned, suspected that he was gone forth in visiting of fome Ladye, but when they fawe he taried fo long, they began to feke for him in every place. The poore Ducheffe into whose harte the love of her husbande strongly did invade, vnderstanding that he could not be founde, was very penfife and forowfull. But when the Gentleman which he fo dearely loued, was not likewyfe feene abroade, fearche was made in his chamber, where finding bloud at the chamber dore, they entred in, but no man was there to tell them any newes, and following the tract of the bloud the poore feruantes of the Duke went to the chamber dore, where he was, which dore they found fast locked, who incontinently brake open the fame: and feing the place all bloudy, drew the curteine, and found the wretched carcasse of the Duke lying in the bedde, fleeping his endleffe fleepe. The forrow and lamentation made by the duke's feruauntes, carving the dead bodye into his palace, is easie to be coniectured. Wherof when the Bishop was aduertised, he repaired thether, and tolde how the Gentleman was gone awaye in the night in great haste, vnder pretence to goe to see his brother: whereupon it was euidently knowen that it was he that had committed the murder. And it was proued that his poore fifter was neuer privile to the facte, who although she was assonned with the fodaynes of the deede, yet her loue towardes her brother was farre more increased, bicause he had delivered her from a Prince so cruell, the enemy of her honestie: for doing whereof he did not sticke to hazard his owne life. Whereupon she perseuered more and more in vertue, and although she was poore, by reason her house was consistate, yet both her sister and shee matched with so honest and riche husbandes as were to be founde in Italie: and afterwardes they both lived in good and great reputation.

THE FIFTY-FIFTH NOUELL.

One of the Frenche kinge's called Frauncis the first of that name, declared his gentle nature to Counte Guillaume, that would have killed him.

In Digeon a town of Burgundie, there came to the feruice of king Frauncis, (whiche was father to Henry the fecond of that name, whiche Henry was kylled by Mounfier Mongomerie, in a triumphe at the Tilt, and graundfather to Charles the IX, that now raigneth in Fraunce) an Earle of Allemaigne called Guillaume, of the house of Saxon, whereunto the house of Sauoie is so greatly allied, as in old time they were but one. This Counte for fo much as he was estemed to be so comely and hardy a Gentleman as any was in Almaigne, was in futche good fauour with the king, as he tooke him not onely into feruice, but vsed him fo nere his persone, as he made him of his privy chamber. Vpon a day the Gouernour of Burgundie, the Lorde Trimouille (an auncient knight and loyall feruaunt of the kyng) like one fuspicious and fearfull of the euill and hurte of his Maister, had daylie espies ouer his enemies, vfing his affaires fo wyfely, as very fewe thinges were concealed from hym. Among other aduertisementes, one of his friendes wrote vnto him that the Counte Guillaume had received certain fommes of money, with promife of more, if by any meanes he could deuise which wave to kill the king. The Lorde of Trimouile hearing of this, failed not to come to the kyng to giue him knowledge thereof, and disclosed it lykewyse to Madame Loyse of Sauoye his mother, who forgetting her amitie and aliaunce with the Almaigne Earle, befought the king forthwith to put hym awaye. The kyng prayed his mother to fpeake no more thereof, and fayde, that it was impossible that fo honest a Gentleman would attempt to doe a deede so wicked. Within a while after, there came other newes of that matter, confirming the first: whereof the Gouernour for the intire loue he bare to his Maister, craued licence either to expel him the countrie, or to put him in warde. But the king gaue speciall VOL. II.

commaundement that he should not make any semblaunce of displeasure, for that hee purposed by some other meanes to knowe the truthe. Vpon a time when he went a hunting he girded about him the best sworde that hee had, to serue for all armes and affayes, and toke with hym the Counte Guillaume, whome he commaunded to wayte vpon him, the firste and chiefest next his owne persone. And after he had followed the hart a certayne tyme, the kyng feing that his traynes was farre from hym, and no man neare him fauing the Counte, tourned hym felfe rounde about, and when hee fawe that hee was alone, in the mydde of the forest, hee drew out his sworde, and sayd to the Counte: "How faye you, (fir counte) is not this a fayre and good fwoorde?" The counte feling it at the point, and well viewyng the same, aunswered that he neuer sawe a better in all his life. "You have reason," sayde the kyng, "and I beleve that if a Gentleman were determined to kyll mee, and did knowe the force of myne armes, and the goodnesse of myne harte accompanied with this fword, he would bee twyfe well aduifed before hee attempted that enterprife. Notwithstanding I would accompt him but a cowarde, wee being alone withoute witnesses, if he did not attempt that, which he were disposed to do." The Counte Guillaume with bashfull and astonned countenaunce aunsweared: "Sir, the wickednesse of the enterprise were very great, but the folly in the execution were no leffe." The king with those wordes fell in a laughter, and put the fword in the skaberd againe: and hearing that the chase drewe neare him, he made to the same so faste as he coulde. When he was come thether, he faid nothing of that which had passed betweene theim, and verelye thoughte that the Counte Guillaume although that he was a stronge and stoute gentleman, yet he was no man to do fo great an enterprise. But the Counte Guillaume, fearing to be bewrayed or fuspected of the fact, next day morning repayred to Robertet the Secretarie of the kinge's reuenues, and faide that hee had well wayed the giftes and annuities which the kinge would give him to tarrie, but he perceived that they were not fufficient to interteigne him for halfe a yeare, and that if it pleafed not the king to double the fame, hee should be forced to

departe, praying the fayde Robertet to know his grace's pleafure fo fone as he coulde, who fayd vnto him, that he himfelfe could without further commission disbursse no more vnto him, but gladly without further delay he would repaire to the king: which he did more willingly, because he had seene the aduertisements of the Gouernor aforesaid. And so sone as the kinge was awake, he declared the matter vnto him in the presence of Monsier Trimouille and Monsier Bouinet, lord admirall, who were vtterly ignorant of that which the king had done. To whom the kinge faid: "Loe, ye have bene miscontented for that I would not put away the Counte Guillaume, but now ye fee he putteth away himfelfe. Wherefore Robertet (quoth the king) tell him, that if he be not content with the state which he received at his first entrie into my feruice, whereof many gentlemen of good houses would thinke themselues happie, it is meete that he seeke his better fortune, and tell him that I would be lothe to hinder him, but wilbe very well contented, that he feeke where he may liue better, accordingly as he deserveth." Robertet was so diligent to beare this aunfweare to the Counte, as he was to prefent his fute to the kinge. The counte faid that with his licence he would gladly go forthwith: and as one whom feare forced to depart, he was not able to beare his abode 24 houres. And as the king was fitting downe to dinner, fayning to be force for his departure, but that necessitie compelled him to lose his presence, hee toke his leaue. He went likewise to take leave of the king's mother, which she gave him with fo great ioy, as she did receive him, being her nere kinsman and freind. Then he went into his countrie: and the king feing

his mother and feruantes aftonned at his fodaine departure, declared vnto them the Al Arme, which he had given him, faying, that although he was innocent of the matter fuspected, soe was his feare greate ynoughe, to departe from a maister wyth whose condicions hitherto he was not acquainted.

THE FIFTY-SIXTH NOUELL.

A pleafaunt discours of a great Lord to enioy a Gentlewoman of Pampelunæ.

THERE was in the time of king Lewes the XII. of that name, a young Lord, called the lorde of Auannes fonne to the Lorde Alehret, and brother to king John of Nauarre, with whom the faid Lord of Auannes ordinarely remayned. Now this yong Lorde was of the age of xv. yeares, fo comely a personage, and full of curtesie and good behauiour, as he feemed to be created for none other purpose, but to be beloued and regarded: and so he was in deede of al those that did wel behold and note his commendable grace and condicion, but chiefly of a woman, dwelling in the citie of Pampelunæ in Nauarre, the wife of a rich man, with whom she lived honestly: and although she was but 23 yeres of age, and her husband very nere fiftie, yet her behauior was so modest, as she seemed rather a widow than a maried wyfe, who ysed not to frequent and haunte any mariages, banquets, or common affemblies without the company of her husbande, the vertue and goodnes of whom she so greatly esteemed, as she preferred the same before the beautie of al others. The husband, having experience of her wisedome, put such trust in her, as he committed al thaffaires of his house to her discretion: vpon a day this rich man with his wife, were inuited to a mariage of one that was nere kinne vnto him: to which place (for the greater honor of the mariage) repaired the yong Lord of Auannes, who naturally was given to dauncing, and for his excellencie in dauncing there was not his like to be found in his time: after dinner when they prepared to daunce, the Lord of Auannes was intreated thereunto by the rich man: the faid lord asked him with what gentlewoman hee should lead the daunce. He aunsweared him: "My Lord if there were any one more beautifull, or more at my commaundement then my wyfe, I would present her vnto you, beseeching you to do mee fo much honour as to take her by the hande." Which the yong Lorde did, and by reason of his youthfull courage he toke more

pleafure in vaultinge and dauncinge, then in beholding the beautie of the Ladies: and she whom he ledde by the hand, contrarywyse regarded more the grace and beautie of the faid yong Lord, then the daunce wherin she was, albeit for her great wisedome she made therof no femblance at al. When supper time was come, the Lord of Auannes badde the companie farewell and went home to the caftle: whether the riche man accompanied him vppon his moile: and riding homewards together, hee faide vnto him: "My Lord, this day you have done fo great honor vnto my kinfemen and mee, that it were great ingratitude if I should not offer my felfe with all the goods I have to do you feruice: I knowe fir that fuch Lordes as you be which have nere and couetous fathers, many times do lacke money which we by keeping of fmal houshold, and vfing good husbandrie do heape and gather together. Now thus it is fir, that God having given mee a wife accordinge to my defire he would not in this world altogether indue mee with heauenly pleafures, but hath left me voyde of one ioy which is the love that fathers have of children. I know fir that it is not my dutie, and belongeth not to my state to adopt you for such a one, but if it maye please you to receive mee for your feruaunt, and to declare vnto me your small affaires, so farre as a hundred thousande Crownes shall extende, I will not sticke to helpe your necessities." The yong Lorde of Auannes was very joyfull of this offer, for he had fuche a father as the other had described vnto him: and after he had given him hartie thanckes, he called him his friendlye father. From that time forth the fayd riche man conceiued fuch loue in the yong Lord, as daily he ceased not to inquire of his lacke and want, and hid not from his wyfe the deuocion which he bare to the faid Lorde of Auannes, for which she rendred vnto him double thanckes. And after that time the faid yong Lord lacked not what he defired, and many times reforted to that rich man's to drincke and eate with him, and finding him not at home, his wyfe rewarded him with his demaunde: whoe admonished her by wyfe and difcrete talke to be vertuous, because he feared and loued her aboue all the women of the worlde. She which had God and her honor before her eyes, was contente with his fight and talke, wherin confifted the satisfaction of his honestie and vertuous loue: in fuch wife as fhe neuer made any figne or femblaunce, wherby he might thinke and judge that shee had anve affection vnto him, but that which was both brotherlie and christian. During this couerte amitie, the Lord of Auannes through the forefaid ayde, was very gorgious and trimme, and approching the age of xvII. yeares, began to frequent the company of Gentlewomen more then he was wont to do: and although he had a more willing defire, to love that wyfe and difcrete dame aboue other, yet the feare which he had to lose her loue (if shee misliked her fute) made him to hold his peace, and to feeke els wher: and gaue himself to the loue of a Gentlewoman dwelling hard by Pampelunæ, which had to hufband a yong gentleman, that aboue all thinges loued and delighted in dogges, horse, and Hawkes. This noble Gentleman began (for her fake) to deuise a thousand pastimes, as Torneyes, running at the Tilt, Mommeries, Maskes, feaftes and other games, at all which this yong dame was prefent: but because that her husband was very fantasticall, and saw his wyfe to be faire and wanton, hee was ialous of her honour, and kepte her in fo straite, as the sayde Lord of Auannes colde get nothing at her hands but words, shortly spoken, in some daunce, albeit in litle time and leffe speache, the fayde Lorde perceyued that there wanted nothing for full perfection of their loue, but time and place: wherfore he came to his new adopted father the rich man, and faid vnto him that he was minded with great deuocion to visite our Lady of Montferrat, intreating him to suffer his houshoulde traine to remaine with him, because he was disposed to go thither alone. Whereunto he willingly agreed: but his wyfe whose hart the great prophet loue had inspired, incontinently fuspected the true cause of that voyage, and cold not forbeare to fave vnto the Lord of Auannes these woords: "My Lord, my Lorde, the pilgrimage of the Lady whom you worshippe, is not farre without the walles of the Citie, wherefore I befeech you aboue all thinges to have regarde vnto your health." Hee which feared her, and loued her, blushed at her words, and without talke by his countenaunce he feemde to confesse the trothe: whereupon he departed, and when he had bought a couple of faire Genets of Spaine he clothed himself like a horsekeeper and so dis-

guifed his face as no man knew him. The Gentleman which had maried that fonde and wanton gentlewoman, louinge aboue all thinges (as is favde before) fayre horfes, espyed those two Genets which the lord of Auannes did lead, and incontinently came to buy them: and after he had bought them, hee beheld the horsekeeper which rode and handled them paffing well, and asked him if he were willing to ferue him: the Lord of Anannes answeared yea, and added further how he was a poore horse-keeper vnskilfull of other science but of keepinge of horse, which practize hee could do fo well, as he doubted not but he should content and please him: the Gentleman very glad thereof, gaue him charge of all his horse, and called forth his wyfe vnto him, vnto whom he recommended his horse and horsekeper, and told her that he himself was disposed to go to the castel: the gentlewoman so well to please her husband as for her owne delight and pastime, wente to loke vpon her horse and to behold her new horskeper, who seemed to be a man of good bringing vp, notwithstanding she knewe him not. He feing that she had no knowledge of him, came to do reuerence vnto her after the maner of Spaine, and taking her by the hand kiffed the same, and by kiffing of her hand, he disclosed himself so much as she knew him: for in dauncing with her many times he vsed the like curtesie: and then she ceased not to deuise place wher she might speake to him a part: which she did the very fame euening: for being bidden to a feast wherunto her husband would faine haue had her to go, she fayned herselfe to be ficke and not able: and her husband loth to faile his frends request, said vnto her: "For so much (my good wyfe) as you be not disposed to go with me, I pray you to have regard to my dogges and horse that they may lack nothing." The Gentlewoman was very wel contented with that comiffion: howbeit without chaung of countenance she made him answere that sith in better things he would not imploie her, she would not refuse the least, to fatisfie his defire: and her husband was no soner out of the gates, but she went down into the stable, where she founde faulte with divers things: for provision whereof she committed such feueral busines to her men on euery fide, that shee remayned alone with the mafter horskeper: and for feare least any should

come vpon them vnwares, she faid vnto him: "Go into my garden and tarie my comming in the litle house at the ende of the Which he did fo diligently as hee had no leafure to thancke her, and after that she had given order to the yeomen of the stable, shee went to see the dogges, counterfaiting like care and diligence to have them wel intreated: in fuch wife as she seemed rather a mayde of the chamber then a maistresse of the house: which done shee returned into her chamber, where she made her felf to be so werie, as she went to bed, saying that she was difposed to sleepe. All her women left her alone except one in whom she reposed her greatest trust, and vnto whom she said: "Go downe into the garden, and cause him whom you shall finde at the end of the alley, to come hither." The mayde wente downe and founde the Maister horskeeper there, whom forthwith shee brought vnto her maistresse: and then the gentlewoman caused her mayd to go forth to watch when her husbande came home. The lord of Auannes seing that he was alone with his maistres, put of his horsekeeper's apparrel, plucked from his face his false nose and beard, and not as a feareful horsekeeper, but like such a Lord as he was, without asking leave of the Gentlewoman, boldly laied him downe beside her: where hee was of that foolishe woman received fo ioyfully, as his eftate and goodly perfonage did require, continning with her vntil the retorne of her husband: at whose comming putting vpon him againe his counterfaite attire, left the pleafure which by policie and malice he had vfurped. The gentleman when hee was within, hearde tell of the dilligence which his wife had vsed vppon his commaundemente, and thanked her very hartelie. "Husband (said the gentlewoman) I do but my dutie, and do assure you that if there be no overfeer to checke and commaunde your negligent feruaunts, you shal have neyther dogge nor horse well kept and ordred: forafmuche as I knowe their flouth, and your good wil, you shalbe better serued then you have bin heretofore." The gentleman who thought that he had gotten the best horsekeeper of the worlde, asked her how she liked him. "I assure you fir (quoth she) he doth his busines so well as any seruaunt, howbeit he had neede to be called vppon, for you know feruaunts in thefe dayes without an ouerfeer, wilbe be flow and careleffe."

long time continued the husbande and wyfe in greater amitie and loue then before, and gaue ouer all the fuspicion and ialousie which hee had conceyued, because before time his wyfe louinge feastes, daunces and companies, was become intentife and diligente about her household: and perceived that now many times she was contented in homely garmentes to go vp and downe the house wher before the was accustomed to be 4 houres in trimming of herselse: whereof shee was commended of her husbande, and of euery man that knew not how the greater deuill had chased awaye the leffe. Thus lived this yonge dame vnder the hypocrifie and habite of an honest woman, in suche fleshlye pleasure as reason, conscience, order and measure, had no longer resting place in her: which infaciat luft the yong Lord of delicate complexion was no longer able to fusteine, but began to waxe so pale and feeble, as he needed no vifarde for diffiguring of himselfe. Notwithstanding the folish love which he bare to that woman so dulled his fence, as he prefumed vppon that force which fayled in the monstruous giant Hercules, whereby in the ende constrayned with ficknes and councelled by his maistresse, which loued not the ficke fo well as the hole, demaunded leave of his maister to go home to his frends: who to his great griefe graunted him the fame: and caused him to make promise that when he was recouered hee should returne againe to his service. Thus went the Lord of Auannes on foote away from his maister, for he had not paste the lenght of one streate to trauaile. And when he was come to the rich man's house his new father, he found none at home but his wyfe, whose vertuous loue shee bare him was nothing diminished for al his voyage: but when she saw him so leane and pale, she could not forbeare to say vnto him: "Sir, I knowe not in what staye your conscience is, but your body is litle amended by this pilgrimage, and I am in doubte that the way wherein you traueiled in the night, did wearie and paine you more, then that vppon the daye: for if you had gone to Hierusalem on foote, you mighte perhappes have returned more Sunne burned, but more leane and weake it had bin impossible. Now make accompt of your pilgrimage here, and ferue no more fuch Sainctes, for in place of raylinge the deade from life, they do to death those that

be on liue: moreouer I shall saye vnto you, that if your bodye were neuer fo finfull, I fee well it hath fuffred fuch penaunce, as I have pitie to renewe anye former payne." When the Lorde of Auannes had hearde all her talke he was no leffe angrie with himselfe then ashamed, and saide vuto her: "Madame, I haue sometimes heard tell that repentaunce insueth sinne, and now I haue proued the fame to my cost, praying you to excuse my youth that could not be corrected but by experience of that euill, which before it would not beleeve." The Gentlewoman chaunging her talke, caufed him to lye downe vppon a fayre bedde, where he lay the fpace of xv. dayes, feedinge onely vppon restoratives: and the husband and wyfe kept him fo good companye, as one of theim neuer departed from him: and albeit that he had committed those follies, (fuche as you have heard) against the minde and aduise of that wyfe and discrete dame, yet shee neuer diminished the vertuous loue which shee bare him, for shee still hoped that after he had spent his yonger dayes in youthly follies, he would retire at length when age and experience should force him to vse honest loue, and by that meanes would be altogether her owne. And during those fifteene dayes that he was cherished in her house, fhe vfed vnto him womanly and commendable talke, onely tending to the loue of vertue, which caryed fuch effect as he began to abhorre the follie that he committed: and beholding the gentlewoman which in beautie paffed the other wanton, with whom he had delt before, he imprinted in minde more and more the graces and vertues that were in her, and was not able to keepe in harte the fecrete conceipt of the fame, but abandoning all feare, he fayd vnto her: "Madame, I fee no better means, to be fuch one, and fo vertuous as you by wordes defire me for to be, but to fettle my harte, and give my felfe to be holie in loue with vertue, and the qualities therunto appertinent. I humblie befeech you therfore (good madame) to tel me if your felfe wil not vouchfafe to giue me al your ayde and fauor that you possiblie can, for thobteyning of the same." The maistresse very joyful to heare him vse that language, made him aunswere: "And I do promise you sir, that if you wilbe in lone with vertue as it behoueth fo noble a flate as you be. I wil do you the feruice that I can to bring you there-

unto with fuch power and abilitie as God hath planted in mee." "Well madame," faide the Lorde of Anannes, "remember then your promise, and understande that God unknowen of the Christian but by fayth, hath dayned to take flesh, like to that our finful which we beare about vs, to thend that by drawing our flesh into the loue of his humanity, he may draw also our minde to the loue of his diuinitie, and requireth to be ferued by thinges visible to make vs loue by fayth that divinity which is invisible: in like maner the vertue which I defire to imbrace all the dayes of my life, is a thing innifible and not to be feen but by outward effects. Wherfore needeful it is, that she now do put vpon her some body or shape to let herselse be knowen amonges men: which in deede · the hath don by induing herfelf with your form and shape, as the most perfect that she is able to find amonges living creatures. Wherfore I do acknowledge and confesse you to be not onely a vertuous creature, but enen very vertue it felf. And I which fee the fame to shine vnder the glimfing vaile of the most perfect that ever was: I will honor and ferue the fame during my life, forfaking (for the fame) all other vaine and vicious loue." The gentlewoman no leffe content then marueling to here those words diffembled fo wel her contented minde as she said vnto him: "My Lord, I take not vpon me to aunswere your dininity, but like her that is more fearefull of enill then beleful of good, do humblie befeech you to ceafe to speake to me those words of prayfe, that is not worthy of the least of them. I know right wel that I am a woman, not onely as another is, but so imperfect, as vertue might do a better acte to transforme me into her, then she to take my forme, except it be when she desires to be vnknowen to the world: for vnder fuch habite as mine is, vertue cannot be knowen, according to her worthines: fo it is fir, that for mine imperfection, I wil not cease to bere you such affection, as a woman ought or maye do that feareth God, and hath respect to her honour: but that affection shal not appere, vntill your harte be able to receive the pacience which vertuous love commaundeth. And now fir I know what kinde of speach to vse, and thincke that you do not loue fo well, your owne goodes, purfe or honour, as I doe with all my hart tender and imbrace the fame." The

lord of Auannes fearefull with teares in eyes, befought her earnestly that for her woordes affuraunce, shee woulde vouchsafe to kiffe him: which she refused, saying that for him, she would not breake the countrie's custome: and uppon this debate the husband came in, to whom the Lord of Auannes faid: "My father, I knowe my felfe fo much bounde to you and to your wife, as I befech you for euer to repute me for your fonne." Which the good man willingly did. "And for furety of that amitie, I pray you," faid Monfier D'Auannes, "that I may kiffe you." Whiche he did. After he faid vnto him: "If it were not for feare to offend the Law, I would do the like to my mother your wyfe." The husbande hearinge him faye fo, commaunded his wyfe to kiffe him, which she did although she made it straunge, either for the Lord's defire or for husband's request to do the same: then the fier (which words had begunne to kindle in the harte of the poore Lorde) beganne to augmente by that defired kiffe, fo strongly fued for, and fo cruelly refused: which done the fayde Lord of Auannes repayred to the Castell to the kinge his brother, where he told many goodly tales of his voyage to Montferrat, and vnderstode there, that the kinge his brother was determined to remoue to Olly and Taffares, and thinking that the iorney woulde be longe, conceived great heavines, which made him to mufe how he mighte affaye before his departure, whether the wife Gentlewoman bare him fuch good will, as fhee made him beleeue shee did: and therefore hee toke a house in the streate where she dwelt, which was old and ill fauoured and built of Timber: which house about midnight of purpose he set on sier, wherof the crye was fo great throughout the Citie as it was hard within the rich man's house. Who demaunding at his window wher the fier was, vnderstode it to be at the Lord of Auannes, wherunto he incontinently repayred with all the people of his house, and found the yonge Lord in his shirt in the middest of the streat, whom for pitie he toke betweene his armes, and couering him with his nighte Gowne, caried him home to his house with al possible speede, and saide vnto his wife which was a bed: "Wife, I give you to kepe this prisoner, vse him as my selfe." So sone as he was departed the fayd Lord of Auannes, who had good wil to be

interteigned for her husband, quicklie lept into the bed, hoping that the occasion and place would make that wife woman to chaunge her minde, which he founde to be contrary: for fo fone as he lept into the bed of thone fide, shee speedelie went out of the other, and putting on her night Gowne she repaired to the bed's head, and faid vnto him: "How now fir, do you thincke that occasions can chaunge a chaste harte? beleeue and thincke that as gold is proued in the Fornace, euen fo an vnfpotted hart in the middest of temptacion: wherein many times an honest hart sheweth it selfe to be more strong and vertuous, then els where, and the more it is affailed by his contrary, the coulder be the defires of the same: wherefore be you affured that if I had bin affected with other minde then that which many times I have disclosed vnto you, I would not have fayled to finde meanes to have fatiffyed the fame: praying you that if you will have me to continue the affection which I beare you, to remove from your minde for euer not onely the will but the thoughte also, for any thinge you be able to doe to make me other then I am." As she was speaking of these words her women came into the chamber, whom the commaunded to bring in a colacion of all fortes of comficts and other delicats: but that time hee had no appetite either to eate or drincke, hee was fallen into fuche dispaire for fayling of his enterprise: fearing that the demonstracion of his defire, would have caused her to give over the secrete familiaritie betweene them. The hushande havinge ceased the fier, retorned and intreated the Lord of Auannes that night to lodge in his house, who passed that night in such number of cogitacions as his eyes were more exercifed with weeping then fleeping, and early in the morninge he bad them farewell in their bedde, where by kiffing the Gentlewoman hee well perceived that she had more pitie upon his offence, then euill will against his person, which was a cole to make the fier of loue to kindle more fiercely. After dinner he rode with the king of Taffares, but before his departure he went to take his leaue of his newe alied father and of his wyfe: whoe after the furst commaundement of her husband, made no more difficultie to kiffe him then if he had bin her owne fonne. But be affured the more that vertue stayed her

eye and countenaunce to shew the hidden flame, the more it did augment and become intollerable, in fuch wyfe as not able to indure the warres which honour and loue had rayfed within her hart, (who notwithstanding was determined nener to shewe it, having loft the consolacion of her fight, and forgeven the talke with him for whom she lived) a continual fener began to take her, canfed by a Melancholicke and couert humor, in fuch wyfe as the extreme partes of her body waxed cold, and those within burnt inceffantly. The Phisitions (in the hands of whom man's life doth not depend) began greatly to miftrust health by reason of a certaine opilacion which made her melancholicke: who counceiled the husbande to aduertise his wife to confider her conscience, and that she was in the handes of God (as thoughe they which be in health were not in his protection): the husbande which intirely loued his wyfe, was wyth their woordes made fo heavye and penfife, as for his confort he wrote to the Lord of Anannes, befeechinge him to take the paynes to vifite them, hoping that his fight would greatly eafe and relieue the difeafe of his wife. Which request the Lord of Auannes immediatly vppon the recepte of those letters flacked not, but by poste arrived at his father's house: at the entrye whereof hee founde the seruauntes and women makinge great forrowe and lamentacion accordinglie as the goodnes of their maistresse deserued: wherewith the fayde Lorde was so aftonned as he stoode stil at the doore like one in a traunce, vntil he fawe his good father: who imbracing him beganne fo bitterlie to weepe, that he was not able to fpeake a worde. And so conneied the fayd Lorde of Anannes up into the Chamber of his poore ficke wyfe: who cafting vp her languishing eyes looked vppon him: and reaching his hand vnto her, she ftrayned the same with all her feeble force, and imbracinge and kiffinge the fame made a marueylous plainte, and fayd vnto him. "O my Lord, the houre is come that all diffimulation must cease, and needes I must confesse vnto you the troth, which I to my greate paine haue concealed from you: which is, that if you haue borne vnto me greate affection, beleene that mine rendred vnto you, hath bin no lesse: but my forrow hath farre surpassed your griefe, the smarte whereof I do feele now against myne hart and will: wherefore, my lord, yee shall vnderstand, that God and mine honour would not fuffer mee to disclose the same vnto you, fearing to increase in you that which I defired to be diminished: but knowe yee, my Lorde, that the woordes which fo many tymes vou haue vttered vnto mee, haue bred in me fuch griefe, as the fame be the Inftrumentes and woorkers of my death, wherewyth I am contente fith God did give mee the grace not to fuffer the violence of my Loue, to blotte the puritye of my confcience and renowne: for lesse fire then is wythin the kindled harte of mine, hath ruinated and confumed most famous and stately buildinges. Nowe my hart is well at eafe, fithe before I dye, I haue had power to declare myne affection, which is equall vnto yours, fauing that the honor of men and women be not a like: befeechinge you, my Lorde, from henceforth not to feare to addresse your felfe to the greatest and moste vertuous Ladies that you can finde: for in fuch noble hartes do dwell the strongest passions, and there the fame be moste wifely gouerned: and God graunt that the grace, beautie and honestie, which be in you, do not fuffer your loue to trauell wythout fruite: haue in remembrance good, my Lord, the stabilitie of my constante minde, and do not attribute that to crueltie which ought to be imputed to honor, confcience and vertue: which are thinges a thousande times more acceptable, then the expence and loffe of transitorie life. Nowe, farewell, my Lorde, recommendinge vnto your honour the state of my husband your good father, to whom I pray you to reherse the troth of that which you doe know by mee, to the intent that he may be certefied how dearely I have loued God and him: for whose fake I befeech you to absente your selfe out of my fight: for from henceforth I do meane holye to give my felfe to the contemplacion of those promises which God hath louingly decreed, before the conftitucion of the world." In faying fo shee kiffed him, and imbraced him wyth all the force of her feeble armes. The fayde Lorde, whose hart was dead for compassion, as her's was in dying through griefe and forrow, without power to speake one onely worde, withdrew himselfe out of her fight and laye downe vpon a bed within an inner chamber: where he fainted many times. Then the gentlewoman called for her husbande, and after she had given him many goodly lessons, shee recommended him to the Lord of Auannes, affuringe him that nexte to his parson, of all the men in the worlde shee had him in greateste estimacion: and soe kissinge her husbande shee badde him farewell. And then was brought vnto her the holye Sacramente, which shee receyued with such ioye, as one certaine and fure of her Saluacion, and perceyuinge her fighte begynne to fayle, and her strength diminishe she pronounced aloude: In manus tuas, &c. At which crie the Lorde of Auannes rose vp from the bedde, and piteously beholding her, he viewed her with a fwete fighe, to rendre her gloriouse ghost to him which had redemed it. And when he perceived that shee was dead, hee ran to the dead bodie, which liuing he durft not approche for feare, and imbraced and kiffed the fame in fuch wife, as muche a doe there was to remoue her corps out of his armes: wherof the husband was very much abashed, for that he neuer thought that he had borne his wife fuch affection. And in faying vnto him: "My Lord, you have done enough:" they withdrew them felues together. And after long lamentation, the one for his wife, and the other for his Lady: the Lord of Auannes told him the whole discourse of his Loue, and howe vntill her death she neuer graunted him not fo muche as one figne or token of loue, but in place therof a rebellious minde to his importunate futes: at the reherfall whereof, the husbande conceiued greater pleasure and contentment than euer he did before: which augmented or rather doubled his forrow and griefe for loffe of fuch a wife. And all his life time after, in al feruices and duties he obeyed the Lord of Auannes, that then was not aboue eightene yeres of age, who retourned to the Courte, and continued there many yeares without will to fee or fpeake to any woman, for the forrow which he had taken for his Lady, and more then two yeres he wore blacke for mourning apparell. Beholde here the difference betweene a wife and discrete woman, and one that was wanton and foolish, both which fortes expressed different effectes of loue: whereof the one received a glorious and commendable death, and the other liued to long to her great shame and infamie. The one by small sute sone won and obteyned, the other by earnest requestes and great payne pursued and followed. And till death had taken order, to ridde her from that purfute,

fhe euer continued constant.

THE FIFTY-SEUENTH NOUELL.

A punishment more rigorous than death, of a husband towarde his wife that had committed adulterie.

KING Charles of Fraunce, the eight of that name, fent into Germany a gentleman called Bernage, lorde of Cyure besides Amboise: who to make speede, spared neither daye nor nighte for execution of his Prince's commaundement. In futch wyfe as very late in an eucuing he arrived at the Castle of a Gentleman, to demaunde lodging, which very hardly he obtained. Howbeit, when the gentleman vnderstode that he was the servaunt of such a kyng, he prayed him not to take it in ill parte the rudinesse of his servantes because vppon occasion of certain his wive's frends which loved him not, he was forced to kepe his house so straight. Then Bernage tolde him the cause of his journey, wherein the Gentleman offered to doe to the king his maister all feruice possible. Leading him into his house where he was feasted and lodged very honorably. When fupper was ready, the Gentleman conueyed him into a parler wel hanged with fayre Tapistrie. And the meate being set vpon the table, and he required to fit down, he perceived a woman comming forth behind the hanging, which was fo beautifull as might be feene, fauing that her head was all shauen, and apparelled in Almaine blacke. After bothe the Gentlemen had washed, water was brought to the Gentlewoman, who when she had washed she fat down also, without speaking to any, or any word spoken vnto her againe. The Lorde Bernage beholding her well, thought her to be one of the fayrest Ladies that euer he sawe, if her face had not bene so pale and her countenaunce so sadde. After she had eaten a litle, she called for drinke, which one of the feruauntes brought vnto her in a straunge cup: for it was the head of a dead man trimmed with filuer, wherof she drancke twice or thrice. When she had supped and washed her handes, making a reuerence to the Lord of the house, shee retourned backe againe that way shee came, without speaking to any. Bernage was so much amased at that straunge sighte, as he waxed very heavie and

fadde. The gentleman who marked hym, fayde vnto hym: "I fee well that you be aftonned at that you faw at the table, but feyng your honest demeanour, I wyll not keepe it secrete from you, because you shal not note that crueltie to be done without greate occasion. This gentlewoman whiche you see, is my wyfe, whom I loued better than was possible for any man to loue his wyfe. In fuch forte as to marry her I forgat all feare of friendes, and brought her hither in despite of her parentes. She likewyse shewed vnto me fuche fignes of loue, as I attempted a thousande wayes to place her here for her iove and myne, where wee lyued a long tyme in fuche reste and contentation, as I thought my self the happiest Gentleman in Christendome. But in a journey whiche I made, the attempt whereof myne honour forced me, shee forgot bothe her felfe, her conscience, and the loue whiche shee bare towardes mee, and fell in loue with a Gentleman that I brought vp in this house, whiche her loue voon my retourne I perceived to be true. Notwithstanding the love that I bare her, was so great as I had no mistrust in her, tyll sutch tyme as experience did open myne eyes, and fawe the thynge that I feared more than death. For whiche cause my loue was tourned into furie and dispayre, fo greate, as I watched her fo nere, that vppon a daye fayning my felfe to goe abroade, I hydde my felfe in the chamber where now shee remayneth. Into the whiche sone after my departure shee repayred, and caused the Gentleman to come thether. Whome I did beholde to doe that thinge, which was altogether vnmeete for any man to doe to her, but my felfe. But when I fawe him mounte vppon the bed after her, I stepped forth and tooke him betwene her armes, and with my dagger immediatly did kill him. And because the offence of my wife semed so great as the doing of her to death was not fufficient to punish her, I deuised a torment which in mine opinion is worse vnto her than death. For thus I vse her, I doe locke her vp in the chamber wherein she accustomed to vse her delightes, and in the companie of hym that she loued farre better than me. In the closet of which chamber I have placed the Anatomie of her friend, referuing the fame as a precious Iewell. And to the ende fhee may not forget him at meales, at the table before my face, she vseth his skulle in

steade of a cup to drinke in, to the intent she may behold him (aliue) in the presence of hym whom through her owne fault she hath made her mortal enemy, and him dead and flain for her fake, whose loue she preferred before mine. And so beholdeth those twoo thinges at dinner and supper which ought to displease her moste, her enemie liuing, and her friend dead, and al through her own wickednesse, howbeit I doe vse her no worse than my self, although shee goeth thus shauen: for the ornament of the heare doth not appertaine to an adultreffe, nor the vayle or other furniture of the head to an unchast woman. Wherefore she goeth fo shanen, in token she hath lost her honestie. If it please you, fir, to take the payne to fee her, I wil bring you to her." Whereunto Bernage willingly affented. And descending into her chamber whiche was very richely furnished, they founde her fitting alone at the fier. And the Gentleman drawing a Curteine, whiche was before the Closet, he sawe the Anatomie of the dead man hanging. Bernage had a great defire to speake vnto the Ladye, but for feare of her husband he durst not. The Gentleman perceiuin the same, faid vnto him: "If it please you to speake vnto her, you shal vnderstand her order of talke." Therwithall Bernage sayde vnto her: "Madame, if your pacience be correspondent to this torment, I deme you to be the happiest woman of the worlde." The lady with teares trickeling down her eyes with a grace fo good and humble as was possible, spake thus vnto him: "Sir, I doe confesse my fault to be fo great, as all the afflictions and torment that the Lorde of this place (for I am not worthy to call him husbande) can doe vnto me, be nothing comparable to the forrowe I have conceiued of myne offence." And in fayinge fo, she began pitifully to Therewithall the Gentleman toke Bernage by the hande, and led him forth. The next day morning he departed about the bufinesse which the king had fent him. Notwithstanding, in bidding the Gentleman fare well, he fayde vnto hym: "Sir, the loue whiche I beare vnto you, and the honor and fecretes wherewith you haue made me priuie, doth force me to faye vnto you howe I doe thinke good (feing the great repentance of the poore Gentlewoman your wife) that you doe shewe her mercie. And bicause you be yong and haue no children, it were a verie great loffe and detriment

to lose such a house and ligneage as yours is. And it may so come to passe, that your enemies thereby in time to come may be your heires, and inioye the goodes and patrimonie whiche you doe leaue behinde you." The Gentleman which neuer thought to speake vnto his wife, with those wordes paused a great while, and in thend consessed his saying to be true, promising him that if she would continue in that humilitie, he would in time shew pittie vppon her, with whiche promise Bernage departed. And when he was retourned towardes the king his maisser, hee recompted vnto him the successe of his iourneyes. And amonges other thinges he tolde him of the beautie of this Ladie, who sent his Painter called Iohn of Paris, to bring him her counterfaicte: which with the consent of her husband, he did. Who after that long penaunce, for

a defire he had to have children, and for the pitie hee bare to his wyfe which with great humblenesse received that affliction, tooke her vnto hym agayne, and afterwardes begat of her many children.

THE FIFTY-EIGHTH NOUELL.

A Prefident of Grenoble advertised of the ill government of his wife, took such order, that his honestie was not diminished, and yet revenged the facte.

In Grenoble (the chiefe citie of a Countrie in Fraunce called Daulphine, which citie otherwise is named Gratianapolis) there was a Prefident that had a very fayre wyfe, who perceiuing her husbande beginne to waxe olde, fell in loue with a yong man that was her husband's Clark, a very propre and handsome felowe. Vpon a time when her husband in a morning was gone to the Palace, the clarke entred his chamber and tooke his Maister's place, whiche thing one of the prefidente's men, that faithfully had ferued him the space of xxx, yeres like a trustie feruant perceiuing, could not keepe it fecret, but tolde his Maister. The Prefident whiche was a wife man, would not beleue it vpon his light report, but fayde that he did it of purpose to set discord betwene him and his wife, notwithstanding if the thing were true as he had reported, he might let him fee the thing it felfe, whiche if he did not, he had good cause to thinke that he had deuised a lye to breake and diffolue the loue betwene them. The feruaunt did affure him that he would cause him to see the thing wherof he had tolde him. And one morning fo fone as the Prefident was gone to the Court, and the Clarked entred into his chamber, the feruaunt fent one of his companions to tel his maister that he might come in good time, to fee the thing that he had declared vnto him, he himself standing stil at the doore to watch that the partie might not goe out. The President so sone as he sawe the figne that one of his men made vnto him, fayning that he was not wel at eafe, left the audience, and spedely went home to his house, where he founde his olde feruaunt watching at the chamber dore, affuring him for truth that the Clarke was within, and that he should with spede to goe in. The President sayd to his seruant: "Do not tarrie at the dore, for thou knowest ther is no other going out or comming in but onely this, except a litle closet

wherof I alone do beare the keye." The prefident entred the chamber, and found his wife and the Clarke a bed together, who in his shirt fell downe at the president's feete, crauing pardon, and his wife much afraid began to weepe. To whome the Prefident fayde: "For fo muche as the thing which thou hast done is fuch, as thou maist well consider, that I can not abyde my house (for thee) in this fort to be dishonored, and the daughters which I have had by thee to be disauaunced and abased: therfore leave of thy weeping, and marke what I shall doe. And thou Nicolas (for that was his Clarke's name) hide thy felfe here in my closet, and in any wife make no noyse." When he had fo done, he opened the dore and called in his olde feruaunt, and fayde vnto him: "Diddest not thou warrant and assure me that thou wouldest let me see my Clarke and wyfe in bedde together? And vppon thy words I am come hether, thinking to haue killed my wife, and doe finde nothing to be true of that which thou diddest tell me. For I have searched the chamber in euery place as I will shewe thee." And with that he caused his feruant to looke vnder the beddes, and in euery corner. And when the feruant founde him not, throughly aftonned, he fayde to his maister: "Sir, I sawe him goe into the chamber, and out he is not gone at the dore: and fo farre as I can fee he is not here: therefore I thinke the Diuel must nedes carrie him awaye." Then his maister rebuked him in these words: "Thou art a villayn, to fet fuch division betwene my wife and me, wherefore I doe discharge thee from my service, and for that which thou hast done me, I will paye the thy dutie, with the aduauntage: therefore get thee hence, and take hede that thou doest not tarrie in this town aboue xxiiii. houres," The Prefident for that he knew him to be an honest and faithfull servaunt, gave him five or fixe yeares wages, and purposed otherwise to preferre him. When the feruaunt (with ill will and weping teares) was departed, the Prefident caused his Clark to come out of his Closet: and after he had declared to his wife and him, what hee thought of their ill behaviour, he forbad them to shewe no likelyhode of any fuch matter, and commainded his wyfe to attire and dreffe her felfe in more gorgeous apparell, than she was wont to weare, and to haunt and refort to company and feastes, willing the Clarke to make a better countenaunce on the matter then hee did before, but whenfoeuer he rounded him in the eare and bad him depart, he charged him after that commaundement not to tarry foure houres in the towne. And when he had thus done, he retourned to the palace Courte, as though there hadde no futche thing chaunced. And the space of fiftene dayes (contrary to his custome) he feasted his frendes and neighbours, and after every those bankettes, he caused the minstrels to play, to make the Gentlewomen daunce. One daye he feing his wife not to daunce, he commaunded his Clarke to take her by the hande, and to leade her forth to daunce, who thinking the Prefident had forgotten the trespasse past, very joyfully daunced with her. But when the daunce was ended, the Prefident faining as though he would have commaunded him to doe fome thing in his house, bad him in his eare to get him away and neuer to retourne. Now was the Clark very forowfull to leaue his Ladye, but yet no leffe joyfull he was that his life was faued. Afterwardes when the Prefident had made all his frendes and kinffolkes, and all the countrey, beleue what great loue he bare to his wife, vppon a faire day in the moneth of May, he went to gather a fallade in his garden, the herbes whereof after she had eaten, she lived not aboue xxiiii. houres after, whereof he counterfaited fuche forrowe, as no man could fuspect the oc-

cafion of her death. And by that meanes he was reuenged of his enemy, and faued the honour of his house.

"I will not by this Nouell (faid Emarfuitte) prayfe the confcience of the Prefident, but herein I have declared the light behaviour of a woman, and the great pacience and prudence of a man: Praying you good Ladies all, not to be offended at the truthe." "If all women (quo Parlamente) that love their Clarkes or fervauntes, were forced to eate fuch fallades, I beleve they would not love their gardens fo well as they doe, but woulde teare and plucke vp all the herbes bothe roote and rinde, to avoyde those thinges that by death might advaunce the honor of their flock and ligneage." "If fallades be so costly (quod Hircan) and so daungerous in May, I will provoke appetite with other sawces, or els hunger shall be my chiefest."

THE FIFTY-NINTH NOUELL.

A gentleman of Perche suspecting iniurie done unto him by his friend, prouoked him to execute and put in prouse the cause of his suspicion.

Besides the countrie of Perche, there were two Gentlemen, which from the tyme of theyr youthe lyned in futche great and perfect amitie, as there was betwene them but one harte, one bed, one house, one table, and one purse. Long time continued this perfect frendship: betwene whom there was but one will and one woorde, no difference in either of them: in fo muche as they not onely femed to be two brethren, but also they appeared in al femblances to be but one man. One of them chaunced to mary: notwithstanding they gaue not ouer their frendship, but perseuered in their vsual amitie as they were wont to doe: and whan they happened to be ftrained to ftraight lodging, the maried gentleman would not flick to fuffer his friend to lie with him and his wife. But yet you ought for frendship fake to consider that the maried man lay in the mids. Their goodes were common betwene them, and the mariage did yelde no cause to hinder their affured amitie. But in processe of time, the felicitie of this worlde (whiche carieth with it a certaine mutabitie) could not continue in the house, which was before right pleasaunt and happy: for the maried man forgetting the faithfull fidelitie of his friend, without any cause conceined a greate suspicion betwene hym and his wyfe, from whom he could not diffemble the case, but sharpely tolde her his mynde. She therewithall was wonderfully amazed: howbeit, he commaunded her to doe all thinges (one thing excepted) and to make fo muche of his companion as of himfelfe. Neuertheleffe he forbade her to speake vnto hym except it were in the presence of many. All which she gave her husbande's companion to vnderstande, who would not beleue her, knowyng that hee had neither by thought or deede done anye thing whereof his companion had cause to be offended. And likewise because he used to kepe nothing secrete from hym, he tolde him what he

had fayde, praying hym to tell him the truthe of the matter, because he purposed neither in that, ne yet in any other thing, to geue occasion of breach of that amitie which of long time they had imbraced. The maried Gentleman affured him that he neuer thought it, and how they which had fowen that rumor, had wickedly belied him. Whereunto his companion replied: "I knowe wel enough that Ielousie is a passion so intollerable as loue it felfe. And when you shall conceive that opinion of Ialousie, yea and it were of my felfe, I should do you no wrong, for your felfe were not able to kepe it. But of one thing which is in your power, I have good matter whereof to complayne, and that is because you will concele from me your maladie, fith there was no passion or opinion which you conceiued, that before this time you kept fecret from me. Likewise for my owne parte if I were amorous of your wife, you ought not to impute it as a fault vnto me, because it is a fier which I bare not in my handes, to vfe at my pleafure. But if I kepe it to my felfe from you, and indeuour to make youre wife knowe it by demonstration of my loue, I might then be accompted that vntrustiest friend that euer liued: and for me I doe affure you that shee is a right honest and a good woman, and one that my fanfie doth left fauour (although she were not your wife) of all them that eyer I fawe. But now fithens there is no cause, I do require you that if you perceive any suspicion, be it neuer so litle, to tell me of it, because I would so vse myself, as our frendship which hath indured so long tyme, might not bee broken for a woman: and if I did loue her aboue any thing in the worlde, yet furely I would neuer speake worde vnto her, bicause I doe esteme our frendship better then the greatest treasure." His companion fwore vnto him very great othes that he neuer thought it, praying him to vse his house as he had done before. Whereunto he aunswered: "Sithe you will have me so to doe, I am content: but I praye you if hereafter you doe conceiue any finistre opinion in me, not to dissemble the same, which if you doe I will neuer continue longer in your companie." In processe of time, living together according to their custome, the maried Gentleman entred againe into greater Ielousie than euer he did, commaunding his wife to beare no more that countenaunce towards him that she was wont to doe. Whiche commaundement she tolde her husbande's companion, praying him after that time to forbeare to speake vnto her, for that she was forbidden to doe the like to him. The gentleman vnderstanding by wordes and certaine countenaunces, that his companion had not kept promise, he sayd vnto him in great choler: "To be Ialous (my companion) is a thing naturall: but bicaufe thou diddeft sweare vnto me by othes not to dissemble, I can by no meanes forbeare any longer: for I did euer thinke that betwene thyne harte and mine, there could be no let and interruption: but to my great griefe and without anye fault on my part, I doe fee the contrarie. For as muche as thou art not only very Ialous betwene thy wife and mee, but also thou wouldest dissimulate and couer the fame, fo that in the ende thy maladie and difeafe continuing fo long, is altered into mere malice, and lyke as oure loue hath bene the greateste that hathe bene seene in oure tyme, euen so our displeasure and hatred is nowe most mortall. I have done so mutche as lyeth in mee, to anoyde this inconvenience, but fithe thou hast suspected me to be an ill man, and I have still shewed my felfe to be the contrary, I doe fweare, and therwithal affure thee, by my faith, that I am the fame thou thinkest me to be, and therefore from henceforth take hede of me: for fince suspicion hath separated the from my lone and amitie, despite shall denide me from thine." And albeit that his companion would have made him belene the contrarie, and that hee mistrusted hym nothing at all, yet he withdrewe his part of his moneables and goodes that before were common betweene them, fo that then both their hartes and goodes were fo farre feparated as before they were vnited and ioyned together. In fuch wyfe as the vnmaried

> Gentleman neuer ceassed till he had made his companion cockolde, according to his promise.

THE SIXTIETH NOUELL.

The piteous death of an Amorouse Gentleman, for the slacke comfort genen him to late, by his beloued.

Betwene Daulphine and Prouence, there was a gentleman, more riche and better furnished with beautie, vertue, and good condicions, then with the goodes of fortune: who fill in lone with a gentlewoman that for this time shall want a name, for respecte of her parentes that are come of honorable houses, and the Gentleman's name also shalbe vntolde, for like respecte, although altogether not fo honorably allied, as the Gentlewoman that he loued, and yet the historie very certen and true. And bicause his degree was not fo high as hers, hee durft not discouer his affection: for the love which he bare her, was fo good and perfect, as rather would he have bene tormented with the panges of death, then couet the least advauntage that might redounde to her dishonor. And feing his flate to base in respecte of hers, had no hope to marry her. Wherefore he grounded his loue vpon none other foundation and intent, but to loue her with all his power fo perfectlye as was possible, which in the ende came vnto her knowledge. And the Gentlewoman knowing and feing the honest amitie which he bare her, to be ful of vertue, joyned with chaft and comly talke, felt her felfe right happie to be beloued and had in prife, of a personage so well condicioned, practifing dayly cherefull countinaunce towardes him (whiche was the best rewarde he pretended to haue) whereof he conceived great eafe and But malice the cancred enemy of all reste and contentment. quiet, could not long abide this honest and happie life. fome frowning at his good happe, (as malice euer accompanieth a well disposed mynde) tolde the mother of the mayden, howe they marueiled that the Gentleman should bee so familiar in her house, inferring therewithall that the beautie of her daughter was the only cause, with whom they sawe him many times to vse fecrete and privat speach. The mother which by no meanes doubted the honestie of the Gentleman, no more then shee did

of her own children, was very forie to vnderstand that some shold be offended at that their familiarity. She thought therfore to shunne the cause of their offence. And at length, (fearing that flaunder might be raifed of malice) she required the Gentleman for a tyme to haunt no more her house, as he was wont to doe. A thing to him of harde digestion, knowing his own innocencie, and lesse desert to be estranged from the house, for respect of the honest talke he vsed to the yonge gentlewoman. Notwithstanding, to stoppe the rage of malicious tongues, he withdrew himself, till he thought the brute was ceased, and then retourned after his wonted maner: whose absence nothing abridged his auncient good will. And he began no foner to be familiar there again, but he vnderstode that the mayden should be maried to a Gentleman, that was not fo ritche and noble (as femed to hym) and therfore he thought he should receive great wrong, if she were bestowed vpon that Gentleman, and not on hym, that had bene fo long a futor. And thereupon conceiued corage to preferre hym felfe in playne tunes, if choyfe were geuen to the maiden. Howebeit, the mother and other of her kynne, follicited and chofe the other gentleman because (in dede) he was more welthie. Whereat the poore gentleman fretted with displeasure, seing that his Ladie should for worldly mucke be defrauded of her greatest ioye, by little and little without other maladie, began to languishe, and in litle tyme was fo altered, as in his face appeared the vifage of death. Neuerthelesse he could not forbeare the house of his beloued, but continually from time to time made his repaire thether to fede himselfe with the baulme of that beautie, which he thought would prolong his dayes, but it was the onely abridgement. In thend the poyfon he fucked by the viewe of that beautie, confumed his strength, and force failing him, was constrained to kepe his bedde. Whereof he would not aduertise her whome he loued, for greuing her, knowing well that she would bee tormented with the newes. And fo fuffring him felfe to runne the race of past recourve, lost also his appetite to eate or drinck, and therewithall his slepe and rest fayled, in suche plight as within short space he was consumed in visage and face, as it grewe to be vglie and cleane out of knowledge. Brought to

this lowe estate, one of his frends certified the mother of his mistres, that was a very charitable and kinde Gentlewoman, and loued fo well the man, as if all their parentes and kinne had bene of her's and the mayden's opinion they would have preferred the honestie of him, before the great substance of the other. But the frendes of the father's fide by no meanes would confent vnto it. Yet the good Gentlewoman and her daughter (for all the other's frowardnes) vouchfafed to vifit the poor gentleman whom they founde, rather declining towards death, then in hope of life. And knowing his ende to approche, he was shriven and received the holy Sacrament, purposing of present passage by panges of death, neuer to fee any of his frendes againe. Being in this case and yet seing her, whome he counted to be his life and fauftie, felte fuche foudden recouerie, as hee threwe hym felfe alofte his bedde and spake these wordes vnto her: "What cause hath drieuen you hither (mistres myne) by takyng paines to vifite him, who hath one of his feet alreadie within the graue, the other stepping after with convenient speede, for execution whereof you bee the onely Instrument." "Howe fo, fir?" fayde the mother. "Is it possible that hee, whom we so derely loue, can receive death by our offences? I pray you fir to tell me, what reason leadeth you to speake these wordes," "Madame," fayde he, "fo long as I could, I diffembled the love that I bare to my deare mistres your daughter: so it is that my parentes and frendes speaking of a mariage betwene her and me, haue clattred thereof moe nedeles woordes then I defired, by waying the mishap that might insue, and nowe doth happe past all hope not for my particular pleasure, but bicause I knowe with none other she shalbe so well intreated nor beloued as she should have bene with me. The benefit which I fee she hath lost, is the most perfect frende the best affected servaunt that ever shee had in this worlde, the losse wherof summoneth death to arrest the carcase, that should have bene imployed for her feruice, which intierly was conferued and should have bene for her sake: but fithe nowe it can ferue her to no purpose, the simple losse shall redounde to greatest gaine. I meane my selfe (good Ladies bothe) that lieth bewrapped in death before your faces, whose withered

clammes hath catched the same within her reach, and hath warned the clocke to tolle the dolefull bell for his poor lovyng ghofte, nowe firetchynge out for the winding shete to shrowde his maigre corps, all forworne with the watche and toile, that fuch poore men (affected with like care) do feele. It is my felfe, that erst was rouing amid the troupe of Courtlie knightes decked with comely face, whose hewe dame Nature stayned with the colours of her golden art. It is I that of late was loued of that Nymphe, and earthie Goddesse, who with courtinge countenaunce imbraced the place where I did stande, and kissed the steps wherein I trode. It is my felfe I faye, that whilom in painefull bliffe, did bath my felfe, and fedde mine eyes with the happie viewe of the heavenliest creature that euer God did make. And by forgoing of those ioyes by to to much mishap, and facred famine of cursed mucke, I am thus pined as ve fee, and wrapte in hopeles state." The mother and doughter hearinge this complainte, did their indeuour to cheere him vp, and the mother fayde unto him: "Be of good courage fir, and I promise you my fayth, that if God give you health, my doughter shal have none other husband but you, and behold her here, whom I commaunde to make you present promife." The mayden weeping with a virginall shamefastnes, confented to her mother's heft. But knowing when he was recourred, that he should not have her, and that the mother was so liberal of her fayre words, to recomfort him and affaye if she might restore him: he faid vnto them, that if those words had bin pronounced three monethes past, he had bin the lustiest and most happie gentleman of Fraunce: but helpe offred fo late, was past beliefe and hope. But when he faw, that they went about to force him to beleeue it, he faid vnto them: "Now that I fee ye go about to promise the good tourne which can neuer chaunce vnto mee. yea although confent ioyned with vnfayned promife defires the effect, for respect of the feeble state wherein I am: yet let me craue one thing at your hands, farre lesse then that ye offer, which hitherto I neuer durst be so bolde to aske." Whereunto they both affented and fwore to performe it, intreating him not to be ashamed to require it. "I humbly beseech ye (quoth hee) to deliuer her into mine armes whom ye haue promifed to be my

wife, and commaunde her to imbrace and kiffe me." The mayden not vsed to such privie sutes, ne yet acquainted with such secrete facts, made fome difficultie, but her mother gaue her expresse commaundement to doe it, perceyuing in him no likelihode or force of a man to liue. The maiden then vpon that commaundement, aduaunced herfelfe uppon the bedde of the poore pacient, faying vnto him: "Sir, I befeech you to be of good cheere." The languishing creature, so hard as he could for his extreeme debilitie, stretched forth his faint confumed armes, and with al the force of his body imbraced the cause of his death, and kiffinge her with his colde and wanne mouth, held her fo long as he could, and then spake vnto the mayden: "The loue which I have borne you hath bin fo great, and the good will fo honest, as neuer (mariage excepted) I wished anye other thinge of you, but that which I presently haue, throughe the wante whereof and with the fame I will ioyfully render my spirite to God, who is the parfaicte Loue, and truest Charitie, whoe knoweth the greatnes of my loue and the honestie of my defire: humblie befeeching him, (that nowe I having my defire betweene mine armes,) to interteigne my ghost within his blessed bosome." And in faying so he caught her againe betweene his armes with fuch vehemencie, as the feeble hart not able to abide that affault, was abandoned of all powers and mouinges: for the inftant iove fo dilated and firetched forth the fame, as the fiege of the foule gaue ouer, making his repaire and flighte to his Creator: and because the senceles bodye rested withoute life, it gaue ouer his holde. Howbeit the love, which the Damofell had still kept secrete, at that time shewed it self so strong and mightie, as the mother and servauntes of the dead Gentleman had much a do to separate that vnion, but by force they haled away the liuing, almost deade with the deade. After the funerall was done with honourable exequies: but the greatest triumph was spent in teares, weepinges and cryes, specially by the gentlewoman, which fo much more were manifeste after his death, as before in his life time they were diffembled, bestowinge them as an expiacion or facrifice, to fatisfie the wrong the had done vnto him. And afterwards (as I have heard tell) the was maried to one, for mitigacion of her forow, that neuer was partaker of the iove of her harte. See here good Ladies an Image of perfect loue, that so muche had seazed vpon thassections of this amorous Gentleman, as the pange neuer gaue ouer, till death (the rest of all troubles) had divided life from the body. Yet some perchaunce for the desperate part of this hopeles louer, will terme him to be a fonde louing foole: and fay that it is not meete that they should neglecte theyr lines for womens sakes, which were not created but for their helpe and comforte. And that being true as verifyed and auouched by Scriptures, there is no cause of feare to demaunde that of them, which God hath enjoyned them to give vs. In deede a fensuall love, and fuch as is grounded to fatisfiye beaftly luste, is a thinge horrible to Nature, and abhominable in the fight of him that made both those creatures, whom he fraughted with reason and knowledge for the refusall of those vices, which are onely to be applied to beaftes voyde of reason. But love founded in the foyle of Vertue, for anoyding carnall luft exercized in the state of Wedlocke, or first begonne and practized for that ende, is very ciuil and to be honoured. And if that loue attaine not equall fuccesse, through parents default or vnkindnes of frendes or other humane accidents, if that love so perce the hart, or otherwyse afflict the pacient with dispaire of helpe, and so occasioneth death, it is not to be termed follie or dotage, but to be celebrated with honourable titles. The honest amitie then of this gentleman, borne long time to this gentlewoman, meriteth euerlasting praise: for to finde such great chastitie in an amorous hart, is rather a thing deuine then humaine. A mocion moued aboue amongs the heauenly route, and not an ac

aboue amongs the heavenly route, and not an ac
wrought in the grofenes of man's
infirmitie.

THE SIXTY-FIRST NOUELL.

A Gentlewoman of the Courte, very pleafauntly recompensed the feruice of a kinde feruaunte of her's, that purfued her with feruice of love.

In the Courte of king Fraunces, the first of that name, not longe fithens Frenche king, the graunde father of Henry the 3 of that name now raigning: there was a Gentlewoman of good grace and interteignment, wanting not both minde and witte, fuch as the like of her fexe, are not to feeke, vnder what climate foeuer they be borne and bred, whose comly demeaner, curteous behauiour and eloquent speache, was agreeable to her other qualities of nature's giftes: whereby she gayned the hartes and good minds of nombers of feruauntes, with whom shee was cunning youngh to fpend her time, (having respect to the fauftie and faufgard of her honor, which she preferred before all other solace) by such delectable confumption of time, as they that could not tell howe els to imploie their leafure, thoughte themselues most blessed, if they might attaine the delightfull presence of this well nourtered Dame. For they that made greatest affuraunce of her fidelitie, were in dispayre, and the most desperat were yet in some hope to winne her. Howbeit in deceyuing the most nomber, she could not forbeare intirely to loue one, who for his part was not able to plaie the counterfait, to colour the substance of his longe purfute: but as nothing is fure and flable, their loue tourned to displeasure, and by frequent renewing of what was well knowen the hole Court was not ignoraunt, what deuocion thone did beare to thother. One day the Gentlewoman, aswell to let him know that his affection was not bestowed in vaine, as to make him to feele fome fmart and paine for his louing feruice, the more louingly to forde him on, with preety morfells of her diffembling concept, made show vnto him of greater fauour, then euer she did before: for which cause he that was faultles either in deedes of armes, or in prowesse of loue, began lively and valiantly to follow her, to whom long before with gentlenes and humilitie he VOL. II.

114

had many times bin a suppliante. Who fayning that she was not able any longer to rest obstinate, made semblance of a womanly pitie and accorded to his demaund. Telling him that for respect of his tedious trauaile, she was now disposed to go to her chamber, (which was in a Gallerie of the Castell where that time the kinge did lie) where shee knew was none that could hinder what they two intended: willing him not to faile but fo fone as he faw her depart the place she was in, to follow after to her chamber, where he should finde her alone, tarying for him with good deuocion. The gentleman beleeuinge her appointmente, was readie to leape out of his skinne for ioye: and therewithall began to dalye and fport with other Ladies, attending the time of her departure. She wanting not the practize of any fine fleight or fubtile pollicie. most pregnaunte in birds of her Ayrie, called two of the greatest Ladies to the prefent chamber window and faid vnto them: "If it may please you good Ladies, I will discouer vnto you the pretiest pastime of the world." They which hard the grief of melancholie, befoughte her to tell what it was. "Thus it is" (quoth shee) "fuch a gentleman, whom you know very well, to be both honest and vertuous, hath longe time (as partlie you have by to much experience feene,) gone about divers wayes to winne that, which he shall neuer get: for when I began to applie my fancie towards him, he (vnconstant) ceased not to couet and follow other Ladies with like purfute hee did me: whereat I conceyued fuch more then spitefull hatred, as notwithstanding my outwarde semblaunce, I coueted reuenge. Nowe therefore maistresse, Occasion hath lente me a porcion of oportunitie, to be requited of his vaine and fickle fute: which is, that havinge appointed him to come to my chamber, whither he meaneth prefently to follow me, it maye please you to give heedefull eye and watch: and that when hee hath paffed alonge the Galerie, and is gone vp the stayers, that both of you wil recline your heads out of this window to helpe me finge the holding of the Caroll, that I meane to chaunte vnto him. And then shall you see the raging choler of this Gentleman, that at other times presumed to be a quiet Suter: wherat perhaps through his malapert boldnes, it cannot dash his blushles face. but yet if he do not deale vnto me like spiteful reproch in open hearing, I know full well in hart he will wishe me x. M. mischifes." This conclusion was not spoken without treble laughter: for there was no gentlemen in all the Courte, that had warred fo much with the woman kind as hee, and yet welbeloued and esteemed of euery one, that lifted not to be intrapped within his daunger. Therfore these Ladies thinking to carie awaye some part of the glorie, which one alone hoped to atchieue vpon this gentleman, were contente to affent to the other's liking. So fone then as they faw her depart, that purposed this enterprise, they began to espie the countenaunce of the betrayed partie, who paused not long before he exchaunged the place: and when he was oute of the chamber, the Ladies trayned after, to lose no part of the sport, and went the faster that he might not be out of theyr fight. And he that doubted not the fuccesse, threwe his cape about his necke to hide his face, and went downe the staiers out into the Court. and afterwards mounted up againe: but perceyuing some approche which he was loth should be a witnes, he went downe againe, returning another way on the other fide. All which the Ladies fawe, vnknowen to him. But when he came to the flayers where he beleeued verely, that he might furely enter into his Maistres chamber, the two Ladies put they heads out of the window, and incontinently perceyued the gentlewoman alofte, crying out a lowde, "A theefe, a theefe:" wherunto they two below aunswered with fo vehement voyce, doubling the other's outcrie, as all the castell ronge of it. I leave for you to confider in what despite this gentleman fled to his lodginge, but not fo closely, but that he was ouertaken by those that knew this misterie: who afterwards oftentimes reproched this fact vnto him, speciall she that had deuised the reuenge: but hee had armed himselfe with saunswers and defences fo readely, as he told them that he foreknew their deuife, and mente nothing by his pilgrimage but to folace his beloued. For of her loue long time before he was out of all hope, as having reasonable proofe by his longe pursute and service. Howbeit the Ladyes would not hold his excuse for a veritie, which

enen to this day hangeth in suspence.

THE SIXTY-SECOND NOUELL.

The honest and maruellous love of a mayden of noble house, and of a gentleman that was base borne, and howe a Queene did impeche and let their mariage, with the wise aunswere of the mayde to the Queene.

THERE was in France a Queene, who in her company and traine broughte vp many maydens, that were iffued of great and honourable progenie: amonges other that ferued this Queene there was one named Rolandine, which was nere kinne to the Queene. But fhe for a certaine displeasure conceyued against her father, bare vnto the yonge gentlewoman no greate good will. This Maiden, although shee was none of the fayrest, yet so wyse and vertuous as many great Lords and personages made sute to her for mariage, to whom she rendred for earnest sutes, cold aunsweares: because shee knew her father to be more bent to keeping of money, then to thaduauncement of his children: and her Maistresse (as is before faid) bare vnto her fo little fauour as they which esteemed the Queene's good grace, woulde neuer make anye fute vnto her. Thus by father's negligence and Maistres disdaine, the poore gentlewoman remayned long time vnmaried. And as shee that forcibly was payned, not fo much for griefe of mariage, as for that shee was not required or fued vnto, became fo werie of worldly life, as denoutly she bent herselfe to God, and by forsakinge the toyes and brauerie of the Courte, passed her time in prayer, or els in other vertuous exercife: and by withdrawing herfelfe to this kinde of life, the spent her youth so soberlie and deuoutly as was possible for a woman to do. When she approched nere the age of xxx. yeares, there was a gentleman a bastarde borne, of right honorable house, a nery curteous and honest personage, whose every riches and beautie was fuch, as no Lady or gentlwoman for pleasure would have chosen him to husband. This poore gentleman was voide of frends for maintenaunce of lyuing, and vnhappie in mariage futes, although he purfued many, till at length he borded this poore Gentlewoman Rolandine: for their Fortunes, com-

plexions and condicions were very like, and by vie of feuerall complaints made one to another, ech of them fell in ernest loue with the other: and being both thrall vnto mishap, they fought defired comforte by vertuous and honest talke: and by that vse and frequentacion greater loue increased and grew betwene them. Those which had seene the maiden so straungly retired from wonted demeanor, as the would speake to none, now marking her continuallie to interteigne the bastard gentleman, incontinently conceiued ill opinion of her, and told the mother of the Queene's maids (called Modesta) that she ought not to suffer such familiaritie betweene them. Which report Modesta reuealed to Rolaudine, fayinge that divers perfons did speake euill of her, for that she vsed to talke with the bastard, that neither was of sufficient abilitie for her to marie, ne yet of beautie worthie to be beloued. Rolandine which daily was more rebuked for her austeritie of life, then for worldly toyes, fayd vnto Modesta her gouernesse: "Alas, mother, you fee that I cannot have a husband according to the worthines of my bloud, and that dailye I have auoyded those which be beautifull and yonge: for feare to incurre the inconvenience wherinto I have seene other to fall: and now having chosen this wife and vertuous gentleman, who preacheth vnto me words that be good and godly, what wrong do they to me that make this report, fith in this honest order I doe receive consolacion of my griefes?" The good old Lady who loued the maiden (which she called maistresse) as herselfe, said vnto her: "I fee well, that you are worfe delt withall at your father and maistres handes then you deserve. Howbeit sith such reporte is made of your honor, you ought to refuse to speake vnto him, although he were your naturall brother." Rolandine weeping faide vnto her: "Mother, for fo much as you aduife me therunto, I will performe your request, although it be very straunge that without slaunder, a woman can have no comfort or feeke freedome without mifreport." The baftard gentleman, as he was before accustomed, came to visite her, but she tolde him (a farre of) those words which her gouerneffe had faid vnto her: and with teares prayed him to refraine for a time to speake vnto her, vntill the brute and rumor were fomewhat appaifed; which thing he did at her request.

during this long time, either of them having loste their consolacion, began to feele fuch torment within themselues, as shee for her part neuer felte the like. She ceased not from praying vnto God, from goinge on pilgrimage, and fasting: for this vnacquainted loue brought her to fuch disquiet as she could not rest the space of one houre. Wherewith the noble bastard was no lesse tormented: but he which had alreadie minded in hart to loue her and purfue her till mariage, and having respecte (for love fake) to the honor he should acquire by the same, thought to finde meanes to declare his minde vnto her, and aboue al things to get the good wil of her gouernesse: which he did, declaring vnto her the miserie wherein her poore maistresse remayned, which was voide of al comfort and other frendship. Then the poore old Lady Modesta, gave him thankes for the honest affection that hee bare to her maistresse: and deuised meanes how the two louers might impart their minds together. Rolandine fayned herfelfe to be ficke of a Mygrim and paine in her heade, the brute of whose maladie was feared to be greater then it was, and fo concluded betwene them that when her companion were gone into the chamber, they two should remaine together alone to satisfie ech other with mutuall talke. The bastard gentleman was very glad, and ruled himselfe holy by the councell of the Gouernesse, in such fort as when he lifte, he spake vnto his louer and vertuous Lady: but this contencaion did not indure: for the Queene who loued her but a little, inquired what Rolandine did so long in her Chamber, and one made aunswere that it was by reason of her sicknes. Albeit there was another which knewe to well the cause of her absence, fayde vnto her, that the ioye which Rolandine had to speake vnto the baftard was able to eafe her Mygrim. The Queene which found out the venial finnes of other, by mortall offences in herfelfe, fent for her, and forbad her in any wyfe not to speake vnto the bastard, except it were in the hall or within her owne Chamber. The Gentlewoman made as though she vnderstode her not, but mildlie aunswered that, if shee knew any talke betweene them might offend her maiestie, she would neuer speake vnto him againe. Notwithstanding she determined to finde out some other secret meanes that the Queene should not know of their meeting: which

was this. The Wednefday, Fridaye, and Saturday, the gentlewoman vsed to fast, and for that purpose kept her Chamber with her Gouernesse Modesta, where she had leysure to talke (whilest the reste did suppe) with him whom she began so earnestlie to loue: and as conftrainte of time did force their talke to be shorte, the greater was their affection in vtteraunce of the same: because for the doing therof they stole time, as the theefe doth his defired praye. This order of their contentacion could not proceede fo fecretely, but that a certaine varlet a yeoman of the Chamber, chaunced to fee him refort vnto her vpon a fasting day, and told it in fuch place wher of fome hearer, it was disclosed to the Queene herfelf, who was fo fore offended as neuer after that time the poore baftard gentleman durste once attempt to go into the maiden's chamber againe. And to thintent that he might not lose the commodity of talke with her, whom he fo derely loued, oftentimes he fayned himselfe to go on pilgrimage, and in the euening returned to the Church and chapell of the Castel, in the habite of a frier, or Iacobin (fo wel disguised and altered, as no creature could know him) and thither repaired the gentlewoman Rolandine, with her Gouernesse to enterteigne him. He marking the great loue that she bare him, feared not to say vnto her; "Madame, you fee the daunger which I hasard for your seruice, and the warnings that the Queene hath given for our talke. You fee on thother fide what a father you haue, who careth not after what fort he bestow you in mariage: and you havinge refused so many greate states and noble men, I know not one, either farre or neare, that is minded to haue you. I confesse my selfe to be but poore, and that you may marie divers gentlemen of greater reputacion and richesse, then I am: but if loue and good wil were deemed treasure and richesse, then woulde I prefume to be the richest gentleman of the world. God hath indowed you with great plentie of goodes, and you are yet in choise to have more: and if I were so happie as you would vouchfafe to chose me for your husband, I would accompt my felfe to be vnto you both husband, frend and servaunt, all the dayes of my life: and againe, if you should take one equall to your nobilitie (a thinge very harde to finde) he would rule and gouerne ouer you, and haue more respecte to your goodes, then to

your person, to your beautie then to your vertue: and in triumphinge with dispence of that you have, hee maye chaunce to intreate you otherwise then you deserue. The desire of this contentacion, and the feare that I have, least you should graunte it to some other, do force me to befeech you, that by one only meanes you would make me happie and your felfe the most contented and best intreated woman that euer was." Rolandine giving eare to that communication which shee herselfe ment to have pronounced, aunswered him with stoute courage: "I am very glad and wel pleased that you have begunne the sute your self, which I of long time have determined to breake vnto you: for which cause these two yeres past as you know, I have not ceased to thincke and deuife all the reasons and arguments for and against you, that I could inuent: but in thend for fo much as I do meane to take vpon me the state of Matrimonie, it is time that I begin to chose fuch husbande, with whom I shall in my conscience like to liue at rest and quiet all the dayes of my life: and amidde all the troupe of my thoughts in choise, I cannot finde anye one, were he neuer fo faire, riche or noble, with whom my hart and minde can fo well agree and match as with you. I know that by marying of you I shall not offende God, but rather do the thinge that hee commaundeth. And touching my Lord my father, he hath had fo litle confideracion of my perferment, and fo often refused it, as the law now will fuffice, that I give my felfe in mariage withoute his confent, and therefore cannot disenherite me, or worthely thincke ill of me: and by having a husband (a thing appertinent to women kinde) fuch as you be, I shall esteeme my selfe the richest woman of the worlde. As for the Queene my maistresse, I oughte not to take any care or remorfe of confcience by displeafing her, to obey God: for she hath not ceased to hinder that aduauncement, which in my youth I mighte haue had, and by paine and diligence towards her did well deferue: but to thend you may vnderstand, that the loue and good will which I beare you, is founded vppon vertue and honor, you shall promise me, that if I doe accorde this mariage, you shall never purchase or require the confummacion thereof, Vntill my father be deade, or els do finde fome meanes to make him confente hereunto." Which

the baftard gentleman willingly did graunt: and vppon these promifes and termes, either of them gaue eche other a ringe in the name of mariage, and did kiffe together in the Church before God, whom they toke to witnes of their affurance, and neuer after betwene them was any other prinie fact committed, but only This litle easement of mind did greatly satisfie the harts of these two perfect louers: and were a great while without seing ech other, living only by this affurance. There was no place where honour mighte be gotten, but thereunto the bastarde made his repaire with fo great delight, as he thought he could neuer be poore for respect of that riche wife which God had prouided for him. Which wyfe in his absence, did euer continue her absolute amitie towards that gentleman: and although many made fute yet they receyued none other aunswere from her but deniall, and for that she had remayned so long time vnmaried, she was minded neuer to take vppon her that state. This her aunswere was so generall as the Queene heard of it, and asked her for what occasion shee was so determined. Rolandine saide vnto her, that it was to obey her: for that shee knew shee would neuer suffer her to marie, because in time and place where she might have bin honorablie matched to her well liking, she denied the same, and that the vertue of pacience had taught her to contente herselfe with the state wherein she was. And still as she was sued for in mariage, she rendred like aunswere. When the warres were ended, and the bastarde returned to the Courte, shee neuer spake vnto him in open presence, but wente alwayes into some Church to interteigne him vnder colour of Confession: for the Queene had forbidden both him and her, that they should not talke together, vnleffe it were before companye vpon paine of loffe of their liues. But honest loue, which feareth no defence, was more prest to find meanes, for their mutuall talke, then their enemies were ready to separate the same: and vnder the habite or colour of all the religions they could deuife, they continued that honest amitie, vntil the king remoued into a house of pleasure, not so nere as the Ladies were able to go on foote to that Church, as they were to the Church of the Castell, which was not situate in such conveniente wyse for their purpose, as they could secretely re-

paire (vnder colour of confession) to talke together: notwithstanding if on the one side occasion fayled, loue found out another for their contentment: for there arrived a Lady to the Court, to whom the bastard was very nere kin. This Lady with her sonne were lodged in the king's house, and the chamber of this yong prince was far beyond the body of the lodging, where the king himselse did lie: but so nere vnto Rolandine's Chamber as he might both see and speake vnto her, for their windowes were properlie and directly placed at either corner of the house: in which chamber (being ouer the hall) were lodged al the Ladies of honor, the companions of Rolandine. Who beholding many times the yong king at that window, caused the bastard to be aduertized therof by her gouernesse: who after he had well beholden the place, made as though he had great delighte to read vpon a booke of the Knightes of the Round Table, that lay in the chamber window of the yong king: and when euery man was gone to dinner, he prayed the yeoman to fuffer him to make an end of the historie. and to flut him within the chamber. The other which knew him to be the kinfman of his maistres, and an affured man, suffred him to read fo long as he lifte. On thother fide Rolandine came vnto her window, who to find occasion to tarrie there the longer, fayned to have a paine in her leg, and dined and supped in so good time, as she went no more to the ordinarie of the Ladies: wher fhe began to fet herfelfe a worke about the making of a bed of Crimfon filke, placing her worke vpon the window, as defirous to be alone. And when she saw no man to be there, shee interteigned her husband, to whom she might speake in secret wise, so as none was able to vnderstande them: and when any person came nere, she coughed and made a figne that the bastard might withdraw himselfe. They that were appointed to watche them, thought vndoubtedlie that their loue was past and ended, because fhe went not out of the Chamber, wher fafely he coulde not fee her, for that thee was forbidden the same. Vppon a day the mother of the yong Prince being in her fonne's Chamber, repayred to the windowe where that great booke did lie, and shee had not staied there long, but one of Rolandine's fellowes which was within her Chamber faluted her. The lady asked her how Rolandine did, who fayd that shee might very wel see her, if it were her pleafure: and caufed her to come to the window wyth her night geare vppon her head. And after they had talked a while of her ficknes they withdrew themselues. The other ladie espying the great booke of the Round Table, fayde to her yeoman of the Chamber: "I do marueille much why yong men do imploie themfelues to read fuch follies." The yeoman made aunsweare, that he marueled much more, why men of good yeres, counted and efteemed wife and difcrete, should have greater delight in reading of fuch trifles, then those that were yong. And to instifie that maruel hee told her how her cofin the baftard did fpend 4 or 5 houres in a day to read vppon the same. Vpon which words by and by the conceyued the cause of his deepe studie, and charged him to hide himselfe in some place to mark what he did. Which commaundement the yeoman performed, and perceived that the booke which the baftard read vpon, was the window out of which Rolandine talked with him: and therewithal called to remembrance many wordes of the loue which they thought to keepe very fecreete. The next day he reherfed the fame vnto his maistresse, who sent for her cosin the bastard, and after many tales told him, she forbad him to refort thither any more, and at night she gaue like warning to Rolandine, threatninge her that if she continued in her fond and foolish loue, she woulde tell the Queene the whole circumstaunce of her lighte demeaner. (nothing aftonied with those woords) did sweare that fith the time she was forbidden by her maistresse the queene's maiesty, she neuer spake vnto him: the troth whereof shee might learne aswel of the gentlewomen her companions, as of other feruauntes of the house: and touching the window whereof she spake, she boldly advouched that she never talked with the Bastard there. Who (poore gentleman) fearing that his affayres would be reuealed, kept himselse farre out from daunger, and longe time after did not retourne to the Courte. Howbeit, he wrote many times to Rolandine by fuch fecret meanes as for all the espiall that the Queene had put, there passed no weeke but twise at least shee hearde newes from him: and when one meanes did fayle hym, hee deuised another, and many tymes fent a litle Page clothed

in colours (fo often altered and chaunged as he was fent) who staying at the gates when the Ladies passed by, delynered his letters priuelye in the middest of the prease. Vpon a time as the Queene for her pleasure walked into the fieldes, one which knew the Page and had charge to take hede vnto those doings, ranne after him: but the Page which was a fine boye, doubtinge leaste hee should be searched, conueyed hym selfe into a poore woman's house, where spedelie he burnt his letters in the fier, ouer whiche a potte was boyling with meate for her poore familie. The gentleman that followed him stripped him naked and searched his clothes, but when he fawe that he could finde nothing, he let him goe: and when he was departed, the olde woman asked him wherefore he fearched the boye: who aunswered: "to finde letters which he thought he had about him." "Tush," (quod she) "ferch no more, for he hath hidden them very well." "I pray thee tell me," (quod the Gentleman) "In what place:" hoping to have recovered the fame. But when hee vnderstode that they were throwen into the fire, he well perceived that the boye was craftier then him felfe. All whiche incontinently hee tolde the Queene, notwithstanding from that time forthe, the bastard vsed no longer the Page, but sent one other of his olde servauntes. whom he faithfully trusted, and he (forgetting feare of death which hee knewe well the Queene threatned on them that had to doe in those affaires) tooke vpon him to carie his maister's letters to Rolandine. And when hee was entred the Castell, hee wayted at a certen doore placed at the foote of a paire of staiers. by whiche the ladies passed to and fro: where he had not taried long, but a yeoman which at other times had fene him, knewe him and thereof told the maister of the Queene's house, who souddainly made fearche to apprehende him. The fellowe which was wife and politique, feing that divers loked vpon him a farre of, retourned towardes the wall (as though he would have made his water) tearing his letters in fo many fmall peces as he could doe for his life, and threw them behinde an old gate: who had no foner done the facte, but hee was apprehended and throughly fearched, and when they could finde nothing about him, they made him weare whether he had brought any letters or not, vfing him

partly by rigor, and somewhat by faire perswasion to make him confesse the truthe: but neither through promise or threate, they could get any thing at his handes. Report hereof was brought to the Queene, and one of the companie gaue aduise that searche should be made behind the gate, where he was taken: in which place they founde nothing but litle peces of letters. Then they caused the kinge's Confessor to be sent for, who recouering the peces layd them vpon a table, and red the lettre throughout, where the veritie of the mariage (fo much diffembled) was throughly discifered, for the bastard in those letters called her nothing els but wife. The Queene not meaning to conceale the fault of her kinfwoman, (which she ought to have done) fil into a great rage and storme, commaunding that the poore man by al meanes possible should be forced to confesse the true tenor of that letter, to thintent that the same by his affirmacion might not be denied: but doe what they could, they were not able to make him alter his former tale. They which had commission to examine him, brought him to the Riuer fide and did put him into a fack, faying that he did lie before God and the Queene, and against an approued trothe. He that had rather lose his life than accuse his maister, prayed them to suffer him to have a ghostly father that like a Christian he might ende his life, and so entre the ioves prepared for all repentant finners, and after that he had clered his conscience, he said vnto them: "Maisters, tell my Lorde and maister the Bastarde, that I recommend vnto him the poore estate of my poore wife and children, trufting his honour will haue confideration of them for my fake, for fo mutch as with good and loyall harte, I doe imploye my life for his honor and furetie: and with me doe what you lift, for you get nothing at my handes that shall redounde to his hurt and prejudice." Then to put him in greater feare, they bounde him within the facke and threwe him into the water, crying unto him, if thou wilt tell the trouth thou shalt be faued: but they seing that he would make no aunfwer drew him out againe, making reporte to the Queene of his faith and constancie. Who then fayd, that neither the king nor she were so happy in servauntes as the Bastarde was, that had not wherewith to recompence fuch fidelitie. The Quene did

what she coulde to get him from his seruice, but the poore fellowe would in no wife forfake his maister. Notwithstanding in thende by his faid maister's leaue, he was put into the Queene's feruice, where he lived many happy dayes. The Queene after she vnderstode by the bastarde's letters the trouth of the mariage, sent for Rolandine, and in great rage, called her caitife and miferable wretche, in stede of cosin, reciting vnto her the disparagement of her noble house, and the villanie she had committed against the honorable race whereof she came, and against the will of her which was her Queene, kinfwoman and maiftres, by contracting mariage without the licence of the king and her. Rolandine whiche of long time knewe the fmall devocion that her maistres bare vnto her, vfed her with like affection: and bicaufe she was werie of the Quene's displeasure, thinking that her correction vttered in presence of many proceded not of loue, but rather to make her ashamed, abandoned feare, and conceiuing courage, when she sawe the Queene in her chiefest rage, with gladsome and firme countenaunce answered her in this wife: "Madame, if you cannot conceine the malice of your owne harte, I will fet before your eyes the rancour and displeasure of the same, which malice of long time you have borne towardes the Lorde my father and me: whereof madame, I doe fele the fmarte, to my great losse and grief: for if it had pleased you to have borne vnto me that good wil which you do to those that are not so nere about you as I am, I had before this tyme been placed and preferred in mariage as well to the likyng of your honour as to my greate fatiffaction: but you have regarded mee as one forgotten, and cleane out of fauour, in fuch wyfe as all the noblemen, with whome I might haue been matched, haue contempned me, as well through the negligence of my Lorde my father, as for the like estimation and accompt that you have made of me: by meanes whereof I fell into that dispaire which if my health could haue fusteined the order and state of religion, I would willingly have taken it vpon me, to have feuered my felfe from the continuall hatred and enuy which your grace ful rigorously hath showen vnto me: and being in this dispaire, I chaunced to finde out him, that is proceded of fo noble a house as my selfe. If the loue of two

persones is to be regarded, that meane to accomplishe the holv ftate of wedlock: for you knowe that his father in nobilitie farre excelled myne. He hath of long time loued me, and made great fute vnto me, but you madame, whiche neuer pardoned me for any fmall offence, ne yet prayfed anye good acte of myne (although you know by experience that I have not vsed to talke of matters of loue or other worldlie affaires, and that I minded aboue all thinges to leade a more religious life then any other) doe make it an hainous matter that I should talke with a Gentleman (so infortunate as my felfe), by whose loue, I thought or fought for nothing els but the ease and comfort of my minde. And seing my felfe voyde and frustrate of mine expectation, I shall imploie indeuour fo well to feeke my rest and quiet, as you have gone about to dispoyle me of the same: and then will celebrate the mariage which is already affured by promifes and by a ring. Wherefore, madame, I thinke that you doe me great wrong by terming me to be a wicked woman, fithe that in fo great and perfect amitie I might have founde occasion (if I would) to have committed euills: but there was neuer betwene him and me any priuie fact, other then that is honest, hoping that God wil shewe me fuch fauour, as before the mariage be confumat, I shall obtaine the fauour and good will of my Lorde my father: wherby I do neither offende God, nor my conscience, for I have taried till the age of xxx. yeares, to fee what you and my father would doe for me. I have kept my felfe fo chaft and honest, as no man living is able to laye the contrarie to my charge. And with that reason wherewith God hath indued me, being olde and voyde of hope, to finde a husbande agreable to my nobilitie, I am determined to marie futche a one as I like beste, not for the pleasure or satisfaction of the eye (for you know he is not faire) nor for luft of the flesh (for there hath bene no carnall fact committed) ne yet for pryde and couetouines (for he is but poore and of litle estimation) but I have a fincere respecte and pure regarde to his vertue, honestie and good grace, for whiche the worlde doth geue him praife, and the great loue also that he beareth me, maketh me hope to finde with him great rest and quiet. And after I had denifed and confidered the good and enill that might infue by this my choife, I still perfisted in that mind, and haue well waved and pondered the fame these twoo yeares past, being throughly resolued to waste and spende the rest of my dayes with him which I meane still firmely to kepe in despite of all the tormentes and cruelties, that the greatest enemies I have, be able to make my poore bodie fuffre, no not death it felfe shall force me to refuse hym. Wherefore Madame, I befeech you to accept this my reafonable excuse, whereunto your felf is nowe made privie, and fuffer me to liue in that peace, whiche I hope for euer through him, in these mine elder to finde." The Queene wel marking her flout wordes and countenaunce, and knowing the fame to be very true, was not able to aunswere her againe with reason: but continuing, her rebukes and taunting checkes began to waste, and at length fell out into this rage: "Ah, presumptuous drabbe, and caitife wretch, in stede of humbling thy selse and repenting thine offence, thou carpeft boldly without dropping or sheading any teare, whereby thou does manifestly declare that stubbornes and hardnes of thy harte: but if the king, and thy father, would follow mine aduife, they should put thee into a place, where force should make thee to vse other language." "Madame," faid Rolandine, "because you have accused me of bolde talke and prefumptous speache, I meane from henceforth to hold my peace, except you geue me leaue to make mine aunswere." And when she was commaunded to tell forth her mynde, she faid: "It is not my part, Madame, boldly or without duetifull reuerence to speake before your maiestie (whiche is my maistresse, and the greatest Princesse in Christendome). wordes which I have faid, be not spoken (Madame) of presumption, but to declare that I have none other advocate to pleade for me, but the trouth of my cause. And therefore am bolde without blushing feare to disclose the same, hoping that if your grace did knowe the fecret concept of my poore faithfull harte, you woulde not iudge mee to be that woman which you terme me to be. I doe not doubt that any mortall creature vnderstanding my behauiour in those matters wherwith I am charged, would blame me, for my liberall speache, fithe I am sure that God and myne honor in no point I have offended. The cause which maketh me thus without feare to fave my minde is, because I am affured that he whiche feeth my harte, is the gener of my life also, and remaineth with me. If then fuch a Iudge and Guide doe order and dispose my life, why should I be afrayd of them that be fubiect vnto his iudgement? And why then Madame, should I wayle or wepe, fithe mine honor and confcience without remorfe or grudge do wel like of these my doings, which if they were newly to begin, I would not repente me to doe the same againe. But it is you (Madame) that hath good cause to wepe, as well for the great displeasure, euer borne me from my youthfull dayes, as for the wrong you doe me nowe by reprehending me before the face of all the worlde for a faulte, whiche ought rather to be imputed vnto you then vnto me. For if I had offended God, the king, or you, my parentes, or my confcience, I were well worthy to be counted very obstinate, if with great repentaunce I did not lament the fame, but for a dede that is right good and vertuous, I ought not to wepe, whereof there was neuer other rumor fpred but verie honorable, except the flaunder which your felfe hath raifed, whereby your defire to increase my shame and dishonor appeareth to be greater then the respecte you have to conserue the nobilitie of your house, or kindred wherof you come. But because it pleaseth you, Madame, so to vse me, I purpose not to withstand you. For when you shall ordeine that punishment for me, which you like best, I shal reioyse no lesse to suffer the same without defert, then you be willing to bestowe it vpon me without caufe. Wherefore Madame, commaunde my Lorde my father to put me to what tormente you will, for the execution wherof you shall not finde him vnwilling. And I shall not be altogether without ioy, to fee him prest and redie to obey your wilfull mynde. But I have a father in heaven, who (I am fure) will geue me fuche pacience, as I shall be able to abide and indure, what affliction focuer you prepare for me, in whom only is al my hope and trust." The Queene, so angrie as she could be, commaunded her out of her fight, and to be flutte into a chamber alone, that none might speake vnto her. In which imprisonment shee was not depriued from the companie of her gouernesse, by whose meanes she let the Bastarde vnderstande all her fortune, and she likewise VOL. II.

vnderstode what he thought best for her to doe. Who thinking that the feruice which he had done to the king, would stand him in some stede, came vnto the Court with all spede, and sounde the king in the fieldes, to whome hee rehearfed the trouth of the facte, befeching his maiestie that vnto him (who was a poore gentleman) he would shewe such fauour and grace as the rigor of the Queene's maiestie might be appealed, and the mariage fully confumat and ended. The king made him none other aunswere, but faide: "Is it true that thou hast maried her?" "Yea sir," faide the Bastarde: "by wordes only as yet: but if it please your maiestie, the same may be throughly made persit." The king nodded his hed, and for that time geuing him none other aunfwere, hee retourned straite to the Castell, and when he was almost there, he called the Captaine of his Guarde, and commaunded him to apprehend the Bastarde. Notwithstanding one of his frendes which knewe the kinge's countenaunce, willed him to abfent himselfe, and to retire to one of his houses, and if the king made ferche after him (as he fuspected) he would incontinently aduertife him therof, that he might auoyde the realme: and when the king's displeasure was pacified, he would sende him worde. The Bastarde beleued him, and vsed such diligence as the Captain of the Guarde could not finde him. The king and the Queene councelled together what they might doe with this poore damfell. whiche was their kinfwoman, and by the Queene's aduife it was concluded, that she should be fent home to her father, with the true aduertisement of the whole matter. But before she was fent, diuerfe Diuines and learned men of the Clergie, were demaunded their opinions of the privat mariage, and the Counfell also did fit vpon the same, who concluded that for so muche as the mariage was not celebrated but by wordes, it might easely be vndone, vntill one of them had acquited the other. Which the king commaunded to be performed for the honor of the house wherof she came. But she made them aunswere, that in all thinges she was redie to obey the king, except it were in matter against her conscience, sayinge, that those whome God had coupled together by heavenly aduife, could not bee feparated by man's decree, praying them not to attempt a thing fo vnreasonable: for if loue and good will founded vpon the feare of God, were the true and fure knot of mariage, then she was so wel bounde and tied, as neither iron, fier, or water coulde breake that band, but death alone. Wherunto, and to none other constitution, she was determined to rendre her ring and othe, praying them not to speake, do, or proceede, to any thing that were contrarie vnto that: wherin she was so stedfastly resolued, as she had rather die by keping her faith, then liue to denie the fame. The Commissioners retorned to the king and Queene the constant answere of the Gentlewoman, and when they sawe no remedie could be found to make her renounce her husband, they conveyed her home to her father, in such pitifull forte, as by the way she paffed, eche man and woman lamented her fortune. And albeit shee had offended, yet the punishement and affliction she suffred was fo great and her conftancie fo firmely bent, as she made her fault to be estemed a vertue. The father receiving those pitifull newes, would not fee her, but fent her to his castell that stoode in a forest, which he had before time builded for an occasion, worthy to be reherfed hereafter, and there kept her in prison a long time, fending worde vnto her, that if shee would forsake her husband, he would take her for his doughter, and fet her at libertie. Who for all that offer was firme and conftant, and loued her prison the better by observing the bond of mariage, then al the libertie of the world, without the having of her husband. And it femed by her countenaunce, that al the paynes she had indured were most pleasaunt pastimes, for that she suffred the same for his fake, whome she loued best. What should I speake of men? This Bastarde at length became vnmindeful of her, and fled into Alemaine, where he had many frendes. Whose inconstancie afterwardes appeared fo manifest, as the vertue of true and perfit loue outwardly feming to remain in him, was converted into the vice of odible ingratitude, whereby it was euident, that the causes that made him so hotte a Suter, were the vglie monsters of Auarice and Ambition, where he fill in loue with an Almaine Ladie, he forgetting to visite her with letters, that for his sake had fusteined so great and manifold tribulations. For what rigor or affliction foeuer Fortune offred, coulde neuer before that tyme put awaye the meanes from writing one to an other, but onely the vices before named, and the foolish and wicked loue wherin he fuffred him felfe to fall. Which fudden and newe love fo perced the hart of Rolandine, and fo fiercely affailed the fame, as fhe could no more content and reft her felf. Afterwards vpon the viewe of his wrytinges and letters, feing him to be fo chaunged and altered from his accustomed stile, what tormentes then she fuffred, they doe knowe that have felte and tafted the bitter cup of like paffions. And yet her perfecte loue would not fuffer her to fixe certaine judgement vpon this aduertisement, and therefore deuised secretly to sende one of her servaunts whome shee trusted best, to espie, and priuely make serche whether the same were true or not. Whiche her feruaunt being retourned, hee truely tolde her, howe the Bastarde Gentleman was in loue with a Ladie of Almaine, and howe the brute was that he made great fute vnto her for mariage, because shee was very ritche. These newes brought futche extreme forrowe and grief to the harte of poore Rolandine, as being not able to abide the bruntes thereof, she fill very ficke. Those whiche vnderstode the original of her difease, sayde vnto her (in the behalfe of her father) that for so muche as nowe she knewe the great villanie of the Bastarde, shee might iustly forfake hym: perfuading her thereunto with the greatest reasons they could deuise. But for all those persuasions, no remedie could be founde to make her chaunge opinion: in whiche her laste tentacion shee declared the great constancie wherewith the was affected: for like as love was decreased in him: fo the fame augmented in her, whiche remained and perfifted in despite of all the malice of the worlde. For that love, whiche fayled, and was fledde from him, tourned and retired into her. And when she perceived her selfe alone fully possessed with that whiche before was deuided betwene them bothe, shee determined to observe the same vntill death had made an ende of her fatall dayes. Wherefore the goodnes of God (which is perfect charitie and true loue) had pitie vpon her forrowe, and regarded her pacience in fuch wife, as within few daies after the Bastarde died in the pursute of the other ladie's Loue. Wherof Rolandine being dauertifed by those which saw him buried, prayed them to trauell

with her father by humble fute, that he would vouchfafe to give her leave to speake ynto him. Who at their request, (although he neuer spake vnto her before, during the tyme of her imprisonment) incontinently was pleafed fo to doe. And after that he had herde the discourse of her iuste reasons, in place of rebukes, and his promife made to kill her (which many times he threatened by woordes) he cleped her betweene his armes, and bitterly weping, fayde vnto her: "Daughter, I wel perceiue your vertue and constant mynde, which farre surmounteth any thing that is good in mee, for if there be any faulte or lacke of confideration of your estate, I am the principal occasion thereof: but sith the goodnes of God hath thus ordeined it, I wil make satisfaction for mine offence past." And afterwardes he fent her home to his house, where he vsed and interteigned her like his derest and eldest daughter. In the ende she was demaunded in mariage by a Gentleman of name and armes, to her estate and bloud not inferior. Who was bothe wife and vertuous, and fo louingly regarded Rolandine (whome he many times vifited) as he attributed vnto her the prife of prayse for that, which others accompted worthy of rebuke, knowing that her intent of former loue was grounded vpon the foundation of vertue. The mariage was well liked of her father, was acceptable to Rolandine, and was forthwith concluded. True it is that a brother she had, the only inheritour of her father's landes, who would not agree that she should receive her childe's porcion, objecting that she had disobeied her father. And after the death of the good old man (her father) her brother vsed her very rigorously and cruelly. For her husbande was but a yonger brother, and had wherewithal fcarce able to liue: for which want, God bountifully prouided: for the brother whose gredie minde did craue in one daie to be possessor of al, by sodain death was depriued, as well of his fifter's porcion as of al the rest. By whose death she remained the whole inheritor of that honorable house: and afterwardes lived an honorable and stately life, in great wealth and pleafure, and was welbeloued and duetifully intreated of her husband. Finally having by her husband two goodly fonnes, she very vertuously brought them vp, and finishing her aged dayes, she joyfully rendred her soule vnto him, in whom of long time she had reposed her onely trust and confidence. Now good ladies let them come forth that be the common displaiers of women's inconstancie, and let them bring forth in prefence, fo good and perfect a husband as this was a good and constant woman, indued with semblable faith and vertue. I am fure to bring this to passe the matter wilbe very difficult: and therfore I had rather discharge them of this my chalenge, then put them to payne to trauell and feeke for fuch a one. Whose vertuous loue and godlye continuance of the same, is worthye to bee founded by Trompe of fame to the extreame partes of the Earth. And yet I would aduise yonge Ladies and gentlewomen to beware how they be inamoured, and purfue the trade of love, contrarie to the will of parentes, who ought in time of infancie to be their guide, and also in riper yeares to procure them mariage according to their worthines: which they may the better and foner do, if by vertuous education they arme and instruct their tender and youthly age.

THE SIXTY-THIRD NOUELL.

The Wisedome of a woman to withdrawe the foolishe love of her husband, wherwith he was tormented.

MANY yeares are not yet expired fithens there was a Gentlewoman of noble house (whose name I may not disclose), so wise and vertuous as shee was wel beloued and esteemed of her neighbours: her husband (not without good cause) trusted her in al his affaires, which she ordred and gouerned so wisely, as her house by her meanes grew to be one of the richest and best apparelled, that was in the countrie wherein she dwelled. Liuing thus a long time with her husbande, by whom shee had many goodly children, their happie state and felicitie (after which daily infue their contraries) began to decaie, because that he, defatigated with to much quiet, abandoned restfull life, to seeke after troublesom trauell: and had gotten a custome when his wife was a fleepe to rife from her fide, and not to returne vntill it was very nere morning. The gentlewoman milliking this maner of life. became very ielous of her husband, and yet made as though she mistrusted nothing: but that spitefull passion entred her stomacke fo farre, as in thende shee forgot thaffayres of her house, the diligence of her person, and good government of her familie, like vnto one that verely supposed that (do what shee could) she had lost the fruite of her paine and labour, which was the great loue of her husband, for continuance whereof shee spared no trauaile or toile: but lofinge altogether as shee manifestly perceived, shee grew to be so carelesse of her housholde state and houswiferie, as speedelie appeared the fruites of flouth and negligence; for her husband for his part spent without order, and she staied her trauell from matters of houshold: in such wife as the same was growen to so great penurie, as the high and stately woodes were felled downe to the stubbe, and the goodly maners delivered into the handes of fir Mathewe Morgage. One of the gentlewoman's frendes and kinfemen which knew her difease, tolde her of her fault, and rebuked her for that carelesse life: fayinge, that if loue of hufband could not make her to have respecte of housholde profite: zeale and regarde of poore children's state ought to moue her thereunto. This good councell of her frende touched her very nere, and the pitie of her children at lengthe made her to recouer her spirits, and to assaie by all meanes possible to wynne againe her husbande's loue. See here the nature of honestie, and condicion of well disposed life: this gentlewoman was infected with the plague of Ielousie (an ordinarie disease in women,) and not without iust cause: for what Grifilde could suffre her wedded husband, affembled in bedde, in depthe of slepe, to rife and runne a straie like a wylde horse, neving after the straied female kinde of that forte? This good Gentlewoman, I faye, almoste besides her wittes for alienation of her deferued loue, now growen careles of worldly thinges, as you have heard, is vpon the louing admonicion of her nerest frend, pricked with naturall regarde of Infantes: launching forth that festred fore of Ialousie, serched meanes by policie to wynne that which Ialousie could not get, whiche was her husbande's loue, whom with curteouse wively shame not before affemblie of neighbours, or straungers audience, by huy and crye as many doe, but in domesticall boundes, within the compas of housholde, and within the circuit of secret chambre, shee made him blushe from former life, and to deteste all filthie and beaftly factes in future time. Suche be the frutes of a right matrone's life. Suche be the gaines of the milde and quiet wife. Such a wife, I fay, is the honor of her husband's name, the onely vpholder and restoratife of his renowme and same. But turne we againe to the experienced wisedome of this Gentlewoman. The next day she diligently watched by falfe slepe, the time of his vprifing from her: and when he was gone, shee rose likewyse, putting her night gowne about her, caufing the bedde to bee made, and faying her prayers, she waited the retourne of her husband, who being retired into his chambre, she came before him to kisse hym. and brought him a basen with water to washe his handes: and musing at the vnaccustomed order of his wife, he tolde her that he was come but from the privie, and therfore neded not to washe. Whereunto she answered, that although it were no great matter, yet cleanly and honest, to washe the handes, being come

from an vncleane and stinking place, by which wordes she was defirous to let him vnderstande his follie thereby to hate his dishonest and filthie life. But for all that wyse and pretie taunte hee amended nothing at all: Howbeit she continued that ordre the space of one yere. And when she sawe, that her diligence could not reforme his viuall trade of lyfe, on a tyme wayting for her husband, which taried longer then he was wont to doe, shee was defirous to feeke hym out, and went from chamber to chamber, till at lengthe shee founde hym a bedde in a back chambre and a fleepe with the moste ill fauoured, foule and filthiest Slutte of her house, such a homely pece and durty beaste, as the lyke was not The gentlewoman beholding this to be founde in a countrie. manerly fight, thought to teache him a leffon howe to remembre the difference betwene the fweete and pleafaunt lodging, with a fayre and duetifull wife, and the vncleanly couching with a flinking and lothfome Queane. Wherupon she caused a burden of Strawe and worne rushes to be brought vnto her, setting the same on fier in the middes of the chamber, but when she sawe her husband almost choked with the great fmother, she waked hym, and plucked him out of the bed by the armes, crying: "fier, fier." If the husbande were ashamed, and offended with him selfe to be founde in a bedde with fuch an vncleanly matche, by his faire and honest wife, I referre the judgement to all indifferent men, that be coupled with like wines. Then his wyfe faid vnto him: "Sir I haue affaied the space of one whole yeare, to withdrawe you from this vile and wicked life, by gentlenes and pacience, and shewed example by washing you without, that you might also clense your felfe within. But when I fawe myne endeuour could take no place, I attempted to helpe my felfe with the element that shall ende and confume vs all: affuring you, fir, that if this doe not amende you, I cannot tell if the feconde time, I be able likewife to ridde you from the daunger that may happen. I praye you fir to thinke and confider that there is no greater dispayre or dispite, then that whiche is conceived of loue: and had I not fet before mine eyes the feare of God, I could not have practifed fuche pacience, as I have done." The husband very glad, that he had cscaped that missortune, promised her neuer to geue occasion,

that shee should take like payne to bring him to order. Whiche promife the Gentlewoman very willingly beleued, and with her husbande's confent, she expelled out of her house, that which did displease her moste: and from that time forth, they louingly liued together, and the former faultes of this reformed life, was an increase of ioyful and mutuall delightes. I beseche you Gentlewomen (if there be any in the place where this nouell is redde) if God doe geue you fuch husbandes to beware of dispaire, vntill ye haue affayed all possible meanes to reduce them to good ordre. For there be in the daye xxIIII. houres, in every of whiche houres a man may chaunge opinion: and a woman ought to accompt her felfe moste happie, if by pacience and long fuffraunce she wynne her husbande, excepte fortune and frendes haue procured one that is alreadie perfecte. This example therefore maye ferue al fortes of maried women. Let her take example that list (quod Dame Partelot) for it is impossible for me to vse suche

long pacience. But let Dame Partelot speake her pleasure, I would aduise all husbandes to lyue honestly with their honest wives, and doe praie to God to plant mo sutch wives to store the barren worlde that neuer or seldome bryngeth forth such increase.

THE SIXTY-FOURTH NOUELL.

The notable charitie of a woman of Tours towards her husbande.

Another hystorie of like example I thincke meete to bee annexed: which telleth howe in the Cittie of Tours in Fraunce, there was a fayre and honest wyfe which for her vertues was not onelye beloued, but also feared and esteemed of her husband. So it was that he followinge the fragilitie of those men, which be wearie of delicate fare, fill in loue with a woman of the Countrye that kepte his house there, and many times departed from Tours to visite his countrie woman, where he commonly taried 11. or 111. dayes before his retorne: and when he came home againe to Tours, he ordinarely did take cold, whereof his good wife had much to do to recouer him. And so sone as he was hole, hee failed not to returne to the place, where pleafure made him forget all his former griefe and ficknes. His wife which aboue all thinges loued his life and tendred his health, feinge him commonly broughte into fo poore estate, went into the Countrye, where she founde out the yong woman that her hufband loued. Vnto whom (not in choler but with fmilinge cheere and countenaunce) shee fayd: "How she knew well that oftentimes her husband repaired thither to visite her, and that she was not well content that she vsed him no more carefully, for when he came home from her he toke fo great cold as long time after she had much a doe to recouer him." The poore woman as wel for the reuerence of the Dame, as for the trouth of the matter, could not denie the facte, and therefore fallinge downe vppon her knees, asked her forgiuenes. The maistreffe required to fee the bedde and chamber, where her hufband laie, which she perceived to be so cold, ill favoured, and out of order, as the pitied and lamented the cafe: wherefore incontinently she fent for a good bedde furnished with sheetes, blanquets and Couerlet, accordingly as the knew her husband loued, causing the chamber to be repaired, hanged, and dreffed vp, after the best maner: she gaue her also plate and vessell to serue her husband at meales, together with a punchion of wyne, spice, and other

confections: and then prayed the woman to fende home her husbande, no more fo ficke, but to interteigne and cherishe him after the most delicate and carefull maner she could. The husband taried not long at home, but after his olde custome wente againe into the countrie to visit his woman, and marueiled much to finde her poore lodging so trimly garnished, but much more he wondred when calling for drincke he fawe her to bringe him a filuer potte, asking her where she had gotten all those goodes. The poore woman fayde vnto him weeping, that it was his wife, which having so great pitie vppon his ill intreatie, had furnished her house, and had committed vnto her the charge and regard of his health. Hee feing the greate humilitie and goodnes of his wyfe, and that shee for the vnkindnes he shewed vnto her, had requited him with that curtefie and louing kindnes, well pondering and regarding his owne frailtie, and the honeste demeanor of his wyfe, afterwards rewarded the poore woman with money, and perfwaded her from that time foorth to live an honest life. And then returned home to his wyfe, confessing vnto her the negligence of his dutie, and that excepte she had vsed that kinde of curtefie and goodnes towards him, it had bin impossible for him to forfake and give ouer his vngodlye life: and afterwardes vtterly abandoning his behauiour past, they lived together in great rest and quietnes. Belieue me if ye lift (to you good wives I fpeake) that there be verye few ill husbands, whom the pacience and loue of the wyfe, is able at lengthe to winne, or els they be more harde then stones, which the foft and feble water by continuance of time, is able to weare and make holow: for when the wive's lenitie shall enter his carelesse stomacke, and her pacient suffraunce renew remembraunce of dutie, then doth conscience bite, and gnaw the cancred cord that tyeth vp the good confideracion of his office, and regarde to maried life: then doth age abhorre the lewdnes of former life, and commeth home to cherish the holfome Nourice of his pleafant state. Then regardeth he the bande wherewith matrimonie hath bound him, and both at bedde and borde observeth the ful perfections of the same.

THE SIXTY-FIFTH NOUELL.

The simplicitie of an olde woman, that offered a burning candle to S.

Iohn of Lions.

In the Church of S. Iohn at Lions, there was a very darke Chappell, and within the same a Tombe made of stone, erected for great personages, with pictures lively wroughte, and about the same Tombe there doe lie manye worthie knightes of great fame and valiaunce. Vpon a hote Sommer's daye, a fouldiour walking vp and downe the Church had great delight to fleape, and beholding that darcke chappell which was colde and fresh of ayre, thoughte to reste vpon the Tombe as other did, besides whom he layde him downe to fleepe. It chaunced that a good old woman very deuoute, came thether when the fouldior was in the depth of his And after shee had favd her deuocions, wyth a wax candle in her hande, she would have fastened the same upon the Tombe, and repayring nere the place where the fouldiour lay, defirous to sticke it vppon his forehead, thinking it had been the ftone, the waxe would take no hold. The old woman, which thought the cause that her candle would not cleaue was the coldnesse of the Image, she warmed the fouldior's forehead with the flame of the candle, to flicke it faste. But the Image which was not infenfible, beganne to cry oute, whereat the poore woman was fo afraide, as like one straught of her wittes, she brake into exclamacion crying: "A miracle! A miracle!" They within the Church hearing an outcry of a miracle, ranne in heapes as though they had been madde, some to ring the belles, and some to see the miracle: whom the good woman broughte to fee the Image, which then was remoued: whereat many began to laughe. But divers prieftes not willing fo to give ouer fo great a Miracle, deter-

mined afterwards to vie that tombe in reuerence, therby
to get money.

THE SIXTY-SIXTH NOUELL.

A Doctor of the Lawes boughte a cup, who by the subtiltie of two false varlets, lost both his money and the cuppe.

To conclude our nomber of Nouels, I have thought good (gentle reader) to bringe in place a Doctour and his wyfe, to give thee a merye farewell: because thou haste hitherto so frendly and pacientlye fuffred thy felfe to be stayed in reading of the reste: wherefore with a pleafaunt Adieu in a fhort and merie tale, which discloseth the subtiltie of two false knaues to beguile a poore Doctor and his wyfe, I meane to end. And therfore do faye, that in the Citie of Bologna in Italie, there was a worshipful Doctor of the Lawes, called Maister Florien, which in other thinges fauing his profession was but a slouen, and of so ill behaviour as none of his facultie the like: who by fauing of many crustes, had layed vp fo good flore of Crownes, as he caufed to be made a very great and costly Cup of siluer, for payment of which Cup he went to the Goldsmithe's house, and havinge payed for the filuer, the guilt, and for the fashion, being without his Clarke to carie it home, he prayed the Goldsmith to lend him his man. By chaunce there were newly come to the Citie, two yonge men that were Romaynes, which ranged vp and downe the streates with eares vpright, to view and marke euery thinge done in the same, bearing about them counterfait Iewels and lingots, guilt of S. Martine's touche, to deceive him that would playe the foole to buy them. One of them was called Liello and the other Dietiquo. These two Marchantes being at good leafure to wander the streates, beholding the passangers to and fro, by fortune espied the Goldsmithe's man, who (to fet forth the workemanship and making of the cup) caried the fame open. These gallants bearing a spite to the cup, more for the filuer than for other malice, purposed to inuent some sleight to get the Cuppe, and a farre of with flie pafe, followed the Goldsmithe's man, of whom they craftelie inquired of the owner of the Cup, and where hee had left maister Florien. When they had concluded vppon their enterprife, Liello (the finest boye of them both) went straight to buy a Lamprey of great price, and hiding the same under his cloake, repayred directly to Maister Doctour's house, where finding his wife of semblable wit and behauiour that her husband was, with vnshamefast face and like grace, faid vnto her: "Maistresse, Maister Florien your husbande hath fent you a fishe, and prayeth you to dresse it and to make dinner readie, because he bringeth a company of other Doctoures with him: in the meane time he requireth you, to retorne vnto him the Cuppe againe, whiche hee fent you this morning by the Goldsmithe's man, because he had forgotten to stampe his armes vppon it." The woman receyuinge the fishe, franckly deliuered him the Cup, and went about to prepare dinner. Liello (which hunted after gaine but better caught his prey) hied him a pace and conveyed himselfe with speede to the house of one of his Countriemen, and there rejoyced with his companion, attending for the comming of the Roysler Dietiquo, who taried in the Towne, wayting and viewing what purfute was made after his fellowe. Sone after maister Florien retourned to his house and finding his dinner more delicate than it was wont to be, marueyled, and asked his wyfe who was at all that coste. His wyfe very scornefully aunswered: "Why fir, have you forgotten that you sente me word this morning that you woulde bring home with you divers Gentlemen to dinner?" "What" (quoth the Doctour) "I thincke you be a foole." "I am not" (fayd shee) "and for better witnesse you fent mee this fishe, that I would you had been better aduised before you had bestowed such coste." "I assure thee:" quoth hee, "I fent thee no fishe, but belike it was some folishe knaue that had forgotten his arrant and mistaken the house: but howsoeuer it was wyfe, we at this time will be content to fare well, at other mennes charge." "Why fir (fayd his wyfe) call your felfe to better remembraunce, for hee that brought the Lampry, came to me for your Cup, by this token that you would have your armes engrauen vppon the same." At those words the poore Doctour, after he had discharged three or soure Canons laden with haile shot of fcolding words wente out into the streate, running hither and thither demaunding of al them he met, if they faw none carrie a Lampry home to his house. And you would have faid if you had feen the Doctour wyth his hode hanging at one fide, that he had been out of his wittes. Dietiquo stode still in a corner, and beheld the Doctour's frantike order, and albeit that he was fure the stealinge of the Cuppe by Liello his companion was impossible to be knowen, yet being force that the Lampry cost so much, determined also to play his part, and seinge the doctour stayed from making further complaintes and purfute, he went home to the Doctour's house, where smiling with a good grace and bould countenaunce faide vnto his wyfe: "Maistresse Doctour, good newes, the Cup is founde, one whom you know caused the same to be done in fport to bring your husband Maister Florien in a choler, who now is amonges divers of his frendes iesting at the pleafuant deceipt, and hath fent me hither to fetch their dinner, wherein they praye you to remember the Lamprey, and to come your felfe to take part of the same, bicause they purpose to be mery." The woman ioyful of those newes, began some what to complaine of the griefe which she had taken for losse of the cup, and deliuered to Dietiquo the rosted Lamprey with the sause, betwene two platters who incontinently hid the fame vnder his cloke, and wyth fo much speede as he could, went to seeke out his companion Lielo, and their countrimen, which all that while had taried for him: and God knoweth whether those good fellowes did laugh and mocke the poore Doctour, and his wife or not, and when she had made herself gay and trimme to go eate part of the Lamprev, as the was going out the met Maister Florien lookinge lowringlie vppon the matter, to whom she said (smiling like a frumenty pot) "How now, fir, come they hither to dinner? I have fent you that Lamprey ready dreffed." Then Maister Doctor after faire talke, beganne to discharge his double Cannons, callinge his wyfe Whore, bitch, and beafte, and vnderstandinge that he was twice begiled and could not tell by whom, for fpite and defpayre he tare of his beard, and the heare of his head, which bruted and knowen in the Citie, the Iesters and pleasaunt felowes

and knowen in the Citie, the Iesters and pleasaunt selowes bent themselves to laugh, and deuise pastime at the poore begiled Doctour and his wyse.

VOL. II.

ž		
		1.0



Tragicall matters, and other Morall argument, very res quifite for delighte and profit.

Chosen and selected out of divers good and commen-

diners good and commendable Anthors;

By William Painter, Clerke of the Ordinance and Armarie,

Imprinted at London, in

Pater Noster Rowe, by Henry Bynneman, for Nicholas England.



To the Right Worshipful Sir George Howard Knight, Maister of the Quene's Maiestie's Armarye.

EVERY science having his peculier commodity, and conducinge to the trauayler and dilligent fearcher, a due deferued benefyte (befydes the exercife and shunninge the pestilent monster Idlenes) discloseth the miraculous effect of the Diuinity, and the excellency of his Creature: who breathing life into that fenceleffe worke, framed within the mould of humayn Conception, forceth in him by nature and timely institution such capacitye of Science, as not onelye by that knowledge hee glorifyeth his Creator, but also befydes himselfe, helpeth and doth good to other. For profe whereof the Science of that furpaffing and delightfome pasture of Theologie, is profitable to teache, argue, reproue, and instruct, that by pacience and confolation, we may conceive hope of The knowledge of Philosophie cureth the Mynde, Eternitye. auoydeth childish care, expelleth feare, and shunneth fond desyres. O Philosophye, the guide of life, (exclameth Tullie) the inquisitor of Vertue and expeller of vice. Rethorike (affirmeth he) causeth vs to learne that we know not and that we know to teach to other: by the same we exhort, with that we perswade, with that we comfort the afflicted, by it we encourage the aftonned, and Musike, easeth the troubled mynde, appeafe the outragious. lenifyeth forrowe, comforteth the heavye harted, and erecteth a contemplation of heavenlye thinges. Aftronomye, revealeth the nature of the Starres and Planets, prefageth dayes and times for the helpe and maintenaunce of life. Poesse teacheth amendment of manners, directeth what things be mete for imitation, and with what detriment wantonnes anoyeth the bodye of man. meanes of it (Sainct Augustine saith,) he learned many good lessons to profite himselfe and do good to other. To be short every science is so necessary, as the same taken away, reason is deprived and the Life of Man (of due order and gouernment) defrauded. Thinke (fayth a Greke Oratour) the knowledge of many thinges to bee more precious and excellent, then a Chest heaped vp with abundance of money: for the one quickly fayleth, and the other for euer lasteth. For Scientia (affirmeth hee) is the onelye immortall storehouse of all possessions. Amonges which troupe of Sciences, the knowledge and fearch of Histories deserueth a place in the chefest rank, and is for example of humaine affayres, a Christal light to shew the pathes of our Auncestors. displaieth the counsels, aduises, pollicies, actes, successe, and endes of Kinges, Princes and great men, with the order and discription of time and place. And like a liuely image representeth before our eies the beginning, end and circumstaunce of ech attempt. The fame (like a Mistresse of our life) by probable examples flirreth vp our fluggish mindes, to aspyre the eternal glorie of praise and fame, and terrifyeth the desperate and aduenturous, from enterprise of things vnseemely. The same is a passing picture of verity, and an absolute paterne framinge the matter greatter nor leffe then it is. And because I am not ignorant what Encomia innumerable Authors in time past, and wryters of our tyme do attribute vnto that science, and with what titles the Prince of them all decketh the praise of Historicall knowledge, I only refer the worthines to the practifers, and the fyngularitye of Histories trauel and delight, to ech willing minde that imploye their leafure and tyme therin. And I for my parte do confesse (that by reading of Histories) I fynd the faving which Tullie aduoucheth of Publius Scipio to bee true: that he was neuer leffe idle, then when he was idle, and neuer leffe alone, then when he was alone, meaning therby, that when he was at best leifure, he was neuer idle, nor when he was alone vnoccupied. For when labor resteth him selfe in me, and leisure refresheth other affaires nothing delights more that vacant tyme, than readinge of Histories in fuch vulgar speache, wherein my small knowledge taketh repast. And for that my privat reading might not delyte and

pleasure me alone, to avoid the nature of that cankred churle and foe of humain companye, Timon of Athens, that lived but for him felfe, I have (after my skill) culled some floures and fruites from that pleasaunt store of those my readinges to impart for vniverfal gayne and benefite, chofynge rather hereby to followe the liberalitye of Cimon a gentleman of that Cittye, who knowynge hymfelfe to bee borne to profite other and for the enriching of his Country, not only atchined maruailous matters for furtherance of Comon wealth, but lefte his Gardens and Orchards open for all men to participate the Fruictes of his pleafure and trauell. Wherby fo wel as I can I follow the tract and practice of other, by whose meanes, so manifold sciences in our known toung and translation of Histories be frequent and rife amonge vs. Al which be done after our commodity, pleasure, solace, preferuation and comfort, and without the which we cannot long be fustayned in this miserable lyfe, but shal become not much vnlyke the barbarous, ne discrepant from the sauage sorte. The inuestigatours and bringers to light, wherof direct their eyes and meaning to none other end but for the benefyte of vs and our posteritye, and that our faces be not taynted with the blushing coloure to fe the paffing diligence of other Countryes by curious imbelishinge of their states with the troublous trauaile of their brayne, and labourfom course of penne. Who altogeather imploi those paynes, that no Science lurke in Corner, that no Knowledge be shut vp in cloysters, that no History remaine vnder the maske and vnknowne attyre of other tongues. Among which crew (I fay) I craue an inferiour place and have vndertaken the vnfolding of fundry Histories from the couerture of foren language for none other purpose and intent but to vniuersal benefyte. Part whereof, two yeares past (almost) were made commune in a former boke, now fuccedeth a fecond, furnished withlike ornaments that the other was. The first (by duties chalenge) was addressed to the right honorable the Earle of Warwik, for respect of his honour, and my calling. This the fecond by lyke band, your worship may justly clayme as a just tribute now this moneth of Nouember, payable. Or if your curtefye would not deale fo

roughly with youre bounden creditoure, yet for duty fake I must acquite and content that which hath fo long ben due. The fame I offer now not with fuch vsury and gayne as your beneuolence and fyngular bounty, by long forbearing hath deferued, but with fuch affected will and defyre of recompence, as any man alyue can owe to fo rare a friend. Your worship I have chosen for the firste person of this boke, and the protector of the same (the matter moste specially therin comprised, treating of courtly fashions and maners, and of the customes of loue's gallantise, and the good or yll fuccesse therof,) because you be an auncient Courtier, and one of the eldest Trayne, and such as hath bene imployed by fundry our Princes, in their affayres of greatest wayght and importance, and for that your felfe in your luftiest tyme (euer bred and brought vp in Court,) haue not ben vnacquainted with those occurrants. If I should stand particularly to touch the originall of your noble Auncestry, the succession of that renowmed line, their fidelity for graue aduife and counfel, your honowrable education, the mariage of a mighty kyng with one of your fifters, the valiant exploites of your parents againste the Frenche and Scottes, the worthye feruice of your felfe in fielde, wherby you deseruedly wanne the order of Knighthode, the trust which her maiestie reposeth in you, by disposing vnder your charge the store of her Armure, and your worthy preferment to be Maister of her Armary generall. If I should make recitall of your careful industry and painful trauel sustayned, for aunswearing her Maiestye's expectation, your noble cherishing of the skilful in that science, your good advancemente of the best to fupply the vacant romes, your refufall of the vnworthy: and finally of your modest and curteous dealings in that office, I feare lacke of ability (and not of matter) would want grace and order by further circumftaunce to adde fufficient prayfe: yea although my felfe do fay nothinge, (but referue the fame in filence to auovd suspecte of adulation) the very armure and their furnitures do speake, vniuerfal testimony doth wonder, and the Readines of the fame for tyme of feruice doth aduouch. Which care of things continually resting in your breast, hath atchyued such a tymely diligence, and fuccesse, as when her Maiestye's aduersary shal be readye to molest, she shal be prest (by God's assistance) to defend and march. But not to hold your worship long by length of preamble, or to discourse what I might further saye, either in sauour of this boke, or commendation of youre selfe, I meane (for this instant) to leave the one to general indgment, and the other to the particular sentence of each of your acquaintance. Humblye making this onlye sute that my good wil may supplye the impersection of myne abilitye. And so with my harty prayer for your preservation to him that is the auctor of life and health, I take my leave.

From my pore house besides the Tower of London, the iiij. of Nouember, 1567.

Your most bounden
WILLIAM PAINTER.

TO THE READER.

S shewed curtefie deserueth grateful acquital and frendly fauour forceth mutual merit. So for gentle acceptation of my other boke, I render to thy delite and profit a fecond Tome, for which I craue but like report: albeit, neither worthy of any: or other then the rude artificer gayneth by tryal of his art. Who haning committed to his skil and workmanship, some substance of gold, or other precious matter, fashioneth the same with such bungled shape and order, as (befydes disprayse) it carieth the vnablenes of the workman. Howfoeuer (then) the ablenes or perfection herof vniuerfally shal content or particularly displease: the boke craueth mild construction, for imploied paines. And yet the fame (liking or lothing the licorous diet, and curious expectation of fom) shal beare regarde with those that more delite in holfom viandes (voyd of variety) than in the confused mixture of foren drugges fetched farr of. Who no doubt will fupply with fauorable brute, default of ablenes and riper skil in the Histories of forren spech. Which is the guerdon (befides publike benefyte) after which I gaze, and the best stipend that ech wel willinge mind (as I suppose) aspireth for their trauel, and briefly to touch what comodity thou shalt reape of these succeding Histories, I deme it not vnapt for thine instruction, to vnfold what pith and fubstance, resteth vnder the context of their discourfe.

In the Nonel of the AMAZONES, is displayed a straunge or miraculous port, (to our present skill) of womens gouernment, what state they subdued, what increase of Kingdome, what combats and conflictes they durst attempt contrary to the nature of that sexe.

In ALEXANDER the greate, what ought to bee the gratitude and curtefye in a puissant Prince, toward his slaue and captiue, and to what perilous plunge he slippeth by exchange of vice for vertue. In TIMOCLIA and THEOXENA the stoutnesse of two noble Dames to anoyde the beastly lust and raging fury of Tyrantes.

ARIOBARZANES telleth the duty of a fubiect to his Prince: and how he ought not to contende with his fouerayn in matters of curtefy, at length also the condition of courting flatterers: and the poison of the monster Enuy.

ARISTOTIMVS difgarboyleth the intralles of Tiranny, describing the end whereunto Tirants do attein and how that vice plagueth their posterity.

The two Romayne QUEENS do point (as it wer) with their fyngers, the natures of Ambition and cruelty, and the gredy lust (hidden in that feeble fexe) of fouerainty.

SOPHONISBA reporteth the force of beauty, and what poyfon diffilleth from that licourous fappe to inuenim the hartes of valiant gentlemen.

The gentlewomen of HYDRVSA the ficlenes of Fortune.

The Empresse FAUSTINA, and the countesse of CELANT, what blossoms blome of whorish life, and what fruices thereof be culled.

The letters of the Emperour TRAIANE, do paynt a right shape of vertue, a good state of gouernment, and the comly form of obedience.

Three Amorous Dames reueale the fleights of loue the redines of Nobles to be baited with the amorous hoke, and what defire fuch infamous strumpets haue to be honored.

Queene ZENOBIA, what the noble Gentlewomen (whom the fates ordayne to rule) ought to do, how farre their magnanimity ought to stretch, and in what boundes to conteine their fouerainty.

EVPHIMIA a king's daughter of Corinth, and the vnfortunate Ducheffe of Malfi, what match of mariage Ladies of renowne, and Dames of Princelye houses ought to chose.

Mistreffe DIANORA, MITHRIDANES and NATHAN, KATHERINE of Bologna, and SALADINE, the mutual curtesses of noble and gentle Personages, and for what respectes.

Quene ANNE of Hungarie, the good nature and liberalitye of a Quene: and with what industry Gentlewomen of priuy chamber

ought to preferre the futes of the valiant, and of fuch as haue wel ferued the common welth.

ALEXANDRE de Medices, Duke of Florence, the iustice of a Prince, and gouernour to the wronged party, what vertues ought to shine in Courtiers, and with what temperance their insolence is to be repressed.

IVLIETTA and RHOMEO disclose the harty affections of two incomparable louers, what secret sleights of loue, what danger either fort incurre which mary without the adulse of Parentes.

Two Gentlewomen of VENICE, the wifedom and pollicy of Wiues to chaftice and reftrain the follies of hufbands, and the floutnes they ought to vie in their defense.

The Lord of VIRLE, and the widow ZILIA, geue lessons to Louers, to anoyde the immoderate panges of loue, they prognosticate the indiscretion of promised penance, they warne to beware al vnseemly hestes, less the penaltyes of couetise and vayn glory be incurred.

The Lady of BOEME, schooleth two noble Barons that with great boast assured themselues to impair her honor.

DOM DIEGO and GINEVRA, record the cruelty of women bent to hate and the voluntarye vow performed by a passionate Knight, with the parsect friendship of a true frend in redresse of a frend's mishap.

SALIMBENE and ANGELICA, the kindnes of a gentleman in deliuerie of his ennemy, and the conftant mynd of a chaft and and vertuous mayden.

Mistresse HELENA of Florence discouereth what lothsom lustes do lurk vnder the bark of fading beauty, what stench of filthy affection fumeth from the smoldring gulfe of dishonest Loue what prankes such dames do play for deceit of other, and shame of themselves.

CAMIOLA reproueth the mobility of youth fuch chiefly as for noble auncestry regarded ritches more than vertue, she lyke a mistresse of constancye lessoneth her equalles from wauering myndes, and not to aduenture vpon vnstedie contracts: with those that care not (vnder what pretence) they com by riches.

The lords of NOCERA fortel the hazardes of whordom, the

rage of Ielousy, the difference of duty between Prince and subject, the fruites of a Rebell, the endes of Traitery and Tiranny, and what monstruous successe such vices do attain.

The king of MAROCCO describeth the good nature of the homely and loial subject, the maruaylous loue of a true and symple Countryman towarde his liege and soueraygne Lorde, and the bounty of a curteous Prince, vpon those that vnder rude attyre, be garnisht with the floures of vertue.

To be fhort, the contentes of these Nouels from degre of highest Emperour, from state of greattest Quene and Lady, to the homelye Cuntry peasant and rudest vilage girle, may conduce prosite for instruction, and pleasure for delight. They offer rules for auoiding of vice and imitation of vertue to al estates. This boke is a very Court and Palace for al fortes to fixe their eies therein, to vew the deuoyres of the Noblest, the vertues of the gentlest, and the dutyes of the meanest. Yt is a stage and Theatre

for shew of true Nobilitye, for profe of passing loialty and for tryal of their contraries. Wherfore as in this I have continued what erst I partelye promised in the first fo vppon intelligence of the second signe of thy good wil, a third (by Gods assistance) shal come forth.

Farewell.

Authorities from whence these Nouelles be collected: and in the same anouched.

Strabo. Trebelius Pollio.

Plinie. Xenophon.

Quintus Curtius. Homere.

Plutarche. Virgilius.

Titus Liuius. Baptista Campofulgosus.

Dionyfius Halicarnassæus. Bandello. Appianus Alexandrinus. Bocaccio.

Ouide. Gyraldi Cynthio. Horace. Belleforreft.

Propertius. Bouftuau.

Cicero. Petro di Seuiglia.

Valerius Max. Antonio di Gueuarra.

The Palace of Pleasure.

THE FIRST NOUELL.

The hardinesse and conquests of divers stout, and adventurous women, called Amazones, the beginninge, and continuance of their Reigne, and of the great iourney of one of their Queenes called Thalestris to visit Alexander the great: with the cause of her travaile.

THERE the firste booke beegan with a Combate fought, and tried betweene two mighty Citties, for Principality, and Gouernement, the one hight Rome after called the head of the World (as some thinke by reason of a man's head found in the place where the Capitole did fland) the other Alba. To which Combat fixe Gentlemen of eyther city were appoyncted, and the victory chaunced to the Romayne fide: In this fecond parte, in the Forefront, and first Nouell of the same, is described the beginninge, continuaunce and ende of a Woman's Common wealth (an History rare and straunge to the vnlearned, ignorant of the world's fickle ruled flay) which contented with the mighty Princes and puissant Potentates for defence of their kingdome, no leffe than the Carthaginians and Romaynes did for theirs. But as it is no wonder to the skilful that a whole Monarche, and kingdome should be intierly peopled with that Sexe: fo to the not well trained in Histories, this may seeme miracu-Wherefore not to staye thee from the discourse of those straunge and Aduenturous women, divers be of divers opinions for the Etimologie of the word: whereof amonges the Grætians be divers iudgementes. These Amazones were most excellent warriers, very valiaunt, and without man's aduice did conquer mighty Coun-

treyes, famous Cities, and notable Kingdomes, continuinge of longe time in one Seigniory, and gouernment. These people occupied and enioved a great part of Afia. Som writers deuide them into two Prouinces, one in Scythia in the North part of Asia: other by the hill Imaus, which at this day is called the Tartarian Scythia, different from that which is in Europa: the other fort of the Amazones were in Libia a prouince of Africa. But because the common fort of Authors doe vnderstand the Amazones to be those of Afia, I meane to leave of the difference. The Scythians were a warlike people, and at the beginninge of their kingdome had two kinges, by whom they were gouerned. Notwithstandinge the nature of dominion beinge of it felfe ambicious, cannot abide any companion or equall: which caused these two kinges to be at variaunce, and afterwards the matter grew to civill warres, wherein the one beinge Victor, two of the principal and chiefe of the contrary faction, called Plinius and Scolopithos, were banished with a great number of their adherentes, al which did withdraw themfelues to the limits of Cappadocia in the leffer Afia, and in despite of the Countrey Pefantes, dwelled alonges the river of Thermodon, which entreth into the Sea Euxinum, otherwife called Pontus. And they beinge made Lordes of the countrey, and of the places adioyninge, raygned for certayne yeares, vntill the Peasantes and their confederates made a conspiracy agaynst them: and affemblinge by Pollicy, ouercame and fleewe theym all. The newes of theyr death knowen to their Wyues dwellinge in theyr countrey, caused them to conceine great heavinesse, and dolor extreme: and although they were women, yet did they put on manly courage, and determined to reuenge the death of their husbandes, by puttinge theyr hands to weapons wherewithal they did exercife themselues very ofte: and that they might all be equall, and their forrow common, they murdred certaine of their husbandes which remayned there, after the other were banished. Afterward beinge altogether, they made a great army, and forfooke their dwellinge places, refusinge the mariage of many suters: and arrivinge in the lande of their enemies (that made small accoumpt thereof, although foretolde of their approche) they fodaynly came vpon them vnprouided, and put them all to the fword. This beinge done, the

women tooke the gouernment of the Countrey, inhabitinge at the beginninge alonge the Riuer of Thermodon, where their husbandes were flayne. And although many Authors do differ in the fituation of the place where the Amazones did dwell, yet the truth is, that the beginning of their kingdome and of their Habitation was vppon that Riuer. But of their manyfolde conquestes, be engendred divers opinions declared by Strabo, and others. They fortified themselues in those places, and wan other countreys adjoyninge, choosinge amonge them two Queenes, the one named Martesia, and the other Lampedo. These two louingely deuided the army and men of Warre in two partes, eyther of them defendinge (with great hardinesse) the Landes which they had conquered: and to make themselues more dreadfull (sutch was the credite and vanity of men that time) they fayned to be the daughters of Mars. Afterward these miraculous women liuing after this maner in peace and iustice, confidered that by succession of time, for want of daughters that might fucceede, warres, and time, would extinguish their race. For thys cause they treated maryage with their neyghbors named Gargarians (as Plinie fayeth) with condition, that vpon certayne tymes of the yeare, their husbandes should affemble together in some appoincted place, and vse them for certaine dayes vntyll they were with chylde, whych beinge done and knowen, they should returne home agayne to their own houses. If they brought forth daughters, they norished and trayned them vp in armes, and other manlik exercises, and to ride great Horse: they taught them to run at Base, and to followe the Chace. If they were deliuered of males, they fent them to their fathers, and if by chaunce they kept any backe, they murdred them, or elfe brake their armes and legs in futch wife as they had no power to beare weapons, and ferued for nothynge elfe but to fpin, twift, and to doe other feminine labour. And for as mutch as these Amazones defended themselues so valiantly in the Warres with Bowe, and Arrowes, and perceyued that their breastes did very much impech the vse of that weapon, and other exercises of armes, they seared vp the right breafts of their yonge daughters, for which cause they were named Amazones, which fignifieth in the Greeke tongue, wythout breasts, although some other do geeue vnto that VOL. II.

name any other meaninge. Afterwards, increasing by course of time in number and force, they made greate preparation of Weapons and other Engins for the Warres, and leaving their countrey (which they thought was very small) in the keepinge of some, whom they specially trusted, the rest marched abroade, conqueringe and subduinge all those which they found rebellious. And having passed the river of Tanais, they entred Europa, where they vanquished many countreys, directing their way towardes Thracia, from whence they returned a while after, with great spoyle and victory, and comminge agayne into Asia, they brought many prouinces vnder their subjection, proceedings even to Mare Caspium. They Edified, and peopled an infinite number of good citties, amongs which, according to the opinion of divers, was the famous Citty of Ephefus, the fame beeinge the chiefe of al their Empire, and the principal place that stoode vpon Thermodon. They defended themselues in Warres with certayne Tergats, made in fashion of a halfe Moone, and entring into battaile vsed a certaine kinde of Flutes to gene the people corage to fight, as the Lacedemonians were wont to do. In this wife increafed more and more the fame of those women, and so continued vntill the tyme that Hercules, Theseus, and many other valiaunt men liued in Græcia. The fayd Hercules, kinge Euristeus of Athenes commaunded, to proceede with great force of people against the Amazones, and that hee should bringe vnto him the armures of the two Queenes, which then were two fifters, that is to fay Antiopa and Oritia. At this commaundement Hercules incoraged with defire of honor and glory, accompanied with Thefeus, and other his frends, fayled alongst Pontus, and arrived in most convenient place vpon the shoare of Thermodon, where he landed in futch fecret manner and with futch oportunity of tyme, as Oritia, one of the two Queenes was gone out of the countrey with the greatest part of her women, to make Warre, and conquer new Countreyes, in fo mutch that he found Antiopa. which doubted nothinge, ne yet knewe of his comminge. Vppon which occasion, Hercules and his people surprisinge the Amazones vnwares, and although they entred into Fielde and did put themfelues in defence with futch diligence as they could, yet they

were ouercome, and put theym to flight, and many of them flayne and the rest taken: amongst whom were the two sisters of the Queene, the one named Menalipe whych was Hercules pryfoner, and the other Hipolita, the prysoner of Theseus. Certane Historians do fay that they were fubdued in a pitched field, and appoynted battle. And that afterwards the two fifters were vanquished in finguler Combat. The Queene Antiopa then feeinge this ouerthrow, and the takinge of her fifters, came to composition with Hercules, to whom shee gaue her armure to cary to Euristeus, vpon charge that he shoulde render vnto her, her sister Menalipe. But Theseus for no offer that she coulde make, woulde deliuer Hipolita, with whom he was fo farre in loue, that he caried her home with him, and afterward toke her to wyfe, of whom hee had a fonne called Hipolitus. Hercules fatifefied of his purpofe, returned very ioyful of his victory. Oritia certified of these news, beinge then out of her countrey, conceyued no lesse shame than forrow, who fearing greater damage, returned speedily with her women, the greater part whereof beinge of her opinion, perswaded Antiopa to be reuenged vpon the Grekes. For which purpose they made great preparation of warre. Afterwards leavinge fo great a number of the Amazones as they could, they fent to Sigilus king of Scythia for fuccour: who fent them his fonne Pifagoras, with a great number of horsemen, by whose helpe the Amazones passing into Europa, and Countrey about Athenes, they greatly annoyed their ennemy: but Pifagoras entred in quarel agaynst the Queene and her women, by meanes whereof, the Scythians could not fight, but withdrew themselves aside, whereby the Amazones (not able to support the force of the Greekes,) were ouercome, and the greatest part of them cut in peeces. Those which did escape, ran to the Scythians Campe, of whom they were defended: afterward being returned into their countrey, they lived in lesse force, and surety than before. In processe of time the Greekes passed into Asia, and made a famous conquest of the Citty of Troy, when Penthefilea was Queene of the Amazones, who remembringe the iniuries receiued by the Greekes, went with a great army to helpe the Troians: where the Queene did thinges worthy of remembraunce, but the Troianes vanquished, in many Skirmishes al the Amazones

were almost slayne. And Penthesilea amonges other, was killed by the hand of Achilles. Wherefore those that remained, returned into their countrey with fo litle power (in respect of that they had before) as with great difficulty they fufteyned, and defended their old possessions, and so continued till the time that Alexander the great went into Asia, to make warre against the Hircanians. In which time one of their Queenes named Thalestris accompanied with a great number of the Amazones, went out of hir countrey with great defire to fee and know Alexander. And approchinge the place where hee was, shee sent her Ambassadour vnto him to the ende that shee might obtayne safe conduct to see him, makinge him to vnderstand how mutch the Renoume of his personage had inflamed hir heart to fee him. Whereof Alexander beeinge tolde, graunted hir hys fafe conduct. By meanes whereof, after fhe had chosen out some of hir principall women, leauinge the rest in a certayne place in very good order, she went towardes Alexander, of whom she was curteously entertayned, and then with very good countenaunce, shee offered vnto him the effect of al her ability. Who prayed hir to tell him, if he were able to do her pleasure, and promised that hir request should be accomplished. She aunswered that hir comminge was not to demaund either landes or dominions, (whereof she had sufficient) but rather to knowe and be acquainted with futch a famous Prince as hee was, of whom she had heard maruellous and straunge report. But the chiefest cause of hir comminge was, to pray him of carnal copulation, that she might be conceived with childe, and have an heire begotten of fo excellent a Prince, telling him that she was come of noble kinde, and of high parentage, and that he ought not to disdaine hir vse. Promisinge hym that if it pleased the Gods, that she should have a daughter, she would nourishe it her selfe. and make it her vniuerfall Heire, and if it were a Sonne, she would fend it vnto him. Alexander asked her if shee woulde go with hym to the warres, which if she would, he promised hir his company. But she excusinge hir selfe, aunswered that she could not goe with hym without great shame, besides the hazardinge the losse of her kingdome. Wherefore she prayed him agayne to fatisfie hir request. Finally she kept company with Alexander by the space of XIII dayes in publike and secret fort, which beinge expired, she tooke hir leave, and returned home to hir prouince. But as it is the property of tyme to confume all thinges: euen fo the kingdome and power of the Amazones grew to vtter decay, no one futch nation at this day to be found. For what monftruous Sexe was this that durft not onely by many armies encountre with puissant nations, but also by fingle Combate, to fight with that terrible perfonage Hercules, whose vnspeakable and incredible labours and victories, are by antiquity reported to be futch, as none but he, durst euer aduenture the like. What nation euer comparable to the Greekes, or the Athenian Citty? and yet these mankinde women for reuenge shronke not to peerce their Prouince. What like befieged towne as that of Troy was? and yet Penthefilea one of their Queenes with hir mayny, indeuoured to rayfe the Greekes, that fo many yeares had lien before the fame. What Queene (nay what Stalant) durst sue for company of meanest man? any yet one of these presumed to begge the matche of the mightiest Monarch that euer ruled the world. The maners and qualities of which nation, bycause they were Women of no common spirite and boldnesse, bee thought good in the front of this second Volume to be described: bycause of dyuers Womens liues plentifull variety is offered in the fequele. And for that fome mention hath bin made of the great Alexander: and in what wife from vertue hee fell to vice, the feconde Nouell enfu-

inge shall geue further aduertisement.

THE SECOND NOUELL.

The great pitie and continencie of Alexander the great and his louinge entertaynment of Sifigambis the wyfe of the great monarch Darius after he was vanquished.

GREAT Monarches and Princes be the Gods, and only Rulers vpon Earth, and as they be placed by God's only prouydence and difpofition, to conquere and rule the same, even so in victorious battayles and honorable Exploytes, they ought to rule and order their conquestes like Gods: that is to saye, to vse moderate behauiour to their Captiues and flaues, specially to the weaker fort and feminine kynde, whom like Tyrauntes and barbarous, they ought not to corrupt and abuse, but like Christians and vertuous victors, to cherish and preserve their honour. For what can bee safe to a woman (fayde Lucrece, when she was rauished by the Romayn Tarquine) her chastity beinge defiled? Or what can be fafe to a man, that geueth himselfe to incontinency? For when he hath despoyled the virgin, robbed the wyfe, or abused the Wydow of their honor and good name, they protrude themselues into many Myseries, they bee impudent, Vnshamefaste, Aduenturous, and Carelesse howe many myschiefes they doe. And when a Prince or Gouerner doth geue himself to licentious life, what mischieues, what rapes, what murders doth hee commit? No frende, no Foe, no fubiect, no enemy doth he spare or defende. Contrarywise, the mercifull and continent captayne, by fubduinge hys affections recouereth immortall fame, which this Hiftory of kinge Alexander full well declareth. And because before we spake of that great conqueror in the Nouell of the Amazones, and of the repayre of Queene Thalestris for vse of his body, at what tyme (as Curtius fayth) he fell from vertue to vice: we purpose in thys, to declare the great contynencie and mercy that hee vsed to Sifigambis, the wife of the Persian prince Darius, and briefly to touch the time of his abused life, which in this maner doth begin. Alexander the great having vauquished Darius and his infinite army, and retiringe wyth hys hoast from the pursute and slaughter of the Persians, entred into

their campe to recreate himselfe. And beinge with his familiers in the mids of his banket, they fodaynly heard a pitifull cry, with ftraung howlinge and cryinge out, which did very mutch aston them. The Wyfe and Mother of Darius, with the other noble women newly taken Prisoners, were the occasion of that present noyse, by lamentinge of Darius, whom they beleeved to be flavne, and which opinion they conceyued through one of the Eunuches, which standinge before Their tent doore, saw a Souldier beare a peece of Darius Diademe. For which cause Alexander, pityinge their mifery, fent a noble man called Leonatus to fignifie vnto them that they were deceyued, for that Darius was living. Repayring towards the Tent where the women were with certayne armed men, he fent word before, that he was comminge to them with meffage from the kinge. But when futche as stoode at the tent doore faw armed men, they thought they had bene fent to murder the Ladies: for which cause they ran in to them, cryinge that their last houre was come, for the souldiers were at hande to kille them. When Leonatus was entred the Pauilion, the Mother and wife of Darius fell downe at hys feete, intreatinge him that before they were flayne, he would fuffer them to bury Darius, accordinge to the order and maner of his Countrey, after the performance of which obsequies, they were content (they fayd) willingly to fuffer death. Leonatus affured them, that both Darius was aliue, and that there was no harme ment towardes them, but should remayne in the fame state they were in before. When Sifigambis heard those wordes, she suffered her selfe to bee lifted vp from the grounde, and to receyue fome comforte. The next day, Alexander with great diligence buried the bodies of futch of his owne men as coulde be founde, and willed the fame to be done to the noble men of the Persians geuinge licence to Darius mother to Bury so many as the lifte, after the custome of her Countrey. She performed the same to a few that were next of her kin, accordinge to the hability of their presente fortune, for if shee should have vfed the Perfians Pompe therein, the Macedonians might haue enuied it, whych beinge victors, vfed no great curiofity in the matter. When the due was performed to the dead, Alexander fignified to the women prisoners, that hee himselfe would come to

visite them, and causinge sutch as came with him to tary without, he onely with Ephestion entred in amongs them. The same Epheftion of all men was best beloued of Alexander, brought vp in his company from his youth, and most priny with him in all thinges. There was none that had futch liberty to speke his mynde playnly to the kinge as hee had, whych hee vsed after sutch forte, that he feemed to doe it by no authority, but by fufferaunce. And as he was of like yeres vnto him, fo in shape and personage he did somwhat excell him. Wherefore the Women thinkinge Ephestion to be the kinge, did fall down and worship him (as their Countrey maner was to do to kinges) till futch time as one of the Eunuches that was taken prisoner, shewed which of them was Alexander. Then Sifigambis fell down at his feete, requiringe pardon of her Ignorance, forfomutch as fhe did neuer fee him before. The kinge tooke her vp by the hande, and fayd: "Mother you be not deceived: for this is Alexander also." Then he behaued himselfe after sutch a maner, that hee exceeded in continency and compassion, all the kinges that had bin before his time. He entertayned the two Queenes with those virgins that were of excellent beauty, so reuerently, as if they had bin his fifters. He not onely absteyned from al violation of Darius wyfe, which in beauty excelled all the women of hir time, but also tooke great care and diligence, that none other should procure her any dishonour. And to all the women he commaunded their ornaments, and apparell to be reftored: fo that they wanted nothinge of the magnificence of their former estate, fauinge only the affured trust that creatures want in mifery: which thinges confidered by Sifigambis, she said vnto the kinge: "Sir, your goodnes towards vs, doth deferue that we should make the fame prayer for you, that whilome we did for Darius: and we perceive you worthy to paffe so great a king as he was, in felicity and good fortune, that abound fo in inflice and clemency. It pleafeth you to terme me by the name Mother and Queene: but I confesse my selfe to bee your handmayde. For both I conceive the greatnesse of my state past, and feele that I can bear this present seruitude. It lieth only in your hands how we shal be delt withall, and whether you will make vs notable to the worlde through your clemency or cruelty." The king comforted them al

that he might, and willinge them to be of good cheere tooke Darius fonne in his armes. Thereat the childe was nothing afraid, having neuer feene him before, but toke and imbraced him about the necke. He was so moued with the constancy of the childe, as he beheld Ephestion, and fayde, "Oh, I would that Darius had had fome part of this childe's gentlenesse." Which mercy, continency, humility and conftancy of minde in Alexander, if hee had ftill kept to his latter daies, might have bin accoumpted mutch more fortunate than he was, when havinge fubdued all Afia from Hellespont to the ocean Sea, he did counterfayte the Triumphes of Bacchus. Or if amonges the refidue of his conquests, hee would have trauayled to ouercome his pride and wrath, beinge vices inuincible. Or in his dronkennes abstayned from the slaughter of his Nobility, and not to have put to death those excellent men of warre without judgement, which helped him to conquer so many Nations: but at this time the greatnes of his fortune had not yet altered his nature, although afterwards he could not beare his victories with that Vertue, wherewith he wan them: for when he gaue himself to feafting and banquettinge, he vsed the company of Harlots: amonges whom there was one Thais, who vpon a day in hir dronkennesse, affirmed to Alexander, that he should wonderfully win the fauour of the Greeks, if hee commaunded the Palace of Perfepolis to be fet on fire. The destruction whereof (she fayd) they greatly defired, for fo mutch as the same was the chiefe seat of the kings of Persia, which in times past had destroyed so many great Citties. When the dronken harlot had given her fentence, there were other present, who being likewise dronken, confirmed hir wordes. Alexander then that had in him more inclination of heat than of pacience, fayd: "Why do we not then recouer the fauour of the Greekes by fettinge this Citty on fier?" They were all chafed with drinkinge, and rose immediately vpon those words to burne that city in their dronkennesse, which the men of warre had spared in their fury. The kinge himselfe first, and after his guestes, his feruauntes and his Concubines, set sier in the Pallace, which beinge builded for the most part of Ceder trees, became sodenly in a flame. When the army that was encamped neere vnto the City, fawe the fire, which they thought had ben kindled by

fome cafualty, they came runninge to quenche the same againe. But when they sawe the kynge there presente increasynge the fyre, they poured downe the water whych they broughte, and helped lykewyse the matter forwardes. Thus the Pallace that was the heade of the whole Orient, from whence fo many nations before had fetched their lawes to liue vnder, the Seat of fo many kynges, the onely Terror fometime of Greece, the same that had bin the fender forth of 9000 Ships, and of the armes that overflowed all Europa, that made Brydges ouer the Sea, and vndermined mountaynes where the Sea hath now his course, was confumed and had his ende, and neuer rose againe in all the age that did ensue: for the kynges of Macedon vsed other Citties which be now in the Persians handes. The destruction of this citty was sutch, that the foundation thereof at thys day could not be found, but that river of Araxes doth shew where it stoode, which was distant from Persepolis xx. furlonges, as the Inhabitants rather doe beleue than know. The Macedonians were ashamed that so noble a Citty was destroyed by their kinge in his dronkennes: yet at length it was turned into an earnest matter, and were content to thincke it expedient that the Citty should have ben destroyed after that maner. But it is certayne, that when Alexander had taken his rest, and was become better aduised, hee repented him of his doinge: and after he had kept company with Thalestris aforesayde, which was Queene of the Amazones, hee tourned his continency and moderation (beinge the most excellent vertues appearinge in any kind of estate) into pride and voluptuousnes, not esteeminge his countrey customes, nor the holfome temperance that was in the viages, and discipline of kynges of Macedon. For he judged their civill vsage and maner, to be ouer base for his greatnesse, but did counterfaite the height and pompe of the kings of Persia, representinge the greatnesse of the Gods. Hee was content to suffre men there to fall downe flat vppon the grounde and worship him, and accustomed the victors of fo many nacions, by litle and litle to feruile offices, couetinge to make them like vnto his Captiues. He ware vpon his head a Diademe of Purple interpaled with white, like as Darius was accustomed: and fashioned his aparell after the maner of the Persians, without scrupulosity of any euil token that is signified, for the victorer to change his habite into the fashion of him whom he had vanquished: and although he vaunted, that he ware the spoyles of his enemies, yet with those spoiles he put vpon him their euil maners, and the infolency of the mynde followed the pride of the apparell. Besides he sealed sutch Letters as he sent into Europa, with his accustomed seale, but all the Letters he sent abroade into Afia, were fealed with Darius Ringe. So it appeared that one minde could not beare the greatnesse that appertayned to two. He apparelled also his frends, his Captayns, and his horsemen in Persian apparell, whereat though they grudged in their mindes, yet they durst not refuse it, for feare of his dis-His courte was replenished with Concubins, for he pleafure. ftill mainteined three hundred, and threescore that belonged to Darius, and amonge them were flocks of Eunuches accustomed to performe the vse of women. The olde Souldiours of Philip naturally abhorringe futch thinges, manyfestly withstoode to be infected with futch voluptuousnes, and strange customes: wherevpon there rose a general talke and opinion throughout the campe, that they had lost more by the victory, than they won by the wars. For when they fawe themselues ouercome in sutch excesse, and forayne customes so to preuayle, they judged it a fimple guerdon of their longe beeinge abroade, to returne home in prisoners maner. They began to be ashamed of their kinge, that was more like to futch as were fubdued, than to them that were victorious: and that of a kinge of Macedon, was become a Prince of Persia, and one of Darius Courtiers. Thus this noble

Prince from continency and mercy fell into all kynde of disorder, the original whereof, hee tooke by delite in Women, which beinge vsed in fort lawfull, be great comfortes and delightes, otherwise, the very springe of all cruelty and mischise.

THE THIRD NOUELL.

Timoclia, a gentlewoman of Thebes, vnderstandinge the couetous desire of a Thracian knight, that had abused hir, and promised her mariage, rather for her goods than love, well acquited hir selfe from his salshoode.

QVINTUS CURTIUS, that notable Historiographer, remembringe the stout fact of thys Thebane gentlewoman, amonges other the Gestes and Facts of Alexander the great, I have deemed not altogeather vnfit for this place, to reueale the fine and notable pollicy deuised by her, to rid hir selfe from a couetous caitife of the Thracian kinde, who for lucre rather than love, for gayne than gratitude, promyfed golden Hylles to thys dyftreffed poore Gentlewoman. But shee in the ende payinge hym hys well deserued hyre, was liked and prayled of Alexander for hir aduenturous facte. beinge not one of the least vertues that shined in him, before hee grewe to exceffyue abuse: but bycause Plutarch in hys Treatyse De claris mulieribus, more at large recounteth this Hystory, I haue thought good almost (verbatim) to follow him. Theagenes a Gentleman of Thebes, ioyninge himselfe wyth Epaminondas, and Pelopidas, and with other noble men, for preferuation of their countrey of Greece, was flayne in the chace of his enemyes, as he purfued one of the chyefe of hys aduersaries, the same cryinge oute vnto him: "Whether doest thou pursue vs, Theagenes?" "Euen to Macedonia:" aunswered hee. Thys Gentleman thus slayne had a fifter, whose vertue and neerenesse of kin by noble deedes, she well witneffed, although she was not well able to manifest her vertue, for the aduerfity of the tyme, but by pacient sufferance of the common calamityes. For after Alexander had won the Citty of Thebes, the Souldiours greedy of Spoyle runninge vp and downe the Citty, enery of them chauncinge vppon futch Booty as Fortune offred them, it hapned that a Captayne of the Thracian horsmen, a barbarous, and wycked wretch, came to the house of Timoclia, who fomewhat neere the kynge both in name, and Kyn, in manners, and conditions, was greatly different from him: hee

neyther regardynge the noble house, ne yet the chastity of hir forepassed life, vpon a tyme after supper, glutted and swilled wyth abundance of wine, caufed Timoclia forcibly to be haled to his dronken Couch: and not contented with the forced wronge, as they were in talke together, diligently demaunded of her, if she had in no place hidden any Golde or Siluer, and partly by threates. and partely by promife to keepe her as his wyfe, endenoured to get that he defired: but shee being of ready wit, takinge that offered occasion of her aduersary: "I would to God," (sayd shee) "that it had beene my lucke to have died before thys night, rather then to liue: for hitherto haue I kept my body pure and vntouched from all despite, and villany, vntill vnlucky fate forced mee to yelde to thy difordinate luft: but fith my hap is futch, why should I conceale those thyngs that bee thine owne, thou beinge mine onely tutor, lord and husband (as thou fayst) when the Gods shal please to bringe the same to passe: for by thy will and pleasure must I vnhappy Thebane Wench be ruled and gouerned. Ech vanquished wight must subdue their wyl and minde to their lord and victor: I beinge thy flaue and prisoner, must needes by humble meanes yelde vp my felfe to the vnfaciate heft of thy puiffant heart: what shall let me to disclose the pray that thou desirest, that we both, if thy minde be futch, may rather joye the fame, than the foyly filth of stinkinge Earth, should deuoure sutch spoyle, which for feare, and hope of future fortune, I buried in the bowels of the fame. Then marke my words, beare them well in mynde, fith lot had wrought me this mishap. I havinge plenty of coyned filuer, and of fyned gold no little store besydes sutch Iewels as belonge to the fettinge forth of the grace of woman's beauty, of valure and price ineftimable: when I faw this Citty brought to futch diffresse as vnpossible to be saued from takinge, all the same I threw away, or more truely to fay, I whelmed altogether in a drye Ditche voyde of water, which my fact fewe or none did knowe. The Pit is couered with a little couer aboue, and thickly round about befet with bushes and thornes. Those goods will make thee a welthy personage, none in all the Campe to be compared to thee, the riches and value whereof, wyl witnes our former fortune, and the state of our gorgeous, and stately house: all those doe I be-

queathe to thee, as on whom I thinke them well bestowed." This greedy Lecher, laughinge to him felfe for this fodaine pray, and thinking that his lady fast holden within his barbarous armes had tolde him truth, routed in his filthy Couch till the day had discouered the morning light, then gapinge for his hoped gaine, he rose and prayed her to tell the place, that he might recouer the fame. She then brought him into her Garden, the doore whereof she commaunded to be shut, that none might enter. He in his Hose and Doublet, went downe to the bottome of the Pit: when Timoclia perceiued him down, she beckned for certaine of her maids, and rolled downe divers great stones with her own hands, which of purpose she had caused to be placed there, and commaunded hir maides to tumble downe the like. By which meanes fhe killed that lecherous and couetous vilayne, that rather carked to fatisfie his defire, than coueted to observe hys promised faith. Which afterwardes beinge knowen to the Macedonians, they haled his body out of the Pit: for Alexander had made proclamation. that none should dare to kill any Thebane, and therefore apprehendinge Timoclia, they brought her to the kinge, accufinge her for doinge that murder: who by her countenaunce, and stature of body, and by her behauiour and grauity of maners, beheld in her the very image of gentle kinde. And first of al, he asked her what she was: to whom boldly with constant cheere, she stoutely answered: "Theagenes was my brother (faid she) who beinge a valiaunt Captaine, and fightinge against you for the common safegard of the Greeks, was flaine at Chæronea, that we together might not fustaine, and proue the miseries, wherewith we be now oppressed: but I rather than to suffer violence vnworthy of our race and stocke, am in your maiestie's presence brought ready to refuse no death: for better it were for mee to dye, than feele futch another night, except thou commaunde the contrary." These wordes were vttered in sutch rufull plight, as the standers by could not forbeare to weepe. But Alexander fayinge, that hee not onely pitied the woman endewed with so noble wit, but mutch more wondred at her vertue and wisedome, commaunded the Princes of his army, to foresee no wronge or violence to be done to the Gentlewoman. He gaue order also, that Timoclia and al

her kin, should be garded and defended from slaughter or other wronges. What fay yee (good Ladies) to the heart of this gentlewoman that durst be so bolde to stone this Caytife wretch to death, and for wronge done to her bodie til that tyme vntouched, to wronge the corps of him that fauoured of no gentle kinde: who rather for earthly mucke, than for loue of suche a pleafaunt prifoner, exchaunged Loue for Gold? but note hereby what force the puritie of mynde vnwilling of beaftlye lust doth carve in it selfe: a fimple woman voyde of helpe, not backed with defence of husbande's ayde, doth bring a mighty Captayne, a strong and lofty lubber to enter into a Caue, and when shee saw her best aduauntage, thacked him with stones, vntil he groaned foorth his grieflye ghost. Such is the might and prowesse of chastitie: no charge to burdennous or weightye for fuche a vertue, no enterprise too harde for a mynde fo pure and cleane.

THE FOURTH NOUELL.

Ariobarzanes great steward to Artaxerxes king of Persia, goeth about to exceede his soueraigne lord and maister in curtesse: where in be conteyned many notable and pleasaunt chaunces, besides the great patience and loyaltie naturally planted in the sayd Ariobarzanes.

A QUESTION is mooued manye times among learned men and Gentlemen addicted to the feruice of the Court, whether commendable deede, or curteous and gentle fact done by the Gentleman or Courtier towardes his foueraine Lord, ought to be called Liberalitie and Curtefie, or rather Band and Dutie. Which question is not proponed with out greate reason. For so muche as ech man doth know, that a feruaunt do what he can for his Mayster, or lette him imploy the vttermost of his endeuour, al the labor and trauayle he bestoweth, all trouble and daunger which he fuftayneth, is to little, yea and the same his very bounden duty. Haue wee not red of many, and knowne the lyke that to gratify their prince and mayster, have into a thousande daungers and like number of deaths, aduentured their own propre liues? Marcus Antonius that notable oratour beying accused of incest, and broughte to the judgement seate, his accusers required that his feruante should be called, for because he bare the candel before his maister, when hee went to do the deede, who feyng his mayster's life and death to depend vpon his euidence, vtterly denyed the facte: and notwithstanding that he was whipped, racked, and fuffered other cruel tormentes, would rather have loste his lyfe than accuse and betray his mayster. I could alleage and bring forth in place, the example of Mycithus, the feruaunt of one Anaxilaus Messenius, the fidelitye of the feruauntes of Plotinus Plancus, the faythful mayden called Pythias, that waited vpon Octavia, the chast Empresse and wife of that monster Nero, with divers other: but that I thinke they be to the learned wel knowen, and of the vnlearned the vertue of feruauntes fidelitye is greatly liked and commended: but if the faythful feruaunt know that his defertes do gayne the grace and fauoure of

his mayster, what trauayles, what payns ought he to suffer to mayntayne his reputation and to encrease the fauour obtayned? for as the common prouerbe and wife fayinge reporteth, that the vertve is no lesse to conserue Frendship gotten, than the wisedome was great to get and win the same. Other there be which do contrarily contend, and with very stronge argumentes do force to proue that al which the feruant doth befydes his duetye and beyond the obligation, wherein he is bound to his mayster, is and ought to be termed, Liberality, which is a matter to prouoke his patrone and mayster to deuyse new benefytes for his seruaunte: and that at al tymes when a man doth his duty and feruice appoynted by his mayster, executing the same with all diligence and industry requifite therunto, that then he deferueth to be rewarded. Which is not to be discommended. For no true and honest servant will refuse any trauayle for commodity of his mayster, ne yet discrete and wyfe mayster will leave the same vnrewarded according to that portion of ability wherewith he is possessed: but leauinge questions and disputacion aside procede we to that which this Nouel purpofeth. I fay then that there was in the kyngdome of Perfia, a kyng called Artaxerxes, a man of most noble mynde, and of great prowesse in armes. This was he that firste beynge a private man of armes, not having as yet obtayned any degree in the fielde, kylled Artabanus the last kinge of the Arsacides, whose fouldiour he was, and recouered the Persian kingdome, which was then in the Macedonians subjection (by the death of Darius, which was vanquished by Alexander the great) the space of 538 yeares. This noble gentleman having delivered all Persia, and created king, kept a princely court, wherin were many magnificent factes and vertuous deedes exercifed and done, and hee himfelfe moste noble in all affayres, befydes the tytles which hee worthelye wanne in many bloudy battels, was estemed throughout the east part of the worlde, to be the most liberal and magnanimous prince that in any age euer raigned: in feastes and bankets he was an other Lucullus, royally entertaining strangers that repayred to his court. This king had a Senescall or steward, named Ariobarzanes, whose office was, that when the king made any pompous or publike feast, to mount vpon a whyte Courser with a Mace of gold in VOL. II.

his hand, and to ride before the efquiers and Sewers for the king's own mouth, and those also that bare the king's meat in vessel of gold couered with fine napery, wrought and purled with most beautiful workemanship of filke and gold. This office of Senescall was highly estemed and commonly wont to be geuen to one of the chiefest Barons of the Realm. Wherfore this Ariobarzanes besydes noble Linage and incomparable ritches was the most curtious and liberal knight that frequented the court whose immoderate expence was fuch, as leuing the mean, wherin al vertu confifteth, by reason of outrage which many times he vsed he sel into the vice of prodigality, wherby he femed not only in curtious dedes to compare with the king, but also contended to excel him. One day the king for his recreation called for the cheffebord, requiring Ariobarzanes to kepe him company, which game in those dais among the Persians was in greate vse, in such wise as a player at the Chestes was no les commended then amonge vs in these dais an excelent Oratour or famous learned man: yea and the verye fame game in common vie in the Court, and noble mens houses of oure time, no doubt very commendable and meete to be practifed by all flates and degrees. The king and Ariobarzanes being fette downe at a table in the greate Hall of the Pallace, one right against another, accompanied with a great number of noble personages and Gentlemen lookinge vpon them, and marking their playe with greate filence, they began to counter one another with the Cheffe-Ariobarzanes, whether it was that he played better than the kinge, or whether the kinge took no heede to his game, or what fo euer the occasion was, hee coursed the king to such a narow ftraight, as he could not avoid, but within two or three draughtes, he must be forced to receive the Checkemate: which the king perceiuing, and confidering the daunger of the Mate, by and by there grew a greater colour in his face than was wont to bee, and imagininge how hee mighte auoyde the mate, besides his blushing he shaked his head, and fetched out divers fighes, whereby the standers by that marked the game, perceived that hee was dryuen to his shiftes. The Senescall espyinge the kinge's demeanour, and feeing the honest shamefastenesse of the king, would not suffer him to receive such a foyle, but made a draught by removing his

knighte backe, to open a way for the King to passe, as not onely hee deliuered him from the daunger of the Mate, but also lost one of his Rockes for lacke of taking hede: whereupon the game rested equall. The King (who knew the good nature and noble mynde of his feruaunt, by experience of the fame in other causes) fayning that hee had overfeene the takinge of hys rocke, gave over the game, and ryfing vp, fayd: "No more Ariobarzanes, the game is yours, and I confesse my selfe ouercome." The king thought that Ariobarzanes did not the same so much for curtesie, as to bynde his foueraigne lorde and king by benefit to recompence his fubiecte's like behauiour, which he did not very well like, and therfore would play no more. Notwithstanding the king neither by figne or deede, ne yet in talke, shewed any token of displesure for that curtefie done. How be it, he would that Ariobarzanes in femblable act, shoulde abstayne to shewe himselfe curteous or liberal, except it were to his inferiours and equalles, because it is not convenient for a fervant to contend with his maister in those Not long after the kinge beyng at Perfepolis (the principal citye of Perfia,) ordayned a notable day of hunting of diners beaftes of that countrey breede: and when all thinges were in a readinesse he with the most part of his Court repayred to the pastyme. When they were come into the place, the king commaunded a woodde to be fet about with nettes and toiles, and appointed eche man where he should stand in most convenient place, and he himselfe attended with the dogs and hornes to cause the beaftes to iffue forth oute of their Caues. And beholde, they rayfed a wyld beaft, which with greate swyftnesse leapte ouer the nettes and ranne awaye with greate spede. The King seyng that strange beaft, purposed to pursue him to death: and makinge a figne to certayne of his noble men which hee defired to keepe him companve hee gaue the rayne and spurre to his horse, and followinge the chace Ariobarzanes was one of those noble men which pursued the game. It chaunced that day the kinge rode vpon a horse, that was the swiftest runner in his stable, which hee esteemed better then a thousande other, as wel for his velocity, as for his readinesse in factes of armes. Thus following with bridle at will, the flying rather then running beaft, they wer deuided far from their

company, and by reason of the kinge's spedines, none was able to followe him but Ariobarzanes, and behind him one of his feruants vpon a good horse which alwaies he vsed in hunting matters, which horse was counted the beste in all the court. And thus following the chace with galloping spede Ariobarzanes at length espyed the horse of his soneraigne lord had lost his shooes before, and that the stones had surbated his hoofes, wherupon the kyng was driven either to geue ouer the chace or else to marre his horse: and neyther of these two necessities but would have greatly displeafed the kinge, that perceived not his horfe to be vnfhod. The Senescall did no fooner espye the same but sodainly dismounted from his owne, caused his man to deliuer vnto him a hammer and nailes (which for fuch like chaunces he always caried aboute him) and toke of two shoes from the horse feete of his good horse, to fet vpon the kynge's not caring for his own rather then the king should forgoe his pleafure: wherfore hallowing the kinge which was earnestly bent vppon the chace, tolde him of the daunger wherein his horse was for lacke of shoes. The kinge hearinge that lighted from his horse, and seyng two shooes in Ariobarzanes manne's hand, thinking that Ariobarzanes had brought them with him, or that they were the shoes which fell from his owne, taried stil vntil his horse was shod. But when he saw the notable horse of his senescall vnshod before, then he thought that to be the curtefie of Ariobarzanes, and fo did let the matter passe, fludying by lyke meanes to requite him with Curtefie, which forced himselfe to surmount in the same; and when his horse was shod, he gaue the same to Ariobarzanes in rewarde. And so the king chose rather to lose his pleasure of hunting, then to suffer himselfe by his man to be excelled in curtesie, wel noting the ftoutnesse of Ariobarzanes mynde which semed to have a will to contend with his prince in factes renoumed and liberal. The fenescall thought it not convenient to refuse the gyft of his liege lord, but accepted the same with like good will as before he shod his horse, still expectinge occasion how he might surpas his master in curtefie and fo to bind him to requite the fame againe. They had not taried there long, but many of those that followed did ouertake them. And then the king got vp vpon a spare horse and returned to the city with all his company. Within few daies after the king by proclamation formoned a folemne and pompous iust and tryumph at the tilt, to be done upon the kalends of May next enfuing. The reward appointed the victor and best Doer in the fame was a couragious and goodly curfer with a brydle and byt of fine gold rychly wrought, a faddle correspondent of passing great pryce, the furniture and trappers for the brydle and faddle of like cost and workmanship, the rayns wer twoo chaynes of golde very artificially made, the barbe and couerture of the horse of cloth of golde fringed round about with like gold, ouer which horse was placed a fine sword the hiltes an chape wherof together with the fcabard wer curiously beset with Pearles and Precious stones of Inestimable value. On the other syde was placed a very beautiful and stronge Mace, verye cunninglye wrought with damaskin. The Horse was placed in forme of triumph, and besydes the fame all the Armours and weapons meete for a Combatante Knyghte, riche and favre without comparison. The Placart was marueylous and stronge, the Launce was guilte and bygge, as none greatter in all the troupe of the chalengers and defendauntes. And all those furnitures were appoynted to be geuen to him that should do best that day. A greate affemblye of straungers repayred to that folemne feaft, as wel to doe deedes of Armes, as to looke vpon that pompous tryumph. Of the kynge's Subjectes there was neither knyghte nor baron, but in ryche and fumptuous apparell appeared that day, amonges whom, of chiefest fame the kynge's eldest sonne was the fyrst that gaue his name, a Gentlemanne very valorous, and in deedes of armes of paffing valour brought vp from his very youth, and trayned in the fielde and other warlyke exercifes. The Senescall also caused his name to be inrolled: the like didde other knyghtes as wel Perfians as other ftraungers: for that the proclamation was general, with fafeconducte for all forrayners, noble men or other that should make their repayre. The king had elected three auncient Barons to be Judges and Arbitratours of their deedes, futch as in their tyme for their owne personages had bene very valiant, and in many enterprifes well exercifed, men of great discretion and judgement. Their stage was placed in the middes of the Listes, to viewe and marke the Counterbuffes and blowes of the Combatants. We nede not to remember, ne ought to forget the number of ladies and gentlewomen affembled out of al partes to behold and view this triumphe, and peraduenture eche knight that ran that day was not without his amorous lady to note and behold his activity and prowesse, euery of them wearing his ladie's sleeue, gloue, or other token, according to the common custome in such lyke cases. At the day and houre appoynted appeared all the Combatantes in greate Tryumphe and Pompe, with rych furnitures as wel vpon them felues as vpon their horfe. The triumphe begon and many Launces broken in good order, on either fides Iudgement was geuen generally that the Senescall Ariobarzanes had wonne the prife, and next vnto him the kinge's fonne did paffe them all, for that none of al the combatantes hadde broken past v. staues, and the fayd yong Gentleman had in the face of his aduerfary broken in pieces IX, at the leaft. The Senefcall brought for the eleuen launces, which were couragiously and houourably broken, by breaking of the last staffe which was the twelfth he was judged most worthy. The condition wherof was, that every combatant fhould runne twelue courfes with twelue launces, and he whiche should first breake the same should without doubt or further controuersie obtayne the reward. What pleasure and delight the king did conceiue to fee his fonne behaue him felfe fo valiantly that day, I referre to the judgement of fathers, that have children endued with like activity. But yet it greued him that the Senescall had the greater advantage, and yet being a matter fo wel knowen and discerned by the Iudges, like a wyse man he discembled his countenaunce. On the other fyde, the yong Gentleman which did combate before his amorous ladye was very forrowful for that he was voyde of hope of the chiefest honour. So that betwene the father and the fonne, was one very thought and defire: but the vertue and valor of the Senescall did cut of eythers greefe. Now the tyme was come that the Senefcall should runne with his last staffe mounted vppon the horse which the king gaue him when he was an huntyng, who knowing wel that the king was very defirous that his fon should excell all men, perceyued likewyse the inflamed mynd of the yonge gentleman for the presence of his lady to

afpyre the honour, purposed to geue ouer the honour atchieued by himselfe, to leave it to the sonne and heir of his lorde and mayster: and yet hee knewe ful wel that those his curtefies pleased not the king, neuerthelesse he was determined to perseuer in his opinion, not to bereue the king of his glory, but onely to acquire fame and honour for him felfe. But fully mynded that the honour of the tryumphe should be genen to the kynge's sonne, he welded the staffe within his reste, and when he was ready to encounter (because it was he that shold come agaynst him,) he let fal his launce out of his handes, and faid: "Farewel this curtefie of myne, fith it is no better taken." The kinge's fonne gaue a gentle counterbuffe vpon the Placarde of the Senescall, and brake his staffe in many pieces, which was the x. course. Many heard the wordes that the senescall spake when his staffe fell out of his handes, and the flanders by well perceived that he was not minded to geue the laste blowe, bicause the king's sonne might have the honor of the triumph, which he defyred fo much. Then Ariobarzanes departed the liftes: and the Prince withoute any great refistance wan the prise and victory. And so with sounde of diverse instruments the prife borne before him, he was throughout the citie honorably conueyed, and among other, the fenefcall still waited vpon him with mery countenance, greatly praifing and exalting the valiance of the yong Prince. The king which was a very wife man, and many times having experience of the chivalry of his Senescall at other Tourneis, Iustes, Barriers, and Battels, and always finding him to be prudent, politike, and for his person very valiant, knewe to well that the fall of his launce was not by chaunce but of purpole, continued his opinion of his Senescall's liberalitye and courage. And to fay the trouth, such was his exceding curtesie, as fewe may be found to imitate the same. We daily se that many be liberall of Fortune's goods inueftinge some with promotion, fome with apparel, Gold and Siluer, Iewels and other things of great value. We fee also noble men, bountifull to theyr feruaunts, not onely of mouable thiugs, but also of Castels, Lands, and Cities: what shal we speake of them, which will not sticke to sheade their owne bloud, and many tymes to spende theire lyfe to do their frendes good? Of those and such like examples, all re-

cordes be full: but a man that contemneth fame and glorye or is of his owne honour liberal, is neuer founde. The victorious Captayne after the bloudy battayle, giueth the spoyle of his ennemies to his fouldiours, rewardeth them with prisoners, departeth vnto them the whole praye, but the glory and honor of the battel he referueth vnto himselfe. And as divinely the father of Romaine eloquence doth fay, how that philosophers by recording the glorious gestes and dedes of others, do seke after glory themselues. The king was displeased with these noble dedes and curtesie of his Senefcall, because he thought it not mete or decente that a Subiecte and feruant should compare with his lord and mayster: and therfore did not bare him that louing and chereful countenance which hee was wont to doe. And in the ende, purposed to let him know, that he fpent his brayns in very great errour, if he thought to force his mayster to be bound or beneficial vnto him, as herafter you shal perceive. There was an auncient and approved custome in Persia, that the kinges yerely did solemnize an Anniuerfarye of theyr Coronation with great feast and tryumph, vpon which day all the Barons of the kyngdome were bounde to repayre to the courte where the king by the space of viii. dayes with fumptuous bankets and other feastes kept open house. Vpon the Anniuerfary day of Artaxerxes' coronation, when al thinges were disposed in order, the king defirous to accomplish a certayne conceived determination commaunded one of his faythful chamberlaynes fpedely to feeke out Ariobarzanes, which he did, and telling him the kinge's meffage, fayde: "My lorde Ariobarzanes, the king hath willed me to fay vnto you, that his pleafure is, that you in your own person even forthwith shal cary your white fteede and Courser, the mace of gold, and other enfignes due to the office of Senefcal vnto Darius, your mortal enemy, and in his maiestye's behalfe to say vnto him, that the kynge hath geuen him that office, and hath clerely dispossessed you thereof." Ariobarzanes hearing those heavy newes, was like to dye for forrowe, and the greatter was his grief, because it was geuen to his greatest enemy. Notwithstanding lyke a gentleman of noble stomacke. would not in open appearaunce fignifie the displeasure which hee conceived within, but with mery cheare and louing countenaunce

answered the chamberlayne: "Do my right humble commendations vnto the king's maiesty, and say vnto him, that like as he is foueraine lord of all this land, and I his faythful subiecte, euen so mine office, my lyfe, landes and goods, be at his disposition, and that willinglye I wil performe his heft." When he had spoken those woordes hee rendred vp his office to Darius, who at diner ferued in the fame. And when the king was fet, Ariobarzanes with comly countenance fate downe among the rest of the lords, which fodenlye deposition and deprivation, did maruelously amaze the whole affembly, every man fecretly speking their mind either in praise or dispraise of the fact. The king all the dinner time, did marke and note the countenance of Ariobarzanes, which was pleafaunt and merie as it was wont to be, whereat the kinge did greately maruell: and to attaine the ende of his purpose, hee began with sharpe wordes in presence of the nobilitie to disclose his discontented minde, and the grudge which he bare to Ariobarzanes: on the other fyde the king suborned diuers persons diligently to efpy what he faide and did. Ariobarzanes hearing the king's sharpe wordes of rebuke, and stimulated by the persuasion of divers flatterers, which were hired for that purpose, after he perceived that his declared pacience, that his modest talke and his long and faithful feruice, which he had done to the king, his loffe and hinderance fustained, the perill of his life, which so many tymes he had fuffred prevayled nothing, at length vanquished with difdayne he brake the bridle of pacience, and forted out. of the boundes of his wonted nature, for that in place of honoure he received rebuke, and in stede of reward was depryued of his office, began in a rage to complayne on the king, terminge him to bee an vnkynd prince, which among the Persians was estemed a worde of great offence to the maiesty: wherefore faine he would haue departed the court, and retired home to his countrey, which he could not doe without speciall licence from the king, and yet to crave the same at his handes, his heart would not serve him. Al these murmures and complaintes which he secretly made, were tolde the king, and therefore the king commaunded him one day. to be called beefore him, vnto whome he fayd: "Ariobarzanes, voure grudging complaintes and enuious quarels, whyche you

brute behinde my backe throughout my Courte, and your continuall rages outragiously pronounced, through the very Windowes of my Palace have pierced mine eares, whereby I vnderstand that thing which hardly I would have beleved: but yet being a Prince aswell inclined to fanoure and quiet hearinge of all causes, as to credite of light reportes, would faine know of you the cause of your complaints, and what hath moved you therevoto: for you be not ignorant, that to murmure at the Persian king, or to terme him to be vnkinde, is no leffe offence than to blaspheme the Gods immortall, bicause by auncient Lawes and Decrees they be honored and worshipped as Gods. And among all the penaltyes conteyned in our lawes, the vyce of Ingratitude is moste bytterlye corrected. But leaving to speake of the threates and daungers of our lawes, I pray you to tell me wherin I have offended you: for albeit that I am a king, yet reason perfuadeth me, not to give offence to anye man, which if I should doe (and the Gods forbid the fame) I ought rather to be termed a tyrante than a Kinge." Ariobarzanes hearing the king speake so reafonably, was abashed, but yet with stoute countenaunce he feared not particularly to remember the woordes which he had spoken of the king, and the cause wherefore he spake them. "Wel (said the king) I perceive that you blush not at the words, ne yet feare to reherse the same vnto my face, wherby I do perceiue and note in you a certayne kind of floutenes which naturally procedeth from the greatnes of your mynd. But yet wisdome would that you should confider the reason and cause why I have depryued you from your office. Do you not know that it appertaineth vnto me in all myne affaires and deedes to be liberal, curtious, magnificent, and bounteous? Be not those the virtues that make the fame of a Prince to glister among his subjectes, as the Sunne beames doe vpon the circuit of the world? Who oughte to rewarde wel doers and recompence ech wight whiche for any trauell haue al the dayes of their lyfe, or els in some perticuler service vsed their endeuor, or aduentured the peril of their life, but I alone being your foueraygne Lord and Prince? To the vertuous and obedient, to the Captayne and the Souldiour, to the pollityke and to the learned and graue, finally, to ech wel deferuing wight, I know how to vse the noble princely vertues of curtefie and liberality. They be the

comly enfignes of a kynge. They be the onely ornaments of a prince. They be my perticular vertues. And will you Ariobarzanes, being a valiaunt Souldioure, a graue counfayler, and a pollityke personage, goe about to dispossesse me of that which is myne? Wil you whiche are my feruaunte and Subiecte of whome I make greateste accompt and haue in dearest estimation, vpon whom I did bestow the greatest dignity within the compas of my whole Monarchie, grate benefite at my handes, by abufinge those vertues whiche I aboue other do principally regard? You do much abuse the credite which I repose in youre greate wisedome. For hee in whome I thought to fynde most graue aduise, and deemed to bee a receptacle of al good counsel, doth seeke to take vppon him the personage of his Prince, and to vsurpe the kinglye qualitie which belongeth only vnto him. Shal I be tyed by your defertes, or bound by curteous deedes, or els be forced to rendre recompence? No, no, fo long as this imperial crowne shal rest on royal head, no fubiect by any curteous deede of his, shal straine vnwilling mynde, which mente it not before. Tel me I befeech you what reward and gift, what honour and preferment haue I euer bestowed vpon you, fithens my first arrival to this victorious raigne, that euer you by due defert did bynde me thereunto? Which if you did, then liberal I cannot be termed, but a flauish Prince bound to do the fame, by fubiccts merite. High and mightie kinges doe rewarde and advaunce their men, having respect that their gift or benefite shal exceede deserte, otherwise that preferment cannot bee termed The great conquerour Alexander Magnus wan a great and notable Citie for wealth and spoyle. For the principalitie and gouernment wherof divers of his noble men made fute, alleaging their paynful feruice and bloudy woundes about the getting of the fame. But what did that worthy king? was he moued with the bloudshead of his captaynes? was he styrred with the valiaunce of his men of warre? was he prouoked with their earnest sutes? No trulye: But calling vnto him a poore man, whome by chaunce he found there, to him he gaue that riche and wealthy citie, and the gouernmente thereof, that his magnificence and his liberalitie to a person so pore and base, might receive greatter same and estimation: and to declare that the conferred benefyte didde not proceede of deserte or dutie, but of mere liberalitie, very curtesie, true munificence and noble disposition, deriued from princely heart and kinglye nature. Howbeit I speake not this that a faythful feruaunt should be vnrewarded (a thing very requisite) but to inferre and proue that reward should excell the merite and seruice of the receiver. Now then I fay, that you going about by large defert and manifold curtefie to binde mee to recompence the fame, you feeke thy next waye to cut of the meane whereby I should be liberall. Do not you fee that through your vnaduyfed curtefie I am preuented, and letted from myne accustomed liberalitye, wherewith dayly I was wont to reward my kynde, louing and loyal feruauntes, to whom if they deferued one talent of golde, my manner was to geue them two or three: if a thousand crownes by the yeare, to geue them v. Do you not know that when they loked for most rewarde or preferment, the soner did I honour and advaunce them? Take heede then from henceforth Ariobarzanes, that you live with fuch providence and circumfpection as you may bee knowen to be a feruant, and I reputed (as I am) for your fouerayne Lord and mayster. All Princes in myne opinion requyre two thinges of theire feruantes, that is to fay, fidelity and loue, which being hadd they care for no more. Therefore he that lift to contende with me in curtefie, shal fynde in the ende that I make fmale accompte of him. And he that is my trufty and faithful feruant, diligente to execute and do my commaundementes, faythful in my fecret affayres, and duetyfull in his vocation, shal truely witte and most certaynlye feele that I am both curteous and liberall. Which thou thy felfe shal wel perceive, and be forced to confesse that I am the same manne in dede, for curtesie and liberalitye whom thou indevorest to surmount." Then the king held his peace. Ariobarzanes very reuerentlye made answear in this manner: "Most noble and victorious Prince, wel vnderstanding the conceived grief of your inuincible mind pleafeth youre facred maiesty to geue mee leaue to answer for my self, not to aggrauate or heap your wrath and displeasure (which the Gods forbid) but to disclose my humble excuse before your maiesty that the same poized with the equall balance of youre rightful mind, my former attempts may nether feme prefumptuous, ne yet my wel meaning mind, well measured with inflice, ouerbold or malapert. Most humbly then, proftrate vpon my knees I fay that I neuer went about, or elfe did think in mind to excede or compare with your infinite and incomprehensible bounty, but indeuored by al possible means to let your grace perceiue, and the whole world to know that there is nothing in the world which I regard fo much as your good grace and fauour. And mighty Ioue graunt that I do neuer fal into fo great errour to prefume for to contend with the greatnes of your mynde: which fond defire if my beaftly mynd should apprehend, I myghte be lickned to the man that goeth aboute to berieue and take away the clerenesse of the Sun, or brightnesse of the splendant stars. But euer I did thinke it to be my bounden duety not only of those fortunes goods which by your princely meanes I do inioy to bee a diffributer and large giver, but also bound for the profite and advancement of your regal crowne and dignitye, and defence of your most noble person, of mine owne life and bloud to be both liberall and prodigall. And where your maiesty thinketh that I have laboured to compare in curtious dede or other liberall behauiour, no deede that euer I did, or fact was euer enterprised by me for other respect, but for to get and continue your more ample fauour and daily to encrease your loue for that it is the feruant's part with all his force and might to aspyre the grace and fauoure of his foueraygne lorde. How beit (most noble prince) before this tyme I did neuer beleue, nor hard youre grace confesse, that magnanimity, gentlenes and curtesse, were vertues worthy of blame and correction, as your maiesty hath very manifestly done me to vnderstande by wordes seuere, and taunting checkes, vnworthye for practife of fuch rare and noble vertues. But how so euer it bee, whether lyfe or death shal depend vpon this prayfe worthy and honourable purpofe, I meane hereafter to yeld my dutye to my fouerayne lord, and then it may pleafe him to terme my dedes courteous or liberal or to thinke on my behauiour, what his owne princely mynde shal deme and iudge." The king vpon those wordes rose vp and sayd: "Ariobarzanes, now it is no tyme to continue in further disputation of this argument, committing the determination and judgement herof, to the grave deliberation of my counsel who at convenient leasure advisedly shall

according to the Persian lawes and customes conclud the same. And for this prefent time I fay vnto thee that I am disposed to accompt the accufation made agaynste thee to be true, and confessed by thy felf. In the mean tyme thou shalt repayre into the country and come no more to the court til I commaund thee." Ariobarzanes receiving this answeare of his souerayne lorde departed, and to his great contentation, went home into his countreye merye, for that he should be absent out of the daylye fight of his enemies, yet not wel pleafed for that the king had remitted his cause to his Councell. Neuertheleffe minded to abyde and fuffer al Fortune, he gaue him felfe to the pastime of huntinge of Deere, runninge of the wylde Bore, and flying of the Hauke. This noble Gentleman had two onlye daughters of his wife that was deceafed, the most beautiful Gentlewomen of the countrey, the eldest of which two was peereleffe and without comparison, older than the other by one yeare. The beauty of those fayre ladies was bruted throughout the whole Region of Persia, to whome the greatest Lordes and Barons of the countrey were great and importunate futers. He was not in his countrey refiant the space of fower monethes, which for falubritie of ayre was most holfome and pleafaunt, full of lordlike liberties and Gentlemanlike pastimes, aswel to bee done by the hound as followed by the spaniell, but one of the kinge's Haraulds fente from the Court, appeared before him with message to this effecte, faying vnto him: "My lord, Ariobarzanes, the kinge my fouerayne Lord hath commaunded you to fend with me to the Court the fayrest of your two daughters, for that the reporte of their famous beautie hath made him hardlie to beleeue them to be such, as common bruite would fayne doe him to vnderftand." Ariobarzanes not well able to conceive the meaning of the king's commaundiment, revolued in his mynde divers thinges touching that demaund, and concludinge vpon one which fel to his remembrance, determined to fend his younger daughter, which (as we have fayde before) was not in beautie comparable to her elder fister, whereupon hee caused the mayden to be sent for, and fayde vnto her these wordes: "Daughter, the king my maister and thy soueraigne Lord, hath by his messanger commaunded me to fende vnto him the fayrest of my daughters, but

for a certaine reasonable respect which at thys time I purpose not to disclose, my mynde is that thou shalt goe, praying thee not to fay but that thou thyselfe art of the twayne the fayrest, the concealinge of whiche mine aduife wil breede vnto thee (no doubt) thy great advancement, befides the profite and promotion that shal accrive by that thy filence: and the disclosing of the fame may hap to engendre to thy deere father his enerlasting hindrance, and perchaunce the deprivation of his lyfe: but if fo be the Kinge doe beget the with childe, in anye wife keepe close the fame: and when thou feeft thy belly begin to fwell, that no longer it can be closely kept, then in convenient time, when thou feest the kinge merily disposed, thou shalt tell the king that thy syster is far more beautifull than thyselfe, and that thou art the yonger fifter." The wife maiden well vnderstanding her father's minde, and conceiuing the fumme of his intent, promifed to performe his charge, and fo with the Haraulde and honorable traine, he caufed his daughter to be conveyed to the Court. An easie matter it was to deceive the king in the beauty of that maiden: for although the elder daughter was the fairest, yet this Gentlewoman seemed so peerelesse in the Courte, that without comparison she was the most beautifull that was to be found either in Courte or countrey: the behauiour and femblance of whiche two daughters were fo like, that hard it was to judge whether of them was the eldest: for their father had so kept them in, that seldome they were seene within his house, or at no time marked when they walked abroade. The wife of the king was dead the space of one yeere before, for which cause he determined to mary the daughter of Ariobarzancs, who although fhe was not of the royall bloud, yet of birth she was right noble. When the kinge sawe this Gentlewoman, he iudged hir to be the fairest that euer he saw or heard of by report, whom in the prefence of his noblemen he folemnly did marry, and fent vnto her father to appoynct the Dowry of his married Daughter out of hande, and to returne the same by that messenger. When Ariobarzanes hearde tell of thys vnhoped mariage, right ioyfull for that fuccesse, sent vnto his Daughter the Dowry which he had promifed to geue to both his Daughters. Many of the Court did maruell, that the kynge beinge in aged yeares woulde mary fo yongue a mayden, specially the daughter of his Subject, whom he had banished from the Courte. Some praysed the kinge's Disposition for taking hir whom he fansied: ech man speakynge his seuerall mynde accordynge to the dyuers customes of men. Notwythstandinge there were divers that moved the kinge to that mariage, thereby to force him to confesse, that by takinge of the goods of Ariobarzanes, he might be called Courteous and Liberall. The mariage being folemnized in very fumptuous and princely guife, Ariobarzanes fent to the kinge the like Dowry which before he had fent him for mariage of his daughter, with meffage to this effect: That for fo mutch as hee had Affigned to his Daughters two certayne Dowries to mary them to their equal feeres, and feeinge that hee which was without exception, was the husbande of the one, his duety was to bestow vpon his grace a more greater gift, than to any other which should have bene his fonne in law: but the king would not receive the increase of his dowry, deeming himfelfe wel fatisfied with the beauty and good condicions of his new spouse, whom he entertayned and honored as Queene. In the meane time she was with childe with a Sonne (as afterwardes in the birth it appeared) which fo wel as fhe coulde fhe kept close and secret, but afterwardes perceiuinge her Belly to wax bigge, the greatnesse whereof she was not able to hide, beinge vppon a time with the kinge and in familiar disporte, she like a wife and sobre lady induced matter of divers argument, amonges which as occasion ferued, she disclosed to the king, that she was not the fayrest of hir father's daughters, but hir elder fifter more beautiful than she. The king hearing that, was greatly offended with Ariobarzanes, for that he had not accomplished his commaundement: and albeit hee loued well his wife. vet to attaine the effect of his defire, he called his Haraulde vnto him, whom he had first fent to make request for his wyfe, and with him returned agayne his new maried spouse vnto her father, commaunding him to fay these wordes: "That for so mutch as he knew himselfe to be vanquished and ouercome by the king's humanity, his grace did maruell, that in place of curtefie, he would use such contumacy and disobedience, by sending vnto him, not the fairest of his daughters, which he required, but sutch

as he himselfe liked to sende: a matter no doubt worthy to be sharpely punished and reuenged: for which cause the kinge beinge not a litle offended, had fent home his daughter agayne, and willed hym to fende his eldest daughter, and that he had returned the Dowry which he gaue with his yonger." Ariobarzanes receyued his daughter and the dowry with willinge minde, and fayd theefe words to the Harauld: "Mine other daughter which the king my Soueraygne Lord requireth, is not able presently to go with thee. bycause in hir bed she lieth sicke, as thou mayst manifestly perceiue if thou come into hir chamber: but fay vnto the king, that vppon my fayth and allegiaunce so soone as she is recouered, I will fende hir to the court." The Haraulde feeing the mayden lye ficke on her bed, weake and Impotent, not able to trauel, returned to the king, and told him of the ficknesse of the eldest Daughter of Ariobarzanes, wherewithall beinge fatisfied, heattended the successe of his defired sute: the Gentlewoman no sooner beinge recovered, but the tyme of the other's childbirth was come, which brought forth a goodly Boy: both the Mother falfely brought to Bed, and the childe strong and lusty. Whych greatly contented and pleased Ariobarzanes, and the greater grew his joy thereof, for that hee fawe the Childe to be like vnto the kinge his father: and by that time the yong Gentlewoman was rysen from her childbed, the fifter was perfectly whole, and had recourred her former hiewe and beauty, both which beinge richely apparelled, Ariobarzanes with an honourable trayne, fent vnto the kinge, inftructinge them first what they ought to say and do. When they were arrived at the courte, one of the pryuy chamber advertised the king that Ariobarzanes had not onely fent one of his daughters, but both of them. The kynge hearinge and feeinge the liberalyty of Ariobarzanes, accepted the fame in gracious part, and determined for that curtefie, to vie him with futch princely liberality, as he should be forced to confesse himselfe ouercome. And before the messanger which had brought the yong gentlewoman did departe, he caused to be called before him his only sonne called Cyrus, vnto whom he fayd: "Bycause Cyrus the time of thy yeares bee futch, as meete they be to match the in Mariage, for hope I have to fee fome Progeny proceede of thee before I die,

VOL. II.

my minde is that thou shalt mary this goodly Gentlewoman here, the fyster of my Wyfe. To which hys father's hest, the yong Then the kyng toke agayn his gentleman willingly affented. owne, and ordayned a royall feast, for the mariage of his Sonne, which was celebrated and done with great triumph and folemnity, continuinge the space of 8 dayes. Ariobarzanes hearinge these good newes, would not yet acknowledge himfelfe to be ouercome, and feeinge that his purpose was nowe brought to an extremity, determined to fend the little childe, a little before begotten of hys daughter, to the kinge, which fo refembled the kinge's face and Countenaunce as was possible: and therefore caused a cradle to bee made of the fairest Iuory that was to be gotten, embossed and garnished with pure Golde, adorned and set wyth most precious Stones and Iewels, wherein he caused the childe to be placed, and conered wyth rich clothes of fynest gold and filke, and together with the Nourice, accompanied with a pompous trayne of Gentlemen, he fent him to the kinge, the very time that the folemne mariage should be celebrated: and the kinge beinge in his great Hall, which was hanged with maruellous rich and coftly Arras, attended vpon with a great numbre of his Barons and noble men, hee that had the charge of the conduction of the child, vpon his knees prefented the fame before him, lyinge in the Cradle. The king and the Noblemen, meruelling what that did meane expected what the Meffenger would fay, who holding the Cradle by one of the Pomels, fayd these wordes; "Most renoumed and victorious Prince, in the behalfe of Ariobarzanes, my Lorde and your Subject, most humbly I present vnto your maiesty, with al Submission and reuerence, this gift: and my fayd Lord doth rendre infinite thankes vnto your highnesse, for the great curtesse it hath pleased you to vse, by vouchsafinge to entertayne him into your alliaunce: for which not to feeme vnmindfull, this present (and therewithall he opened the Cradle) by mee hee hath fent vnto your maiesty." When the Cradle was discouered, there apeared a goodly yong Chylde, Smilinge and Laughing vpon his father, the ioyfullest fight that euer his father fawe, and so like vnto him, as the halfe Moone is lyke the proportion of the rest. Then every of the Standers by began to fay his minde touchinge the refemblaunce of the Chylde to hys Father, hardily protesting the same without doubt to be his owne. The kyng could not be fatisfied with the fight of his child, by reason of the great delight he had to looke vpon him, and of the generall opinion whych all men auouched touchinge his lykeneffe. The Chylde agayne vpon the common reioyce made vpon hym, but specially of hys Father, wyth preaty motions and sweete laughinges, reprefentinge two fmilinge pyttes in his ruddy Cheekes, crowed many tymes vpon his father, toyinge vp and downe hys tender handes: afterwardes the kynge behelde the workmanship of that fumptuous cradle, and demaunded whereof the fubstaunce was. Vnto whom the Messenger discribed the Hystory and whole content of that incomparable Iewel: who hearinge that discourse, caused the Queene to be called forth, and by her was further certified of her father's noble disposition, with exceeding contentation, and wonderfull reioyce, he receyued the little Chylde, and confessed hym felfe in maner vanquished: notwythstandinge seeming to be thus furmounted, he thought if he did not furpaffe this curtefy, his noble and princely minde should be difgraced: wherefore he determined to vse a kind of magnanimity, thereby eyther to ouercome Ariobarzanes, or elfe havinge apparant occasion altogether to fall out and to conceyue a mortall malice agaynst hym. The Kynge had a Daughter of the age of 21 yeares, a very fayre and comely Lady (accordinge as her Royall education and princely bringinge vp required) whom as yet he had not matched in mariage, meaninge to bestowe her vppon some kynge or great Monarch with a dowry of Ten hundred thousand Crownes, besides the pryncely and great coftly Apparell and Iewells whych her owne mother lyinge vppon her death Bed did bequeathe her. The kynge then purpofinge to excell Ariobarzanes, mynded by couplvnge hym wyth hys Daughter, to make hym his fonne in lawe: whych to a Lady of Royall Linage, appeareth some debacinge of her noble bloud, to be matched with a man of inferiour byrth: the lyke to a Man how honourable fo euer he be cannot chaunce, if he take a Wyfe of Degree neuer fo Base: for if hee bee borne of Noble and Gentle kynde, hee doth illustrate and aduaunce the Woman whom he taketh, all be it shee were of the meanest trampe of the popular forte, and the Chyldren whych be borne of them

by the Father's meanes, shalbe Noble and of a gentle kynd: but a woman, although shee be most Noble, if shee bee married to hir inferiour, and that hir husbande bee not so Noble, the chyldren that shall be borne of them shall not receive the honour of the mother's flock, but the flate of the father's lotte, and fo shall be Sutch is the Renerence and Authoritie of the Sexe of man, wherevoon doeth ryfe the comparyson of the wyfe, which doth resemble the man vnto the Sunne, and the Woman to the Moone. For wee fee that the Moone of hir felfe doth not give light, ne yet can yelde any brightnesse to the darknesse of the Night, if the did not pertake fome thining of the Sun, who with his lively flames at times and places doth brighten the starres, and maketh the moone to shine: even so the woman dependeth of the man, and of hym doth take hir nobility. The kyng therefore thought the match not meete for Ariobarzanes to marry his Daughter, and feared he should incurre some blemish of his house: but for all respect and feare of shame, the emulation whyche hee had to be victorious of his forced curtefie did furpasse. Wherefore he fent for Ariobarzanes to come vnto the Court: who vpon that commaundement came: and fo foone as hee was entered the palace, he repayred to do his reuerence vnto the kinge, of whom he was welcomed with glad and ioyfull entertaynement: and after they had a whyle debated of diuers matters, the kyng fayd vnto him: "Ariobarzanes, for fo mutch as thou art without a wyfe, we minde to bestowe vpon thee a Gentlewoman, which not onely wee well like and loue, but also is sutch a one, as thou thy selfe shalt be well contented to take." Ariobarzanes aunswered: That he was at his commaundement: and that futch choyfe as pleafed his maiesty, should very well content and satisfies him. Then the kyng caused his daughter, in riche vestures sumptuously attired to come before him, and there openly in prefence of the whole Court commaunded that Ariobarzanes should marry her: which with seemely ceremonies being confummate, Ariobarzanes shewed little ioy of the parentage, and in apparance made as though he cared not for his wyfe. The Nobles and Gentlemen of the Courte wondred to fee the straunge behauiour of the bridegroome, consideringe the great humanity of their Prince towardes his Subject, by takinge him for

his Father, and Sonne in lawe: and greatly murmured to fee the obstinacy and rudenesse of Ariobarzanes, towards the kynge and the Fayre newe maried Spouse, mutch blaminge and rebukinge hys vnkinde demeanour. Ariobarzanes that day fared as though hee were befides himselfe, voyde of ioy and mirth, where all the rest of the Courte spent the tyme in sport and Triumph, the Ladies and Noble women together with the kynge and Queene themselues. dauncinge and maskinge, vntil the time of night did force ech Wyghte to Retyre to their Chaumbers. Notwithstandinge the kynge did marke the Gesture and Countenaunce of Ariobarzanes, and after the Banket the Kynge in Solempne guife and great Pompe caused hys Daughter to bee accompanyed wyth a great Trayne to the Lodginge of Ariobarzanes, and to be caried with hir, hir Pryncely Dowry, where Ariobarzanes very Honourably receyued hys Wyfe, and at that Instant, in the presence of all the Noblemen and Barons that wayted vpon the Bride, hee doubled the Dowry receyued, and the same wyth the Ten hundred thousand Crownes genen hym by the kynge, hee fent back agayne. This vnmeafured Liberality feemed paffynge Straunge vnto the kynge, and bredde in him futch disdayne, as doubtful he was whether to yelde, or to condemne him to perpetuall Banishment. thought that the greatnesse of Ariobarzanes mynde was Inuincible, and was not able paciently to fuffer, that a fubicct in matters of curtefie and liberality, should still compare wyth his king and maister: herewithal the king conceining malice, could not tell what to fay or do. An eafy matter it was to perceive the rage and furie of the king, who was fo fore displeased, as he bare good looke and countenaunce to no man: and bicause in those dayes the Persian kings were honored and reuerenced as Gods, there was a lawe that when the king was driven into a furie, or had conceived a just displeasure, he should manifest vnto his Counsellers, the cause of his anger, who afterwardes by mature diligence having examined the cause and finding the kinge to be vninftly displeased should seke meanes of his appeafing: but if they found his anger and displeafure to be juftly grounded, the cause of the same, according to the quality of the offence, little or great, they should punish, eyther by banishment or capital death: the sentence of whom

should passe and be pronounced without appeale. Howbeit Lawfull it was for the Kynge to mitigate the pronounced fentence, eyther in al, or in part, and to diminish the payne, or clearely to affoyle the party: whereby it euidently appeared, that the Counfellers Sentence once determined, was very inflice, and the kynge's wyll if he pardoned, was meere grace and mercy. The kyng was constrayned by the statutes of his kyngdome to disclose vnto his Counsell the cause of his displeasure, which particularly he recited: the Counfellers when they heard the reasons of the kynge, sent for Ariobarzanes, of whom by due examination they gathered, that in diuers causes he had prouoked the kynge's dyspleasure. Afterwards the Lords of the Counfell, vpon the proposed question began to argue, by inuestigation and search whereof, in the ende they iudged Ariobarzanes worthy to loose hys head: for that he would not onely compare, but also go about to ouertoppe him in thinges vndecent, and to shewe himselfe discontented with the mariage of his daughter, and vnthankfull of the benefites fo curteoufly beflowed vpon him. A custome was observed amonge the Perfians, that in euery acte or enterprise, wherein the servaunt endeuored to furpaffe and vanquish his lord and maister (albeit the attempt were commendable and prayleworthy) for respect of want of duety, or contempt to the royall maiefty, he should lofe his best iovnt: and for better confirmation of their judgement, the Counfellers alleaged a certayne diffinitiue fentence, regestred in their Chronicles, whilom done by the kyngs of Persia. The cause was this: one of the kyngs of that Region disposed to disporte with certayne of his noble men abrode in the Fields, went a Hauking, and with a Faucon to fly at divers game. Within a while they fprang a Hearon, and the Kynge commaunded that one of the faulcons which was a notable fwift and foaring Hauke, should be cast of to the Hearon: which done, the hearon began to mount and the faucon speedely pursued, and as the Hauke after many batings and intercourses, was about to seaze vpon the hearon, he espied an Egle: the stoute Hauke seeing the Egle, gaue ouer the fearfull Hearon, and with fwift flight flewe towardes the hardy Egle, and fiercely attempted to feaze vpon her: but the Egle very stoutly defended her selfe, that the Hauke was forced to let goe hir holde. In the ende the good Hauke, with her sharpe talendes, agayne seazed vpon the Egle's neck, and wyth her beake strake her starke dead, wherewithall she fel downe amid the company that wayted vpon the king. Al the Barons and Gentlemen highly commended and prayfed the Hauke, affirminge that a better was not in the worlde, attributing vnto the same sutch prayse, as they thought meete. The king for all the acclamations and shoutes of the troupe, spake not a worde, but stoode musing with himselfe, and did neyther prayse nor blame the Hauke. It was very late in the eueninge, when the Faucon killed the Egle, and therefore the kinge commaunded ech man to depart to the Citty. The next day the king caused a Goldsmith to make an exceeding fayre crowne of golde, apt and meete for the Falcon's head. Afterwards when he faw time convenient, he ordayned that in the market place of the Citty, a Pearche should be erected, and adorned with Tapestry, Arras, and other coftly furnitures, futch as Prynces Palaces are bedecked withall. Thither with found of Trumpets hee caufed the Faucon to be conueyed, where the kinge commaunded one of his noble men to place the Crowne vpon his head, for price of the excellent pray atchieued vpon the Egle. Then he caused the hangman or common executioner of the Citty, to take the Crowne from the Faucon's head, and with the trenchant fword to cut it of. Vppon these contrary effectes the beholders of this fight were amazed, and began diverfly to talk thereof. The king which at a window stoode to behold this fact, caused silence to be kept, and fo opened his princely voice, as he was wel heard fpeaking thefe words: "There ought (good people) none of you all to Murmur and grudge at the prefent fact executed upon the Faucon, bycause the fame is done vppon good reason and just cause as by processe of my discourse you shall well perceive. I am persuaded that it is the office and duety of every magnanimous prince, to know the valor and difference betweene vertue and vice, that all vertuous actes and worthy attempts may be honoured, and the contrary chastised and punished, otherwise he is not worthy of the name of a Kyng and Prynce, but of a cruel and trayterous Tyrant: for as the prince beareth the title by principality and chiefe, so ought his life chiefly to excell other, whom he gouerneth and ruleth. The

bare title and dignity is not fufficient, if his conditions and moderation be not to that supreme state equivalent. Full well I knew and did confider to be in this dead Faucon a certayne generofity and stoutnesse of minde, joyned with a certaine fierce activity and nimbleneffe, for which I Crowned and rewarded hir wyth thys golden Garland, bycause of the stoute slaughter which she made vpon that myghty Egle, worthy for that folemne guife. But when I confidered how boldly and rashely she affayled and killed the Egle, which is hir Queene and Maystresse, I thought it a part of Iustice, that for hir bolde and vncomely act, she shoulde suffer the payne due to hir deferte: for vnlawful it is for the feruaunte, and vnduetiful for the fubiect, to imbrue his handes in the bloud of his Soueraygne Lord. The Faulcon then having flavne hir Queene, and of all other Birdes the Soueraygne, who can with reason blame me for cuttinge of the Faucon's head? Doubtleffe none, that hath respect to the quiet state betweene the Prince and Subject." This example the Iudges alleaged against Ariobarzanes when they pronounced fentence: and applyinge the fame to him, ordeyned that first Ariobarzanes, for his Magnanimity and liberal curtesie should be Crowned wyth a Laurell Garland, for the generofity of his minde and exceedinge curtefie, but for his great emulation, earnest endeuour, and continuall dyuice to contende wyth hys Prynce, and in Liberality to flew him felfe fuperior, byfides the mutteringe speech vttered agaynst hym, his head ought to be ftriken of. Ariobarzanes beinge aduertifed of thys feuere condemuation, hee purposed to sustayne the Venemous Darte of Fortune, as hee had endured other bruntes of that Enuious inconftant Lady, and in futch maner behaued and directed his Gestes, and Countenaunce, as no Sygne of Choler or Dyspayre appeared in him, onely Pronouncinge thys Sentence with joyfull Cheare in the presence of many: "Glad I am that at length there resteth in me fo mutch to be liberall, as I employ my life and bloud, to declare the fame to my Soueraygne Lorde, which right willingly I meane to do, that the World may know, how I had rather lose my lyfe. than to faynt and geue ouer in mine accustomed liberality." Then callinge a Notary vnto him, he made his Wyll (for fo it was lawfull by the Persian lawes) and to his Wyfe, and Daughters hee increased their Dowries, and to his kinffolke and freendes he bequeathed divers rich and bountifull Legacies. To the kyng he gaue a great number of most precious Iewels. To Cyrus the king's fonne, and his by mariage (befides a great maffe of money) he bequeathed all his Armure, and Weapons, with all his inftruments for the warres, and his whole stable of horsfe. Last of all he ordayned, that if (perhaps) his wyfe should be found with chylde, and brought to Bed of a Sonne hee should be his vniuersall heyre: but if a Woman chylde, to have the dowry that his other daughters had. The rest of his goods and cattel he gaue indifferently to al III. equally to be deuided. He prouided also, that all his feruantes accordinge to their degree, should be rewarded. The day before he should be put to death (according to the custome of Persia) his prayses and valiannt factes, as wel by Epitaphes fixed vpon poafts, as by proclamation, were generally founded throughout the Realme, in fuch wife as ech wight judged him to be the most liberall and noble personage that was in all the Countrey, and in the borders confininge vpon the fame. And if there had not bene fome enuious perfons nere the kyng, which studied and practifed his ouerthrow, al other would have deemed him vnworthy of death. Sutch is enuy of the maliciously disposed, that rather than they would see their equals to be in better estimation with the prynce than themselues, study and denise all pollicy eyther by flattery or false surmise to bringe them in discredite, or to practife by false accusation, their vtter subuersion by Death or Banishement. But whiles Ariobarzanes was disposinge his thinges in order, his Wyfe and Daughters with his Friends and Confins, were affected with great forrow day and night, complayning for the heavy flate of that noble Gentleman. The eight day being come (for the lawe allowed that space to the condemned, for disposition of their thynges) a Skaffolde was made by commaundement of the king, in the middest of the Market place, al couered with black cloth, and an other right ouer against the same with Purple and Silk, where the kyng (if he lift) in the mids of the Indges, should fit and the inditement redde, judgement (by the kynge's owne mouth declared) should be executed, or if it pleafed him, discharge and affoyle the condemned. And the

kynge vnwillinge to be prefent, gaue to one of the eldest iudges hys full power and authority. But yet forrowful that a Gentleman fo noble and valiaunt, his father and fonne in lawe, should finish his life with a death so horrible, would needes that morninge be present himselfe at that execution, as wel to see the continent and floute ende of Ariobarzanes, as also to take order for his deliuery. When the time was come, Ariobarzanes by the Sergeante and Garde was brought vnto the Skaffolde, and there Aparelled in rich Vestures, the Laurel Crowne was fet on his head, and fo continuinge for a certayne space, the garment and Crowne was taken of agayne together with his other Apparell. The executioner attendinge for commaundement to do his office, and lifting vp his fworde to do the fact, the king defired to fee the countenaunce of Ariobarzanes, who neuer chaunged coloure for all that terrour of death. The king feeing the great constancy and inuincible mind of Ariobarzanes, spake aloud that all men might heare hym, these wordes: "Thou knowest Ariobarzanes, that it is not I, which have wroughte thy condemnation, ne yet by envious defyre haue fought thy bloude, to brynge thee to thys extremity, but it hath bene thy ill disordred life, and the statutes of this Realme, which have found thee guilty, and thereupon fentence and death pronounced, and execution now ready to be done, and the minister ready to aduaunce his arme, to play the last acte of this Tragedy: and yet for that our holy lawes doe geue liberty that I may affoyle and delyuer whom I lift, and them restore to their former state, if nowe thou wilt acknowledge thy felfe vanquished and ouercome, and accepte thy lyfe in gratefull part, I will pardon thee, and restore thee to thyne offyces and promotions." Ariobarzanes, hearying these wordes, kneeled downe wyth hys heade declyned, and expecting the blow of the Sworde, lyfted vp himfelfe, and turnynge his face to the kinge, perceyuing his malice not fo fore bent against hym as the enuy and malice of his ennemies defired, he determined to proue and vie the pitiful liberality and fauour of his Soueraigne Lorde, that his Foes by his death might not Triumph, ne yet attayne the thinge, for which so long they aspired. Wherefore in reuerent wyfe kneelinge before his maiesty, with a stout and perfect voyce fayd these words: "Most vyctorious and mercifull Soueraygne Lord, in equall worship and honour to the immortall Gods, fith of thy abundant grace and mercy it hath pleafed thee to graunt me lyfe, I do most humbly accept the same, which if I wyst fhould be prolonged in thy diffrace and wrath, could not be pleafaunt vnto me, and therefore do confesse my selfe in curtesie and liberality altogether furmounted and ouercome. I most humbly then do gene thee thankes for preservation of my lyse, hopinge hereafter to employ the vttermost of myne endenour for the benefite and honour of thy Crowne and dignity, as readyly and without supplication made in my behalfe, thou hast vouchesafed to reftore the fame: and fith thy clemency hath reviued me thyne humble vaffall, I befeech thy maiefly to give me leave to fay my minde, truftinge thereby to do thee to vnderstand the effect and cause of that my former presumption." The kinge made signes that he should arise and boldly speake the summe of his desire. When he stoode up, filence was proclaymed, who then began to speake these wordes: "Two things there be, (most facred Prince) which doubtleffe do Refemble the raging Waues of furginge Seas, and the mutability of vnstable windes, and yet great is the folly of an infinite numbre, which imploy their whole care and diligence to the purfute thereof. These two thinges whereof I speake, and be so deerely beloued of flattering Courtiers, are the grace and fauour of their foueraygne lord, and the luringe loue of Amorous Dames: whych two do fo often beguyle the courtly gentleman, that in ende, they engender nought elfe but repentance: and to begin with the loue of Ladies, they, as by common experience is proued, most commonly do recline to their Inferiours. It is dayly feene by to mutch vnhappy proofe, that a yongue Gentleman by Byrth noble, and otherwyse riche, vertuous, and indued with many goodly gyfts, shall choose and worship one for his soueraigne Lady and maistreffe, and her shall serue and honour with no lesse fayth and fidelity then is due to the immortall Gods, and shal not sticke to employ for her loue and service all the possible power and trauell he is able to do, and yet she in dispite of all his humble endeuour, shall imbrace an other voide of all vertue, makynge him possession of that benefite, after which the other seeketh, and shee not longe constant in that minde, afterwards wil attend to the first Suter, but in sutch mouable and disdaynfull fort, as the wandring starres (through their natural instability) be moued to and fro, and him in the ende will fuffre to fall headlong into the bottomlesse pit of dispayre: and to him that asketh hir the reason of this variety, she maketh none other aunswere but that her pleafure is futch, and wilfull will to dally with her futors: fo that feldome times a true and perfit louer can fasten his foote on certayne holde, but that his life is toffed vp and downe like the whirling blastes of inconstant windes. The like succedeth in the Courtes of Kings and Princes, he which is in fauoure with his foueraigne Lord in al mens eyes, fo great and neare, as it feemeth the Prince is disposed to resolue vpon nothing without his adulfe and counfell, when fuch fauored person shall employe his whole care and industrie to maintaine and encrease the commenced grace of his foueraigne Lord, behold, vpon the fodaine the minde and vaine of his Lord is changed, and an other without defert, which neuer carked to win good will, is taken in place, cherished as though hee had ferued him an hundred yeares before: and he that was the first minion of the Courte in greatest grace and estimation, is in a moment dispysed, and oute of all regarde: an other within fewe dayes after, shall supplie the place of the other twaine, verye dyligent and careful to ferue a man trained vp in courtly exercife, whose mindfull mind shall bee so caring oner his lord's affayers, as vpon the fafegard and preferuation of his owne life: but all his labour is employed in vayne: and when the aged dayes of his expired life approch, for the least displeasure he shalbe thrust out without reward for former trauel, that right aptly the Common Prouerb may be applied: the common Courtier's life is like a golden mifery, and the faithfull feruant an Affe perpetuall. I haue seene my selfe the right wel learned man to sterue in Court for want of meate, and a blockish beast voyde of vertue, for lust, and for merite, aduaunced and made a Gentleman: but this may chaunce bicause hys Lord is not disposed to vertue, nought esteeminge those that be affected with good sciences, and that onely for lacke of carefull trayninge vp in youthfull dayes, or elfe for that his minde cannot frame with gentle spyrits, the closets of whose breafts be charged and fraught with infinite loades of learninge,

and haue not bin noseled in trade of Courtes, ne yet can vse due courtly speech, or with vnblushinge face can shuffle themselues in presence of their betters, or commen with Ladies of dame Venus toyes: or race of birth not mingled with the noble or gentle Sire: for these causes perhaps that vertuous wighte cannot attain the hap of fortune's giftes. Which perfon thoughe in Court he be not esteemed, yet in schoolehouse of good arte he is deemed famouse, and for his worthy skill right worthy to be preferred aboue the heauens. In femblable wife, how oftentimes and commonly is it feene that the man perchance which neuer thou fawest before, so fone as he is feene of the, fodaynly he is detefted lyke a plague, and the more earnest he is to do the service and pleasure, the greater is thy wrath bent towards him? Contrarywife, fom other vpon the first view shal so content and please the, as if he require the bestowing of thy life, thou hast no power to denie him, thou arte in loue with him, and let him thwart thy mind and wil neuer fo much, thou carest not for it, all is well he doth: but that these varieties do proceede from fome certayn temprement of bloud within the body conformed and moued by fom inward celestial power, who doubteth? And furely the foundation of these Courtly mutations, is the pricking venomous Goade of pestiferous Enuye, whych continually holdeth the fauour of Prynces in ballaunce, and in a moment hoisteth vp him which was below, and poizeth downe agayne him that was exalted: fo that no plague or poifon is more peftiferous in Courts, than the hurtfull difease of Enuy: all other vices with little paine and leffe labour may eafily be cured, and fo pacified as they shall not hurt thee: but rooted Enuy by any meanes is discharged, with no pollicye is expelled, ne yet by any Drugge or medicine purged. Veryly wythout great daunger, I know not which way the poynaunt bittes of Enuy can be auoyded: the proude man in Courte, the arrogant and ambitious, the lofty minded Foole, more eleuate and lustie than Pride it selfe, if reverence bee done to him, if he be honoured, if place be given to him, if hee be prayfed and glorified aboue the heavens, if thou humble thy felfe to him, by and by he will take thee to be his frend, and wyll deeme thee to bee a curteous and gentle companion. Let the lacvuious and wanton person given to the pleasures and lust

of women, fixing his mind on nothing elfe but vpon fugitiue pleafures, if his love bee not impeached, ne yet his wanton toyes reproued, if he be prayfed before his Ladie, he will ever be thy friend: the couetous and gloutonous carle, if first thou make hym quaffe a Medicine, and afterwardes byd hym to thy table, the one and other disease is speedily cured: but for the enuious person, what Phificke can be fought to purge his pestiferous humour? which if thou go about to heale and cure, rather muste thou remedye the same by wasting the life of him that is so possessed, than find causes of recouerie. And who knoweth not (most facred Prince) that in your Courte there be some attached with that poisoned plague, who seeing me your maiestie's humble vassall in greater fauoure with your grace than they, my feruice more acceptable than theirs, my prowesse and exercise in armes more worthy than theirs, my diligence more industrious than theirs, my advife and counfell more anayleable than theirs, all mine other deedes and doings in better Estimation than theirs: they I fay, dallied in the lap of the cancred witch dame Enuy, by what meanes are they to be recourred? by what meanes their infection purged? by what meanes their mallice cured? If not to fee me deprined of your grace, expelled from your Court, and cast headlonge into the gulfe of death extreme? If I should bribe them with great rewardes, if I should honour them with humble reuerence, if I should exalt them aboue the Skyes, if I should employ the vttermost of my power, to do them service, all frustrate and cast away: they wil not cease to bring me into perill, they will not spare to reduce me to misery, they will not sticke to ymagin all denyfes for myne anoyance, when they fee al other remdyes impotent and vnable: this is the poisoned plague which enuenometh all Princes courtes: this is the mischiefe which deftroyeth all kyngdomes: this is the monster that denoureth all vertuous enterpryses and offendeth eche gentle spirite: this is the dim vale which fo overshadoweth the clerenes of the eyes as the bright beams of verity cannot be fene, and fo obscureth the equity of iustice, as right from falshode cannot be discerned: this is the manifest cause that breadeth a thousand errors in the workes of men: and to draw nere to the effecte of this my tedious talke, briefly, there is no vice in the worlde that more outragiously corrupteth Princes courtes, that more vnfrendly vntwineth frendship's band, that more vnhappely fubuerteth noble houses, then the poysone of Enuy: for he that enclineth his eares to the enuious person, he that attendeth to his malignant deuises, vnpossible it is for him to do any dede that is eyther good or vertuous: but to finishe and end for anoyding of wearines and not to stay your maiesty from your waighty affayres, I say that the enuyous man reioiceth not fo much in his own good turnes nor gladdeth himfelf fo greatlye with his owne commodityes, as hee doth infulte, and laugh at the discommodityes and hinderance of others, at whose profite and gain he foroweth and lamenteth: and to put out both the eyes of his companion, the enuious man careth not to plucke out one of his own. These wordes (most inuincible prince) I purposed to speake in the presence of your maiesty, before your gard and courtlyke train, and in the vniuerfal hearing of all the people that ech wighte may understand how I not of your maiestie's pretended malice, or mine owne committed faulte, but through the venemous tongues of the enuious fel into the lapse of your displeasure." This moste true oration of Ariobarzanes greatly pleafed the noble Prince, and although he felt himfelf fomwhat touched therwith, and knowing it to bee certayn and true and that in tyme to come the same mighte profite all fortes of people, hee greatlye praifed and exalted him in the prefence of all the Wherefore Ariobarzanes having recouered his lyfe confessed himselfe to bee vanquished and ouercome by the king, who knowing the valoure and fealty of that noble Gentleman, and louing him with harty affection, caused him to come down from the mourning Scaffolde, and to affend the place where he was himfelfe, whom he imbraced and kiffed, in token that al displeasure was remitted: all his auncient offices were restored to him agayne: and for his further advancement, he gaue him the Cittye of Paffagarda where was the olde monument of kinge Cyrus, and made him lieuetenaunt generall of his realmes and dominions, commaundinge euery of his subjects to obay him as himselfe. And fo the kyng rested the honourable father in law to Ariobarzanes. and his louinge fonne by mariage crauing stil in al his enterpryfes, his graue aduyfe and counfell: and there was neuer thing of any importance done, but his liking or difliking was firste demaunded: Ariobarzanes then returned into greater grace and fauour of his fouerayne lord than before, and for his fingular vertue having disperced and broken the aimes and malyce of all his enimies, if before he were curteous and liberal after these so stoute aduentures, he became more then princely in his dedes, and if fometymes he had done one curteous act now he doubled the fame. But futch was his Magnanimitye, fo noble were his indeuors, tempred with fuch measure and equanimity, as the whole worlde clerely might deferne, that not to contend with his fouerayne lorde but to honour and ferue him, therby to expresse the maieflye of his Prince, he employed his goodes and liuing al which the kinge and fortune had bountifully bestowed vppon him: who vntil his dying day famoufly mayntayned himfelfe in the good grace and fauour of his prince, in fuch wyfe as the kyng more clerely then the shining Sunnebeames, knew Ariobarzanes to bee framed of nature for a christalline mirrour of curtesie and liberalitye, and that more easie it was to bereive the fyre of heate, and the Sonne of lighte then despoyle Ariobarzanes of his glorious dedes. Wherfore he ceaffed not continually to honour, exalt and enrych him, that hee might vse the greater liberality, and to fay the trenth, althoughe these two vertues of curtesie and Liberality be commendable in all perfons, without the which a man

truely is not he whereof hee beareth the name yet very fitting and meete for everye ryche and welthie subject, to beware how he doth compare in those noble vertues with Princes and great men, which beyng ryght noble and pereles vppon yearth canne abyde no Comparisons.

THE FIFTH NOUELL.

Lucius one of the garde to Aristotimus the Tyrant of the cittye of Elis, fell in love with a fayre mayden called Micca, the daughter of one Philodemus, and his cruelty done upon her. The stoutnesse also of a noble matron named Megistona in defence of hir husbande and the common wealth from the tyranny of the said Aristotimus: and of other actes done by the subjectes uppon that Tyrant.

You have heard, or as it were in a manner, you have beeholden the right images and courteous conditions of two well conditioned persons mutually ech towards other observed: in the one a Princely mind towards a Noble Gentleman his subiecte: in the other a duetieful obedience of a louing vaffal to his foueraigne Lord and Maister: in both of them the true figure of Liberality in lively orient colours described. Now a contrary plotte, grounded vpon extreame tiranny, is offred to the viewe, done by one Aristotimus and his clawbacks againste his humble subjects of the City of Elis, standyng in Peloponessus, a country of Achaia (which at this tyme we cal Morea.) This Aristotimus of nature was fierce and paffing cruell, who by fauour of king Antigonus was made Tyran of that City: and like a Tyran gouerned his countrye by abuse of his aucthority with newe wronges, and straunge crueltyes vexing and afflicting the poore Cityzens and all hys people: which chaunced not fo much for that of himself he was cruel and tyrannous, as for that his counfellours and chiefe aboute him were barbarous and vicious men, to whom he committed the charge of his kyngdome and the guarde of his person: but amonges all his mischiefes wrongfully done by him which were innumerable, one committed agaynst Philodemus (the same which afterwarde was the cause of the deprivation of his lyfe and kingdome) is specially remembred. This Philodemus had a daughter called Micca, that not onely for hir chaft qualityes and good condicions whiche vertuously flourished in hir but for her extreame and goodly beautye, was in that citty of passing fame and admiration. With this favre maiden one of the Tyrant's guarde called Lucius fel in loue, VOL. II.

if it deserve to be called love, and not the rather, as the end ful wel declared, a most filthy and beastly lust: this Lucius was deerly beloned of Aristotemus, for the fiendish resemblance and wicked nerenesse of his vile and abhominable condicions: and therfore seared and obeied as the Tyrante's owne person: for which cause this Lucius fent one of the yeomen of the kinge's chamber to commaunde Philodemus at an appoynted hour, al excuses set apart, to bring his daughter vnto him. The parentes of the mayden hearing this sodayne and fearful mesuage, constrayned by Tyrante's forse and fatal necessity, after many tears and pittious sighes, began to perfwade their daughter to be contented to goe with him, declaringe vnto her the rigour of the magistrate that had sente for hir the extremety that would be executed, and that ther was no other remedy but to obay. Alas, how fore against their willes, with what trembling gesture, with what horror the good parentes of this tender pufill were affected, to confider the purpose of that dreadefull meffage, all dere fathers and naturall mothers can tell. But this gentle mayden Micca which was of nature floute, and yet vertuously lessoned with fundry good and holsome instructions from hir Infante's Age was Determined rather to Dye, then to fuffer her felfe to be Defloured. This vertuous Mayden fell downe Proftrate at her Father's Feet, and clasping him fast about the Knees, louingly did pray him, and Pitifully befought him, not to fuffer hir to bee haled to fo filthy and vile an office, but rather with the piercing blade of a two edged fword to kill her, that therby she might be rid from the violation of those fleshly and libidinous varlets, faying, that if her virginity were taken from hir, she should line in eternal reproch and shame. As the father and daughter were in these termes, Lucius for the long tariance and delaye, dronke with the Wine of lechery, made impacient and furious, with curfed fpeede posted to the house of Philodemus, and finding the maiden proftrate at her father's feete weeping, her head in his lappe with taunting voice and threatning woordes commanded prefently without longer delay she should ryse and go with him: She refusing his hasty request, and crying out for Father's help, who (God wot) durst not resist, stoode still and would not goe: Lucius feeing hir refusal ful of furie and proude disdaine, began furiously

to hale hir by the garments, vpon whose struggling he tare hir kirtle and furnitures of hir head and shoulders, that hir alablaster necke and bosome appeared naked, and without compassion tare and whipte hir flesh on euery side, as the bloud ranne downe, beating that tendre flesh of hirs with manifold and greuous blowes. O vile tirant, more wood and fauage than the defert beaft or mountaine Tigre: could cruelty be fo deepely rooted in the hart of man which by nature is affected with reason's instinct, as without pity to lay handes, and violently to hurt the tendre body of a harmleffe Maidee? Can fuch inhumanity harbor in any that beareth aboute him the shape of man? But what did this martyred maiden for all this force? Did she yeld to violence, or rendre hir self to the disposition of this mercilesse man? No surely. But with so great ftoutnesse of mind, she suffred those impressed wounds, that no one word founding of forrow, or womanly shriech was heard to found from hir delicate mouth: howbeit the pore father and miferable mother at that rueful and lamentable fight, moued with inward grief and natural pity, cried out aloude. But when they fawe that neyther playnt nor fayre speech coulde deliuer their Daughter out of the hands of that cruell monster, they began with open cryes and horrible exclamation to implore helpe and fuccour at the handes of the immortall Gods, thinking that they were vnworthely plaged and tormented. Then the proud and most barbarous wretch, moued and disquieted by cholers rage and fume of chafinge Wyne, fodaynly catched the most constant virgin by the havre of the head, and in her father's Lap did cut her white and tender throte. O detestable fact, right worthy iust reuenge. But what did this vnfaythfull and cruell Tyrant Aristotimus, when by the bluftering bruit of people's rage he heard of this vengeable murder, not only he shewed himselfe contented with the fact, but had him in greater regard than before, and towards them which made complaint hereof, greater cruelty and mischyese was done and executed. For in open streat, lyke beastes in the Shambles, they were cut and hewed in peeces, which seemed to murmur at thys bloudy and vnlawfull act: the rest were banished and expelled the cytty. Eight hundred of these exiled persons sled into Etolia (a prouince adioyninge to Epirus, which now is called

Albania.) Those people so banished out of theyr country, made inftant fute to Aristotimus to suffer Wyues and chyldren to repayre to them: but theyr fuite was in vayne, their peticions and fupplycations feemed to be made to the deafe, and dispersed into the wyndes: notwithstandinge, within few dayes after, he caufed by found of trumpet to be openly proclaymed, that it should be lawful for the wynes and chyldren of the banished to passe wyth their baggage and furniture to theyr husbands in Ætolia. This Proclamation was exceeding joyfull to al the women whose husbands were exiled, which at the least by common report were the numbre of 6 hundreds: and for more credite of that Proclamation, the wicked Tyrant did ordayne, that al the company should depart vpon a prefixed day. In the meane time, the ioyful Wyues glad to visit their poore husbands, prepared horse and wagon, to cary theyr prouisions. The appoynted day of their departure out of that City being come, all of them affembled at a certayne gate affygned for their repayre, who that time together reforted with their little children in their hands bearing vpon theyr heads theyr garments and furnitures, fome on horseback, and some bestowed in the wagons according as ech of theyr states required: when al things wer in a readinesse to depart, and the gate of the City opened, they began to iffue forth. They wer no foner gone out of the City walles, and had left behind them the foile of theyr natiuity, but the Tyrants guard and Sergeants brake vpon them, and before they were approched they cried out to flay and go no further vpon pain of theyr lines. So the pore amazed women. contrarry to the promise of the Tyrant, wer forced to retire. Which fodain countremaund was forowful and woful vnto the afflicted flock: but there was no remedy, for procede they could not. Then those Termagants and villains caught theyr horse by the bridles, and droue back again theyr wagons, pricking the pore oxen and beafts with theyr speares and Iauelins, that horrible it is to report the tyrany vsed towards man and best, in such wyse as the pore miferable women (God wot) contrary to their defyres, were forced in difpyte of theyr teeth to retourn. Som alack fell of theyr horse wyth theyr little babes in theyr lappes, and were miferably troden under the horsefeete, and ouerrun with the

wheles of the wagons theyr brains and guts gushing out through the weight and comberance of the cariage, and (which was most pitiful) one of them not able to help an other, and much leffe to rescue theyr yong and tendre sucking babes, the vyle sergeants forcing ech wight with theyr staues and weapons maugre theyr defirous mindes to reenter the City. Many died by the conftrained meanes out of hand, many were troden under the horsefeete, and many gasping betwene life and death: but the greatest soart of the litle infants were flaine out of hand, and crusht in pyeces: those whych remayned alvue, were commytted to Pryson, and the goods which they caryed wyth them altogyther feafed vpon by the tyrant. Thys wycked and cruell facte was most intollerable and greeuous vnto the Cytyzens of Elis, wherevppon the holy dames confecrated to the God Bacchus, adorned and garnyshed wyth theyr pryeftly Garments, and bearing in theyr Handes the facred mysteryes of theyr God, as Aristotimus was passyng through the Streete garded with hys Souldyers and Men of Warre, wente in processyon to fynde hym oute. The Sergeauntes for the reuerence of those religious women disclosed, and gaue them place to enter in before the Tyrant. He feing those Women apparelled in that guife, and bearing in their hands the facred Bachanal mysteries, floode stil, and with silence heard what they could say: but when he knew the cause of their approch, and that they wer come to make fute for the poore imprisoned women, fodainly possessed with a diuelish rage, with horrible hurly burly, bitterly reprehended his garrison for suffering those women to come so neare him. Then hee commaunded that they should be expelled from that place without respect, and condemned enery of them (for their prefuming to intreat for fuch caitiue prisoners in II. Talents a piece. After these mischiefs committed by the tyrant, Hellanicus one of the pryncipal and best esteemed persons of the City, although that he was decrepite, and for age very weake and feeble, cared not yet to aduenture any attempt what foeuer, fo it might extend to the deliuery of his countrey from the vnspeakable tyranny of most cruel Aristotimus. To this gray haired person, bicause he was of aged yeares, void of children which were dead, this Tyrant gaue no great hede ne yet emploied any care, thinking that he

was not able to raife any mutine or tumult in the City. In the mean space, the Citizens, which as I have sayd before, were banished into Etolia, practyfed amongs them felves to proue their Fortune, and to feeke al meanes for recouery of their countrey, and the death of Aristotimus: wherfore having levied and affembled certaine bands of Souldiers, they marched forth from their bannished feat, and neuer rested till they had gotten a place hard adioyning to their City, where they might fafely lodge, and with great commodity and aduantage befige the fame, and expel the tyrant As the bannished were incamped in that place, Aristotimus. many citizens of Elis daily fled forth, and ioyned with them, by reason of which auxiliaries and daily affemblies they grew to the ful numbre of an army: Aristotimus certified hereof by his espials was brought into a great chafe and fury, and euen now began to prefage his fall and ruine: but yet meaning to foresee hys best aduantage, went vnto the pryson where the Wyues of the banished were fast inclosed, and bicause he was of a troublesome and tyrannical nature, he concluded with him felf rather to vie and intreat those wives with feare and threates, than with humanity and fayre wordes: being entred the pryfon, hee sharpely and wyth great fiercenesse commanded them to write vnto their husbands that befieged him without, earnestly to perfuade them to give oner theyr attempted warres: "Otherwyfe (fayd he) if ye do not follow the effect of my commaundement, in your own presence I wil first cause cruelly to be slayne al your little Children, tearyng them by piece meale in pieces, and afterwardes I wyll cause you to be whipped and foourged, and fo to dye a most cruel and shamefull death." At which fierce and tyrannycal newes, there was no one woman amongs them that opened theyr mouthes to answer him: the most wycked and vile tyrant seing them to be in fuch filence, charged them vpon theyr liues to answer what they were disposed to doe: but although they durst not speake a word, yet with filence one beholding eche other in the face, fared as though they cared not for hys threats, more ready rather to dye than to obey his comaundement. Megistona then, which was the wife of Timolion, a matrone aswell for hir hufband's nobility as hir owne vertue, in great regard and estimation, and the chief amongs

all the Women, who at his comming in would not rife, but kept her place, nor vouchfafing to doe any reuerence or honor vnto hym, and the like she bad the rest: in this wyse sitting upon the ground with vnlofed tongue and liberty of speach, stoutly she answered the tyrant's demaund in this manner: "If there were in thee, Aristotimus, any manly prudence, wisedome, or good discretion, truly thou wouldest not commaund vs poore imprisoned women to write vnto our husbands, but rather suffer vs to goe vnto them, and vse more moderate wordes and myld behauiour, than wherewith of late thou diddest entertaine vs, by scoffing, mocking, and cruelly dealyng with vs, and oure pore children: and if now thou being voyd of all hope, doeft feeke to perfuade by our meanes likewife to deceive our hufbands, that be come hither to put theyr Lyues in Peryll for our deliveraunce, I affure the thou vainly begilest thy selfe, for wee henceforth do purpose neuer to bee deceyued of the: wee require thee also to thinke and stedfastly believe, that our husbands heades bee not so mutch bewitched with Folly, as defpyfing their Wyves and Chyldren, Neglecting their duetyes towards them, wyll, being in this forwardnesse, abandon their preservation and geeve over the Liberty of theyr countrey: think also that they little esteme or wey the regard of vs, and theyr children, in respect of the great contentation they shal attaine by vnyoking the liberty of theyr countrey from thy pride and intollerable bondage, and which is worst of al, from that tyranny which neuer people felt the like: for if thou were a king as thou art a tyrant, if thou were a Gentleman borne of noble kind as thou arte a flaue, proceding from the deuil, thou wouldest neuer execute thy cursed cruelty against a feble kind, fuch as women be, and wereft thou alone joyned in fingular combat with my valyant and dere beloued husband, thou durst not hand to hand to flew thy face: for commonly it is feene, that the Courtly Ruffyan backed on wyth fuch mates as he is himfelf, careth not what attempt he taketh in hand, and stares with havre vpright, loking as though he would kil the deuyll, but when he is preast to servece of the field, and in order to encountre with his Prynce's foe, vpon the small sway by shocke or push that chaunceth in the fight, he is the first that taketh flyght, and laste that

standeth to the face of hys enniny. Such kind of man art thou, for fo long as our husbands wer farre of, absent fro theyr Country, not able to rid vs from thy thral, thou wroughtest thy malyce then against theyr wyues at home, doyng the greatest cruelty towardes them and theyr fuckyng babes, that euer deuyl could do vpon the damned fort, and now thou feeft them arrived here vnder our country walles, thou flyest and seekest help at women's hands, whose power if it served them according to their willes, would make thee tast the fruit of thy commytted smart." And as she would have proceded further in hir liberal talk, the Caytife tyrant not able to abyde any further speach, troubled beyond measure, prefently commaunded the litle child of hir to be brought before him, as though immediatly he would have killed him, and as his feruants fought him out, the mother espied him playing amongs other children, not knowinge for his fmall stature and lesse yeres, wher he was becom, and calling him by his name, faid vnto him: "My boy, come hither, that first of al thou mayst lose thy life, to feele the proufe and have experience of the cruel tyranny wherin we be, for more grieuous it is to me to fee the ferue against the nobility of thy bloud, than difmembred and torn in pieces before my face." As Megistona stoutly and vnfearfully had spoken those words, the furious and angry tyrant drew forth. his gliftring blade out of the sheath, purposing to have slaine the gentlewoman, had not one Cilon the familiar freend of Aristimus stayd his hand, forbidding him to commit an act fo cruel. This Cilon was a fayned and counterfayt frend of the tyrant, very conversant with other his familiar frends, but hated him with deadly hatred, and was one of them that with Hellanicus had conspired against the tyrant. This gentleman then seeinge Aristotimus wyth fo great fury to waxe wood agaynst Megistona, imbraced him, and fayd, that it was not the part of a gentleman proceeding from a Race righte honourable, by any meanes to imbrue hys Handes in Woman's bloud, but rather the figne and token of a cowardly knyght, wherfore he befought him to ftay his hands. Aristotimus perfuaded by Cilon, appealed his rage, and departed from the imprisoned women. Not long after, a great prodige and wonder appeared in this fort: before supper the tyrant and his wyfe with-

drue themselues into their chamber, and being there, an Egle was feene to foare ouer the tyrante's palace, and being aloft, by little and little to descend, and letting fal from her tallands a huge and great stone vpon the top of that chamber, with clapping wings and flying noyfe foared vp againe, fo far as she was cleane out of fight from them that did behold hir. With the rumor and shouts of those that saw this fight, Aristotimus was appalled, and vnderstanding the circumstance of the chaunce, hee fent for his divine to declare the fignification of this Augurye, which greatly troubled The Southfayer bad him to be of good chere, for that it did portend the great fauour and loue which Iupiter bare vnto him. But the prophet of the City whom the Cytizens had wel tryed and proued to be faithfull and trufty, manifested vnto them the great daunger that hong ouer the tyrant's head, futch as the lyke neuer before. The confederats which had conspired wyth Hellanicus, made great speede to prosecute theyr enterprise, and the next night to kil the tyrant. The very fame night Hellanicus dreamed that he saw his dead fonne to speak vnto him these woords: "What meane you father this long tyme to fleepe, I am one of your fonnes whom Aristotimus hath flayne, know you not that the same day you attempt your enterpryse, you shalbe captaine and prince of your country?" By this vision Hellanicus confirmed, he rose bytimes in the morninge, and exhorted the confpirators that day to execute the benefit of their country. That time Aristotimus was certified how Craterus the Tyrant of another Citty, with a great army, was comming to his ayde agaynst the Banished people of Elis, and that hee was arrived at Olympia, a Citty betweene the mount Offa, and the mountayne Olympus. With whych newes Aristotimus beinge incouraged, thought already that he had put to flight and taken the banished persons, which made him to aduenture hymfelfe abroade wythout Guard or garrison, accompanied only wyth Cilon and one or two of his familiar frendes, the very fame time that the conspiratours were affembled to do the facte. Hellanicus feeing the time fo conuenient to deliuer his beloued countrey by the death of the traiterous tirant, not attending any figne to be genen to his companions (although the fame was concluded vpon) the lufty old man liftinge

vp his handes and eyes vnto the heauens, with cleare and open voyce cried out to his companions and fayd: "Why ftay yee, O my Cityzens and louinge countrymen, in the face of your Citty to finish this good and commendable act?" At whych words, Cilon was the first which with his brandishing blade killed one of those that wayted vpon the Tirant. Thrafibulus then and Lampidus affayled Aristotimus, vpon whose sodayne approche, he sled into the Temple of Iupiter, where hee was murdred with a thousand wounds vpon his body, accordingly as he deferued. He beinge thus deferuedly flayne, his body was drawen vp and down the ftreetes, and proclamation of liberty founded vnto the people: whereunto ech Wyght affembled, amonges whom the imprisoned Women also brake forth, and reioyfed with their countrey deliuerers of that egregious enterprife, by fires and bankets outwardly disclosinge their exceedinge great ioy wythin, and in mid of their mirth the people in great thronges and companies ranne to the Tyrant's Palace, whose Wyfe hearinge the people's noyfe, and certified of her husband's death, inclosed her selfe in a chamber with her two daughters, and knowinge how hatefull fhe was vnto the Citizens, with a fastned cord vpon a beame she hong hir selfe. The chamber dores being broke open, the people viewed the horrible fight of the strangled Lady, wherewithall not mooued they tooke the two tremblinge Daughters of the Tyrant, and caryed them away, purposinge to Rauish and Violate the same, firste to faciate their lust with the spoyle of theire virginitye, and afterwardes to kyll them (those gentlewomen were very beautiful and mariageable) and as they were about to do that shamefull deede, Megistona was told thereof, who accompanied with other Matrons fharpelye rebuked theire furye fayinge: that vncomely it were for them which fought to establishe a civill state, to do such a shameles act as tyrant's rage would scarce permit. Vpon that noble matron's auctoritye and interception, they ceaffed from their filthy fact: and then the woman tooke the virgins out of the people's handes, and brought them into the chamber where there ftrangled mother was. And vnder ftanding howe it was decreede that none of the tyrante's bloude should rest a liue: shee turned her face to the two yonge gentlewomen and fayde: "The chiefest

pleafure which I can do vnto you, resteth in this choyse, that it shall be lauful for eyther of you to chose what kind of death you lift, by knyfe or halter, if you wil to dispatch your liues from the headles peoples greatter fury, vppon whose two whyte and tender bodyes if they do feaze the goddes do knowe and we do feare the cruelty and great abuse which they do mean to vse, I thinke not for defpyte of you, but for the iust revenge of your most cruell father's actes, for the tyrannous life of whom the goddes do thunder downe the boltes of their displeasure, afflicting his nearest blood and beftbeloued wyfe and children, with vengeance poured from heavens." Vppon the fentence of this the fatall ende, the elder mayden of the twayne vnlofed a gyrdle from her middle, and began to tye the fame to hang hir felfe, exhorting her yonger fifter to do the lyke: and in any wife to beware by sparing of her life, to incur the beaftly rage of the monstruous people, which cared not to do ech vile and filthy act, vnworthy theyr estate. The yonger fifter at those wordes, layd handes vpon the fastened corde, and befought hir right earnestly first of al to suffer hir to die. Wherevnto the elder aunswered: "So long as it was lawfull for me to liue, and whiles we led our princely time in our father's courte, and both were free from enimie's danger, all things betwene vs two were common and indifferent, wherefore the gods forbid (that now the gates of death be opened for vs to enter, when with the Ghostes of our deere Parentes our soules amids the infernall fieldes be predefined to raunge and wander) that I shoulde make denyall of thy request. Therfore goe to good fifter mine, and shrink not when thou seeft the vgly face of her, that must confume vs all: but yet (dere fifter) the deadly fight of thee before my felfe, will breede to me the woe and fmart of double death." When she had so sayd, she yelded the coller to her sister, and counfelled hir to place the fame fo neere the necke bone as fhee could, that the fooner the halter's force might ftop her breath. When the vnfearefull yonger fifter was dead, the trembling hands of the dredlesse elder maid vntied the girdle from her neck, couering in comely wife her fenfeleffe corps. Then turning hir felf to Megistona, she humbly prayd hir not to suffer their two bodies to be feene naked, but fo fone as fhe could, to bury them both in one

Earthly graue, referring the frutes of their virginity to the mould wherof they came. When she had spoken these wordes, without any stay or feare at all, with the selfe same corde she strangled herselfe and so sinished her fatal dayes. The guiltlesse death of which two tender maydes there was none of the citizens of Elis (as I suppose) so stonye hearted and voyde of Nature's force, ne yette so wrothe agaynst the tyrant father, but did lament, as wel for the constant stoutenes and manner of their death, as for their maydenlyke behauiour and right honest petitions made to that

noble matrone Megisthona, who afterwardes caused the other dames to bury those two bodyes in one graue. O how happy and famous had these two sisters bene, if they had not bene the daughters of so wicked and cruell a father? But parentes offence or childrens trespas ought not to deface the vertuous dedes of their posterity.

THE SIXTH NOUELL.

The maruaylous courage and ambition of a gentlewoman called Tanaqvil, the Queene and wife of Tarqvinivs Priscus the fift Roman king, with his persuasions and pollicy to hir husbande for his advancement to the kingdom, her lyke encouragement of Servivs Tullivs, wherein also is described the ambition of one of the ii. daughters of Servius Tullius the sixt Roman king, and her cruelty towards her owne natural father: with other accidents chaunced in the new erected common welth of Rome, specially of the last Romane king Tarqvinius Superbus, who with murder atteined the kingdome, with murder maynteined it, and by the murder and insolent lyse of his sonne was with al his progeny banished.

ANCUS MARCIUS beynge the fourthe king (after Romulus the first builder of that Cittye) there came to dwell in Rome one Lucumo, a lufty gentleman, ryche and defirous of honour, who determined to continue his habitation there. The fame Lucumo was the fon of one Demaratus, a Corinthian, that for fedition fled his owne countrye, and dwelt in Hetruria amonge the stocke of the Tarquines: and after he was maried he begat II. fons, one of them was this Lucumo, and the other was called Aruns. Lucumo was heire to his father, for that Aruns died before leauing his wife gret with child, the father not knowing that his daughter in law was with child, gaue nothing in his wil to his nephew: for which cause the child was called Aruns Egerius Lucumo being the sole heire of his father, maried a noble woman named Tanaquil, and bicaufe the Thufcans could not abide to fee a straunger grow to abundance of welth and authoritie, shee despised hir owne countrey rather than she would suffer her husband in any wise to be dishonoured. Wherfore she deuysed to forsake the Tarquinians and to dwel at Rome, where the thoughte among that honourable forte and new erected state that her husband beyng stout and valiant should attayne some place of resiaunce. For she shall be called to remembrance that Tatius the Sabine, Numa borne of the stocke of Curetes and Ancus, broughte forthe by a Sabine woman

all straungers, did rayne and became noble and mightye. Thus ambicion and defire of honoure eafily doth perfwade any deuyle: wherfore carving with them all their substance they repaired to Rome. It chaunced when they came to Ianiculum, as he and his wife were fitting in a Wagon, an Eagle hooueringe hir wings ouer Lucumo, fodenly toke away his Cappe, which don she foared ouer the Wagon with great force, then she retourned againe, as though he had bene commaunded by fome Celeftyall prouidence, and aptly placed his cappe againe vpon his head, and then foared away vp into the element. Tanaquil conceiuing this act to be some Augurie or Prophecie, being cunning in that knowledg (as commonly all the people of Hetruria be) imbraced hir husband and willed him to be of good cheere and to expect great honour. And as they were ymagining and confulting vpon thefe euentes, they entred the City, and when they had gotten a house for him and his family, he was called Tarquinius Priscus. riches and great welth made him a noble man amonges the Romanes, and through his gentle entertainment and curteous behauioure, he wanne the good willes of many, in fo much as his fame and good reporte was bruted through out the pallace. At length he grew in acquaintance with the king him felfe, who feeing his liberall demeanor and duetifull feruice, efteemed him as one of his familiar and nere frends, and both in his warres and also at home he imparted to him the fecrets of his counfell, and having good experience of his wifedom, by his laste will and testament appointed him to be tutor of his children. Ancus raigned xxIIII. yeres, a man in peace and Warre, in pollicy and valiance with any of his predeceffours comparable: his children were very yong, and for that cause Tarquinius was more instant to summon a parliament for creation of a kyng. When the day was come he fente the young children abroade a huntyng, and then ambiciously prefumed to demaunde the kyngdome, beinge the first that euer attempted the like. For the better conciliation and obteynyng of the peoples good will, hee vttered his oration: "I do not prefume to require a straunge or newe thynge: that was neuer before put in practyfe, nor yet am the first, but the third stranger and foraine borne that affected and aspired this government: for which con-

fideration there is no cause why any man ought to muse or maruell more than behoueth. It is euidently knowen that Tatius, not onely being a stranger but also an ennemy, was made king. Numa alfo was made king, being altogether a Forraine and Stranger borne, not through his owne request, but rather voluntarily accited and called thereunto by the Romaynes: but for my parte, after I was able to gouerne my felfe, I repayred to dwell at Rome with my Wyfe, my Children, and all my fubstance, where I have spent the chiefest portion of my lyfe, specially after it was mature and able to execute civile magistery, which I chose rather to bestowe at Rome than at home in myne owne country. I have learned the Romane rites and lawes, aswell sutch as be meete to serue abroade in the warres, as also necessary to be practifed at hoame, at the handes of mine olde maifter Ancus Martius your late king, a mayster right worthy and famous in all poynctes to bee followed: I shewed myselfe an humble and obedient subject to the kyng and in frendship and familiarity toward others, I contended with the kyng himselfe." When he had spoken those woordes, which in deede were very true, with the whole confent of the people he was faluted kynge: and as all thynges fucceeded his Noble request, euen so after hee was settled in hys kyngdome, hee gaue himselfe to amplifie the common wealth: he chose an hundred graue persons, whych he called the Fathers of the lesser Countryes. He warred first with the Latines, and wan the Citty of Appiolas, who bryngyng from thence a greater spoyle and booty than was looked for, ordayned richer and more gorgeous Playes than any of hys predecessours: hee buylded certayne Galleries and other places of affembly aboute the Forum, hee walled the City round about wyth Stone: and as he was doing these things, the Sabines interuented him vpon the fodayne, in fo much as they were paffed the Ryuer of Anienes before the Romane hofte was in a readyneffe: whych was an occasion of great feare and styrre at Rome. In the ende after the battayles were joyned betweene them both, a cruell and blouddy flaughter was commytted, the victorye falling to neyther parte. Then the Romanes fought meanes to renue theyr force, by addyng to theyr armye a further bande of horsemen. Wherefore Tarquinius sent to the Rammenses, Titienses. Luceres: to the bandes that Romulus had conscribed, hee added other new troupes of horsemen, purposing that the same should contynue in memorye of him after hys death: and bicause Romulus dyd the same without aduyse of the Southsayers, one Accius Nauius, the notablest Prophecier in those Dayes, wythstode that constitutyon, affyrmyng that it was not lawfull for him eyther to appoynt a newe order or to alter the olde, except the byrdes and auguries did affent thereunto: wherewith the kynge was displeased and deluding that Sevence, said: "Go to M. Southsayer: tell me now" (quod he) "is it possible to bring that to passe which I have now conceived in my mynd?" "Yea," quod the Southfayer, "if you tel me what it is." "Then" quod Tarquinius, "I have deuised that thou shalte pare thine owne skin with a raser: therfore take thys knyfe and doe as thy byrdes doe portend and fignifie." And as it was reported he pared his owne Skin in deede: in memory whereof an Image of Accius was erected, with his Head couered: after that tyme there was nothing attempted without those auguries. Notwithstandyng, Tarquinius proceeded in hys conflytutyon, and added to the Centurias an other number, for that 1800 horsemen wer conteyned in the three Centuriæ: the latter addytion was called also by the same name, whych afterward were doubled into vi. Centurias. When hys Numbre was thus increased, once again he ioyned battell with the Sabines, who by a notable pollicy recouered a great victory: and bicaufe the Sabines doubled a fresh onset without any order of battell or good aduyfement, they were ouerthrowen, and then constrained to make petition for peace: the City of Collatia, and the Country confining vpon the same, was taken from the Sabines. The Sabine warres beinge in this forte ended, Tarquinius in tryumphaunt maner retourned to Rome. At that time a prodyge and myraculous wonder chaunced to bee feene in the Palace. The head of a Chyld whose name was Seruius Tullius lying a flepe in the palace, was feene to burn. The kyng was brought to fee that myracle: and as one of his feruaunts was going to fetch water to quench the fire, he was stayed by the Queene, who commaunded that the child should not once be touched vntyll he awaked of hymfelfe: and fo foone as hee rofe from fleepe, the fire vanyfled: then flee tooke hir husbande aside, and fayd: "Doe you fee this Chyld whom we have very bafely and negligently brought vp? I affure you fir (fayd she) he wil be the onely fafeguard and defender of this our doubtfull state, and will be the preserver of our household when it is afflycted: wherefore let vs make much of him, that is lyke to be the ornament and a worthy stay to all our famyly." After that they had accompted him amongs the Number of theyr Chyldren, and traded him vp in those Arts, which excyte all good dispositions to aspyre vnto houour, the pleasure of the Gods appeared in shorte tyme: for the child grew to a royall behauior, in fo much, as among all the Romane youth there was none more mete to mary the daughter of Tarquinius. This Seruius Tullius, was the fonne of one Seruius Tullius that was a Captaine of a towne called Corniculum, at the apprehension whereof, it chaunced that the fayd Tullius the father was flayue, leaving his wife great with child: the mother being a captive and bondwoman was delyuered of hir Child at Rome, in the house of Priscus Tarquinius. After Tarquinius had raigned 38 yeres, the yong man began to grow to great honor and estimation, aswell with the kinge himfelfe, as also with the Fathers. Then the Romanes conceived a hateful indignation against the king, for that he being put in trust to be the tutor and gouernour of Ancus children, displaced them from theyr ryght inheritance, and specially for that he himself was a stranger, fearyng also that the kingdome should not return again to the election of themselues, but degenerat and grow into feruile bondage. They also caled to remembrance, that the city continued one hundred yeres after the fublation of Romulus, an intier kingdome within one city, and that it was a shame for them to suffer a bondeman, borne of servile kind, to possesse the fame, and would redounde to their perpetuall ignominie, having the progenie of Ancus aliue, to fuffer the same to be open to strangers, and bondmen: wherefore they determined to defend the griefe of that injury, and to be revenged rather vpon Tarquinius, than upon Seruius. In fine, they committed the execution of that fact to two shepherds chosen out for that purpose: who deuised this pollicy: before the entry into the Palace they fell togyther by the eares, vpon whych fray al the kinge's VOL. II.

officers affembled and repaired thither to know the cause of theyr falling out, when they were parted, they appealed to the king, with fuch exclamation as they were heard to the Palace: beyng called before the king, both of them fell to brauling, and one of them striued of purpose to hinder the tale of the other. The king's fergeant rebuked them, commaunding them to tel theyr tales in order: when they were a lyttle quieted, one of them beginneth to discourse the tale. And as the king was attentife to heare the plaintif, the other tooke vp a hatchet and threw it at the kyng, and leauing thee weapon stickinge in the wound, they conueyed theymfelues out of the dores. Those that wayted vpon the kynge, made haft to releeue him, and the Sergeantes followed to apprehend the malefactors. Wyth that a hurly burly rose amongs the people, euery man maruellinge what the matter shoulde be. Tanaquil commaunded the Palace Gates to be shut, and seeketh remedy to cure her husband, as though some hope fayled of his recoury, she called Seruius before her (whych maried her daughter) and shewed vnto him her dead husband, holdinge him fast by the right hande, shee intreated hym that he would not suffer the death of his father in the law to be vnreuenged, to the intent he might not be ridiculous to the traytours, faying to him further these wordes: "If thou bee a man of thy handes (O Seruius) the kyngdome is thyne and not theirs, which thus cruelly by the handes of other haue committed thys abhominable fact: wherefore put forth thy felf, and the Gods be thy guide: for they did portend this noble head to be the gouernour of this city, at fuch tyme as they circumfused the same with a fire descending from aboue. Let that heauenly flame excite thy courage: be throughly awaked: we beyng straungers sometimes have raigned. Thinke and consider what thou art, and not from whence thou camest: if the strangenesse of the case do affray the, my counsel from time to time shall relieve thee." The cry and stirre of the people being vnmesurable, that one could fearfe heare an other, Tanaquil opened the windowes that had their prospect to the new way (for the king dwelt at the temple of Iupitor Stator) and then spake to them in thys wyse: "Be of good cheere (good people) the king is but amazed with the fodainesse of the stroke, the wound is not very deepe, for even

nowe he is come agayne to hym felfe, and the wounde being opened and dreffed there is good hope of life: I trust within these fewe dayes you shall see hym: in the meane time, I pray you to shewe your obedyence to Seruius Tullius, who is appointed to execute the lawes, and to doe all other affayres in the absence of my husbande." Seruius occupyinge the state and authoritye of the kyng, executed the lawes in some cases, and in other some made the people beleue that he would confult with the king him felfe. The death of the king was concealed and kept close a certaine space til such tyme as Seruius had gathered his force about him. After the death of the kynge was disclosed, Seruius beinge garded with a strong garrison, toke vpon him to be king, not by the confente of the people, but by the will of the Fathers. The children of Ancus vnderstanding that the kyng was aliue, and that Servius power and force was greate, conveyed themselves in exile to Sueffa Pometia: and leafte the children of Tarquinius should attempte lyke enterpryse against him, as the children of Ancus did agaynst Tarquinius, hee maryed 11. of his daughters to Lucius and Aruns the chyldren of Tarquinius. But yet the deuise of man could not breake the necessity of fate and constellatyon, for the hatred conceived in defire of ambicious government, made all thyngs vnstable and vnfaythfull amongs domestical frends: but yet to quyet and pacyfye the prefent tyme, warre was renued with the Veientes, and other Cytyes of Hetruria: wherein the Fortune and valiance of Tullius excelled: for when he had given an ouerthrow to the ennimy, least the people's and fathers good wil should be withdrawne, he retourned to Rome: who then attempted and broughte to passe a notable worke in the common wealth. instituted a certaine yerely taxe and reuenew, to satisfie and discharge all charges fusteined in the time of peace and warre, with fundry other notable lawes and deuises for the defence of the publique state. After that he had mustered the whole numbre of the Citizens in the field called Martins, the fame amounted to LXXX.M. and as Fabius Pictor faith, there were fo many that were able to beare armure. Then the hilles Quirinalis, Viminalis and Exquiliæ, were added to the Citye. He compassed the town round about wyth a vamure, enuironyng the fame with a double trench. He denyded the Romanes into v. bandes called Classes, and into Centurias, whych bee bandes of an hundred men. He also builded a temple to Diana, with the helpe and affistance of the Latine people. Amongs the Sabines there chaunced an Oxe in the House of an Husbande Man to bee broughte forth, of an huge bignesse and maruellous shape (the hornes whereof were placed at the porche of Diana's temple for a monument long time after.) The Southfayers prophecie that where the same Oxe shoulde be first facrificed to Diana, there the Chyefe empire and principall gouernement should remaine: which prophecie came to the knowledge of the Chyefe minister of Diana hir Temple. One of the Sabin's expecting for a day mete to be employed in that facrifice, brought the fayde Oxe to Rome to the Temple of Diana, placing the same before the altar. The chiefe Minister calling to remembrance the oracle, and faw that the greatnesse of that sacrifice should be famous, fpake to the Sabine these wordes: "What dost thou meane (thou impure Straunger) to prepare facrifice to Diana, before thou bee purified and clenfed in the lyuelye Riuer of Tiber? Here belowe in this valley the fayde river doth runne: go get the hence and wash the." The Sabine attached with a religious feare, goeth downe to the River, and while he is washing himselfe a Romane doth offer the Sacrifice, which was right acceptable both to the kyng and his country. The king althoughe that of longe tyme he had raigned, yet vnderstoode that the elder Tarquinius which was maried to one of his daughters, did bragg and report eftsones that his father in law obteined the gouernment and kingdom without the confent of the people: wherfore the king through his lyberalyty by dyuyding the conquest atchyeued of the Ennymye amongs the common people, conciliated theyr fauor and good wils: in fo much as he affirmed that he would raign in despite of them all, and that there was no king at any tyme that raigned with a more generall confent: all whych did nothing diminish the hope and defire of Tarquinius. He had a Brother whose name was Aruns, being of a quiet and gentle disposition. Both they married two of the king's daughters, which were of manners and conditions very vnlike. The yonger daughter being the wife of Aruns, the sharper shrewe, and fiercer of nature, seeing that hir husbande was nothing given or plyant to match with hir vngracious device or ambicious stomack, attempted hir brother, whose condicion was correspondent to hirs, and fayd vnto him, that he was a Man in deede, and one worthy to be accompted to be borne and proceede of the bloud Royall. Then she began to contemne hir fifter, for that she having such a man to hir husbande, would suffer him to neglect fo meete and just occasion for recourry of the kingdom. Their natures being of one disposition, as commonly one myschyefe procureth an other, al things began to be disquieted throughe the attempt of that vngracious woman. To be shorte, they two deuysed meanes, that Aruns hys Brother, and the Elder Tullia hir fifter were flain: which done, they two maried together. wicked woman ceafed not daylye to animate and prouoke hir husbande from one parricide to an other. And amongs all hir wicked talke and cruel inftigations, fhe vsed these words: "If thou be that man vnto whom I thinke I am maryed, then I wil call the both husband and king: but if thou bee not hee, then the alteratyon is chaunged to the worfe, and cruelty is matched with cowardife. But why doest thou not put thy selfe in a readinesse? Why thou commest not nowe from Corinthe, or from the Hetrurian Tarquines, to atchieue and conquere newe kingdoms as thy father did. The familiar Gods and the Gods of thy countrey, the nobility of thy father, and thy royal bloud, thy stately seate within thine own house, and thy name Tarquinius, do create and make kyng. if in al these occasions thou dost wante stomacke, why dost thou make the whole Citye conceyue a false opinion of thee? Why dost thou not shewe thyselfe to be the sonne of a king? Auoide hence I fay, and go to the Tarquinians, or to Corinth, retire again to thy firste lynage: thou dost rather resemble thy brother's effeminate hart, than the valiant stomacke of thy father." With these wordes and sutch like, she pricked forward hir husbande, and she hir felf could in no wife bee quiet. Then Tarquinius went forth to the fathers of the leffer countries, and called to theyr remembraunce the benefites vnto them by hys father extended. defiring the like to bee shewed and rendered vnto hym, he allured the yonger fort of the City by giftes and other lyberall rewardes. promifing them if he atteined his purpose, more frankly to recompence them. By this meanes the king became odious and offenfiue to the people. Tarquinius feeing his time, guarded with a bande of Men, entred the market place, wherewith the common people were greatly abashed, then he mounted into the palace, and placed himselfe in the royal seate of the same, causing the Fathers to be cited before hym by the haraulde, vnto whom he repeted the petigree of Seruius, and his first entrance into the kingdom. As he was speaking these wordes, Seruius in great haste repayred to the Palace, and findyng Tarquinius sitting in his place, fayd to him these wordes: "Why? what is the matter Tarquinius (quod he?) Howe darest thou be so bolde so long as I am living to call the Fathers, or yet prefume to fit in my feat?" Wherunto Tarquinius fiercely replyed: "That hee poffessed but the roume of his father, which was more mete for a king's sonne and heyre, than for fuche a bondeman as hee was, and that hee had long enough abused his lordes and maisters." Wherwithal a great hurly burly and tumult began to rife by the fautors of both parts, fo that he was like to attaine the Garland, which best could Tarquinius forced to give the laste aduenture, daunce for it. beynge more lufty and stronger than the other, tooke Seruius by the myddle, and caryinge hym oute of the Courte, threwe hym downe the Staires, whyche done, hee caused the Senate to retourne into the Palace. Then the kynge wyth all hys travne of Officers, and other hys feruaunts ranne away, and as they were flying, hee was flayne by those that Tarquinius sent after to pursue hym, in the streete called Cyprius. Tullia vnderstandyng that Seruius hyr father was slayne, she bashed not in hir Wagon to come into the market place before all the affemblye there, called hir husband out of the Court, and boldly was the first that called him king. But being rebuked and commaunded by him to avoid out of that greate throng of people, she retired home agayn, and when she was paste the vpper ende of the faid strete called Cyprius, the wagoner dryuing toward the right hand to the Hill called Exquiliæ, hee stayed the Wagon, and shewed his Ladye the bodye of hyr Father, lyinge starke dead in the streete. In memory of which shamefull and vnnatural fact, long tyme after ther contynued a Monument: for the fame strete was called Vicus Sceleratus. Some report that

she caused the wagon to be dryuen ouer the dead corps of hir father, wyth the bloud of whom and hir husband, hir wagon being contaminated, she presented the same to hir Gods: after which abhominable beginnings, like end enfued. This Seruius Tullius raigned xLIIII. yeres. Then Tarquinius began to raigne, vnto whom Superbus was added for his furname: this wicked fonne in law would not fuffer the dead body of Seruius to be buried. His conscience being pricked with the abhominable gaine of hys kyngdom, fearying also least other might conceive like example, he guarded his person with a band of armed men, executing all thinges wyth force and tyranny, contrary to the aduyse and confents of the Senate and people. He caused the fautors and frendes of Seruius to be put to death, whereby the numbre of the Fathers was diminished, whose places he suffred none other to supply, of purpose to bring that honourable order to contempt. He gouerned the common welth by his own domestical and private Counsel: War, peace, truce, fociety of the Cyties adjoining, he vsed as he lift, without any further affent. The Latines he specially regarded, to the intent that through forreine aide hee might raign in more furety at home, with the chief of which country he ioyned affinity. One Octavius Manilius, a Tufculan born, was the prince and chief ruler of that country, descending from the stock of Vliffes, and the Goddesse Circes, if the same be true, vnto whom Tarquinius gaue his daughter in mariage: by reason wherof he conciliated great alliance and frendes. Tarquinius beinge of great authority among the Latines, appointed them vppon a day to affemble at a woode called Ferentina, there to intreat of matters concerninge both the states. To which place the Latines repaired vpon the breake of the day, but Tarquinius came not thither till the Sunne was fet. During whych time many things were in talke. There was one amonges them called Turnus Herdonius, whych in Tarquinius absence had inueyed vehemently agaynst hym, affirminge that it was no maruell though he was called Superbus by the Romanes. For what prouder mock could be inforced to the Latines, than to make them wayt a whole day for his pleasure. "Dyuers Princes and Noblemen (quod he) that dwel far of, be come according to the appointment, and he which

first allotted the day, is not present. Heereby it most evidently appeareth in what fort he will vse vs if he myghte once attayne the foueraynty. And who doubteth in thys so manyfest apparance, but that he went about to affect the Dominion of the Latines? If the Romanes have had just cause to beleeve him, and if their Kyngdome had ben but gotten and not violently rapt and stolne by parricide, then the Latines mighte also beleeve hym, who being but a straunger to them, had no great cause to beleeue hym. Hys owne subjects do repent the time that ever he bare rule: For fome be flayne and heaped vpon the dead bodies of other, fome be banished, some haue lost their goods: what other frutes than these maye the Latine people expecte and look for? Therefore if they would be ruled, he required euery man to returne home to his own house, and geue no more attendaunce for the day of Counsel, than he doth which first appoincted the same." These wordes and sutch like, this fedicious and desperat man declared: Whose talke Tarquinius internented, and vpon his comming euery man converted him felfe to falute him. Then Tarquinius began to excuse his long tariaunce, for that he was appoynted an arbitrator betwene the father and the fonne, for whose reconciliation he was forced to flay that longe space, and to spend the time of that day. Wherefore he appoynted the next day. The conceit of which excuse Turnus could not kepe fecret, but fayd: that a matter betwene the fatherand the fonne might be ended in few wordes: for if the childe would not be obedient to his father, some mischyef must needes lyght vppon him. Tarquinius vnderstanding these inuections made againste hym by Turnus, immediatly deuyseth meanes to kil him, to the intent he myght inculcate like terror to the Latines, that he did to his owne fubiects. And bicause he was not able to fort his purpose to effect by fecrete malice, he attempted to accuse him of Treason, and suborned (by means of divers of the Citty of Aricia) his owne man whom with gold he had corrupted to bring in a forged accufation, whych was that his maister had prepared in one night a number of men with Munition and weapon to diffroy the Nobility of the Latines, of purpose to recouer the principalitye of the same. This matter began to be suspicious, by reason of the Tumult made the day beefore against Tarquinius, and therefore the people the soner did credit the case. In fine, Turnus was condempned, and therefore a new kind of death deuised for him. Who being laide vpon a Hurdle his face yoward, was throwen into the water of Ferrentina. This execution being done Tarquinius reuoked the Latines to Counfel, wherein he praised them for their Iustice extended vpon Turnus, and then spake these wordes: "I may by an old order and constitution instlye say thus mutch vnto you. The whole nation of the Latines descending from the City of Alba are bounde to observe that truce which the Albanes wyth all their colonies annexing themselues to the Romane Empyre in the tyme of Tullius Hostilius, were firmely obliged to accomplishe. The renouation whereof will nowe conduce more advauntage and vtylity to them al, than euer it did beefore. For throughe this Truce the Latines shall possede and participate parte of the prosperous successe of the Romane people. Better it were in this fort to iovne themselues togither, than to fee Destruction of either Cities, Depopulacions and spoiles of their countries, whych in the time of Ancus (my father then raygnyng) he fuffered. The like also (if you do forsake this offer) ye may flyll expecte and fuffer." The Latines herevnto were foone perswaded, a Day was appointed when the luftiest forte of theyr Countrie should be ready armed at the wood called Ferrentina. Being joyned in order of battel, they marched towardes the Volfciens, and wanne the Citye of Sueffa Pometia, the spoile wherof Tarquinius folde for xL. Talents, imploying the same vpon the Temple of Iupiter. Afterwards he affaulted the Gabinians, and when he faw he coulde not by force obteyne the fame, he furmifed a pollicy. Who feeming to bend him felf wholy ypon the building of the Capitole and to fet afide the affaires of his warres, deuifed with his fonne Sextus, which was the youngest of the three. that he should runne to the Gabinians, and complayne of his father's intollerable crueltye, whych accordingly he did. Who shewinge hymfelfe as a voluntarye exyle, fayd that hys father had conuerted hys tyrannye from other, and began to execute the fame ypon his owne freendes, and that he was also weary of the presence of his owne chyldren going about to remoue hys domesticall conuersants oute of hys house, as he had done the like out of the Court, to the intent hee would leaue no offpring or heyre behinde

him to possesse his kingdome: adding further, that he was escaped euen through the midde of his father's weapons and fury, thincking no place better for his fafegarde and refuge, than to feeke fuccour amongs his ennimies. "And bicaufe (quod he) ye shall not be deceiued, he is euen now preparing of warres against you, and purposeth vpon the fodaine to set vpon you. Now if there be no place of abode for me your humble suppliant amongs you, I must needes wander through Italy, and first I will attempt the Volscians, afterwardes the Æquians and Hernicians, tyll futch tyme as I finde fome Nation willing to defend the poore Chylde from the cruell and wicked furye of the Father: and perchaunce (quod he) ye shall wynne hym that may bee an Instrument and courage vnto you all, to represse that proude kyng and cruell Natyon." The Gabinians delyberating what was best to be done in this case, the young man feemed as though he were offended, and would in al hast depart, and seeke refuge of others, then they curteously interteined him: thys yong man was had in great estimation amongs them, throughe craftye and vaine perfuasions, makyng them belieue that he would conduct their army euen vnder the walles of Rome, with fundry other fained instigations to brynge him felf the more in credit. At length he was chosen captain of theyr warres, and recouered fundry victories for the Gabinians: whereby the foolishe Nation both of the lower and chiefest fort, beleeued that their captayne was fent vnto them by the prouidence of the Gods. He fusteined perill and payne in like fort as the common Souldier did, liberally deuidinge his spoiles and booties amongs them. He was fo well beloued, that hys father Tarquinius at Rome was of no greater authority than hee was among the Gabinians. When he thought that he had recoursed force enough to answer his father's expectation, he sent a post to Rome to know his father's pleafure, although the gods had given him fufficient authority amongs the Gabinians. And bycause Tarquinius was doubtful of the trust and fidelity of the messenger, hee would aunswer nothing by worde of mouth, but carying the messenger into a garden, hard adioyning his house, with a wand which he caried in his hand, he cut of the heads of the highest Poppies that grew in the garden, meaning therby that he shoulde dispatche the

heads of the chiefest and principal in the City. Whervpon the messanger without answere by mouth returned. But by declaryng those fignes and circumstances which his father vsed in the garden Sextus conceiued his meaning. Then like a naturall fonne, following the steppes of his father, he cut of the heads of the Gabinian nobility, wherupon fom ran away, vpou whose departure the goods as wel of them as of other that were put to death were deuided. The state of the Gabinians being in this doubtful case, void of al counfell and fuccour, at length was furrendred to the Romanes. Then Tarquinius concluded peace with the Æquians, and renued a truce with the Thuscanes and wholly bent him felf to the affayres of the City. This Tarquinius was the father of him that rauished the noble Lady Lucretia: the lamentable history whereof, is recited in my former Tome, by the end of which stock, remembred in that history, and begining of the same described in this Nouell, may be gathered, what fruyctes Ambytyon and lothfome lufte bryng forth. For Tarquinius Priscus repairing out of Hetruria, to dwell at Rome, by the ambyeyous wyll of hys wyfe aspired and atchyened the kyngdome, whych was by the fundry deuyce of Tullia, the daughter of Seruius Tullius mainteyned, and by the libidinous defire of Sextus Tarquinius, the fonne of Superbus the 6 Romane kynge ended, and the whole race expelled and euerlastingly banished out of that Citty. So meete an example for those that breath, and longe after the Rightes, titles, and Kyngdomes of other, as may bee read in any Author. For although the Springe appeare very fresh and lusty, of some degenerate grifft planted vpon some auncient flock, yet the fruyct most commonly in taste eateth

fomwhat fower, and the Rellishe in mouth not altogether so pleasaunt, as that whych both in soyle and stocke, is duely planted.

THE SEUENTH NOUELL.

The vnhappy end and fuccesse of the love of King Massinissa, and Queene Sophonisha his wyfe.

If men would have afore confideration of theyr owne doings, before they do attempt the fame, or els premeditate and fludy the scope and successe thereof, I do verely beleeue that a numbre would not cast themselves headlong into so many gulfs of miseryes and calamityes as they do, specially Noblemen, and Prynces, who oftentymes doe exceede in temerity and rashnesse, by lettynge the Raynes of theyr own Lustes, to farre to raunge at large, wherein they deepely Plunge thymfelues to theyr great Preiudice and Dishonour, as teacheth thys goodly hystorie ensuinge, whych declareth that there was a Prynce called Maffinissa, the Sonne of Gala kynge of Maffæzali, (a people of Numidia): who warfaring with the Carthaginians in Spaine agaynst the Romaynes, hauinge first fought honourably agaynst kynge Syphax in Numidia, it chaunced that Gala hys Father dyed, vppon whose death hys Kyngdome was inuaded and occupied by other, wherefore fuftayninge stoutly the furges of advertity combatinge with his Enemyes, fometymes getting part of hys Kyngdome, and fometymes lofinge, and many tymes molestinge both Syphax and the Carthaginians, was in dyners Conflicts lyke to be taken or flayne. Wyth thefe hys trauels, impacient of no payne and trouble, he became very Famous and Renoumed, that amonges the people of Affrica, he acquired the name and title of a valiant and puissant Souldier, and of a pollitique and provident Captain: afterwards he was generally welbeloued of the Souldiers, bicaufe not like the king's fonne or a prince, but as a private fouldier and companion, his converfation and vfuall trade of life was amongs them, calling every man by his propre name, cherishing and esteeming them according to their defert, observing neuerthelesse a certaine comelinesse of a Superiour. This Maffiniffa by meanes of one Syllanus being in Spayne, priuely entred acquaintance and familiarity with that Scipio which afterwardes was furnamed Affricanus, and who in

those dayes with the authoritie of Proconful in that prouince, victoriously subdued the Carthaginians: the same Massinista entred league with the Romanes and inviolably fo long as he lived observed amity with the Romane people, and lefte the same to his children and posteritie as an inheritance. When the Romanes began warres in Affrica, spedily with that power he was able to make, he repaired to his old friend Scipio: within a whyle after Syphax beyng ouerthrowen in battell and taken, Maffiniffa and Lælius were fent to furprise the chief city of that kingdom, which fometimes were king Syphax owne, called Cirta. / In that city remayned Sophonisba, the wyfe of Syphax and daughter to Hafdrubal of Gifcon, who had alvenated hir hufband from the Romanes, being in league with them, and by hir perfuafions went to aide and defend the Carthaginians. Sophonisba perceiving that the ennimies were entred the City of Cirta: and that Massinissa was going towardes the palace, determined to meete him, to proue his gentlenesse and curtesse, whereupon in the middes of his Souldiers thronge, whych were already entred the Palace, she floutly thrust, and bouldlye looked round aboute, to proue if the could efpye by fome fignes and tokens the personage of Masfinissa. She amongs that prease perceeiued one for whose apparel, armure and reuerence don vnto him, femed vnto hir that without doubt the fame was the king: and therefore incontinently kneeled downe before him, and pitiously began to speake in this manner: "For fo mutch (O puissante prince) as felicity and good fortune, but specially the fauour of the Gods immortall have permitted, that thou shouldest recouer thine auncient kingdome descended vnto the by righte and lawfull inheritaunce, and therewithall hast taken and vanquished thine ennimy, and now hast me at thy wyll and pleafure to faue or fpyll, I poore wretched myferable woman brought into bondage from Queenelyke state, whilom leading a delycate life in Princely Courte, accompanyed with a royall traine of beautifull dames, and nowe at thy mercifull disposition, doe humbly appeale to thy mercye and goodnesse, whose Princely maiesty and comfortable aspect, chereth vp my woefull heart to loke for grace, and therefore am bold thus to prefume with most humble voice to implore and crie out, befeechyng thee to reach me

hither thy victorious handes to kiffe and falute." This Lady was a paffing fayre gentlewoman, of flourishing age and comely behauiour, none comparable vnto her within the whole region of Affrica: and so much the more as hyr pleasant grace by amiable gesture of complaint did increase, so much the heart of Massinissa was delyted, who being lufty and of youthly age (according to the nature of the Numides,) was easily intrapped and tangled in the nettes of Loue: whose glutting eyes were neuer ful, nor fiery hart was fatisfied in beholding and wondring at hir most excellent beauty: not foreseeing therefore, or taking heede of the daungerous effect of beautie's snares, his heart being so fiercely kindled with the fwingyng flames of loue, who caufing hir to rife, exorted hir to profecute hir supplication: then she began to procede as foloweth: "If it may be lawfull for me thy pryfoner and bondwoman (O my foueraign lord) to make request, I humbly do befeech thee, by thy royal maiesty, wherein no long time past my husband and I were magnificently placed in so kynglike guise as thou art now, and by that Numidicall name, common vnto thee and my husbande Syphax, and by the fauinge Gods and Patrons of this City, who with better fortune and more joyfull fuccesse do receyue thee into the fame, that expelled Syphax out from thence: it may please thy facred state, to have pity on me. I require no hard and difficult thinge at thy handes, vie thine imperiall gouernement ouer me, futch as law of armes and reason of Warre require: cause me if thou wilt, to pyne in cruel pryson, or do me to futch death with torments, as thou lift to vie, the sharp, fierce and cruel death that any wight can fuffre, or Perillus Bull shall not be dreadfull vnto me, but more deare and acceptable than wonted life in pleasures led: for no death shal bee refused of mee, rather than to be rendred into the proud handes of the most cruell Romanes. Rather had I tast the trust of a native Numidie. borne with me in Affrike foyle, than the faith of straungers kinde: I know full well that thou dost knowe what curtefy a Carthaginian and daughter of Hasdrubal, shal surely looke for at the Romanes hands: whose mind is fearfull of nothing more than of theyr pride and glory intollerable: if thou (my lord) haddest fifters of thine own, or daughters of thy royal bloud brought forth

think that they may chaunce (if fortune frown) to flide into the Pit of aduerse lucke, so well as I am nowe: of that forme Fortune's wheele is made, whych we dayly fee to be vnstable, turninge and dyuers, that now peace and now warre it promifeth, now euill it threatneth, now mirth, now forrow it bringeth, now aduauncinge aloft, now tumbling downe the clymbers up. Let Syphax bee cleare and liuely Example to thee, whych coulde neuer finde any stedfast stay under the Moone's Globe. He was the mightiest and the richest kinge that raigned in Affrica, and now is the most miserable and vnlucky wight that liueth on Land. The Gods graunt that I bee no Prophet or Diuiner of future euill, whose omnipotency I devoutly befeech to fuffer thee and thy posterity in Numidie land and most happyly to raygne. Vouchsafe then to deliuer me from the Romanes thraldome, which if thou bee not able fafely to bryng to paffe, cause death (the ease of al woe) to be inflicted vpon me." In speaking those words, she tooke the kynge's right hande and many times fweetly kiffed the fame. And then her teares turned to pleasant cheare, in sutch wife as not onely the mynde of the armed and victorious Prynce was mooued to mercy, but straungely wrapped in the amorous Nets of the Lady, whereby the victour was fubdued by the vanguyfhed, and the Lord furpryfed of his Captiue, whom with tremblinge voyce thus he aunswered: "Make an end, O Sophonifba, of thy large complaynt, abandon thy conceyued feare, for I wil not onely ridde the from the Romayne handes, but also take thee to my lawfull wyfe (if thou therewyth shalt be content) whereby thou shalte not leade a prisoner's life, but paffe thy youthfull dayes and hoarye age (if gods doe graunt thy life fo long) as Quene vnto a king, and wife vnto a Romane frend." When he had fayd so with weeping teares, he kiffed and imbraced hir. She by the countenaunce, Sygnes, Gestes, and interrupted Woordes, comprehending the Minde of the Numide king to be kindled with feruent loue: the more to inflame the same beemoned her felf with such heavinesse, as the beastly heartes of the Hircane Tygres would have bene made gentle and dispoiled of al fiercenesse, yf they had beheld her: and againe she fel downe at hys feete, kiffinge the armed Sabbatons vppon the fame, and bedewinge them with hir warme teares. After many

fobbes and infinite fighes, comforted by him, she fayd: "O the the glorie and honor of all the kynges that euer were, bee or shall bee hereafter: O the safest aide of Carthage mine vnhappy countrey without defert, and now the prefent and most terrible aftonishment: if my hard fortune and distresse after so great ruine might have bene relieued, what greater fauour, what thing in all my life, coulde chaunce more fortunate, vnto me, than to bee called wife of thee? O, I bleffed aboue all other women to haue a man so noble and famous to husband. O mine aduenturous and most happy ruine. O my moste fortunate misery, that such a glorious and incomparable mariage was prepared for me: but bicause the Gods be so contrary vnto me, and the due ende of my life approcheth (my deare foueraygne lorde) to kindle againe in me, my hope half dead, or rather confumed and spent, bicause I fee myfelf wrapped in a state, that in vayne against the pleafures of the Gods, I go about to molest thee: a greate gift (and to say truthe) a right great good turne, I make accompte to have received of thee, if mine owne death I should procure by thee, that dyinge by thy means or with thy handes, (whych were more acceptable,) I should escape the feare of the Romaynes thral and subjection, and this foule deliuered of the fame, should streight passe into the Elyfian fieldes. The final fcope of this my humble plaint, is to ryd me from the hands of the Romanes, whose thraldom to fuffer I had rather die. The other benefit which thou dost frankly offer to me pore wretch, I dare not defire, mutch leffe require the fame, bicause the present state of my mishap dareth not presume so high. But for this thy pity and compassion ioined with louing regard and mind toward me, mightye Ioue with al the other Gods reward and bleffe thy gotten kingdom in long raign, enlarging the fame with more ample bounds to thine eternal renoum and praise: and I do not only render humble thanks for this thy kynd and louing enterteinment, but also yeld my felf thine own, fo long as lyfe gouerneth this caitif corps of mine." Thefe words wer pronounced with fuch effect, as Maffiniffa was not able for pity to hold his teares, which watred fo his comely form, as the dew therof foaked into his tender heart, and not able a long time to speake, at last thus hee fayd: "Gyue ouer (O my quene)

these cares and thoughts, dry vp thy cries and plaints, make an end of all these dolorous sutes, and reioyce, that frowarde Fortune hath changed hir mind: the Gods no doubt with better fuccesse, wil perfourm the rest of thy liuing dais. Thou shalt henceforth remain my Quene and wife, for pledg whereof the facred Godheads I cal to witnesse. But if perchaunce (which the thundring mighty God aboue forbid) that I shalbe forced to render thee the Romanes prisoner, be well affured, that on liue they shall not possesse the." For credit and accomplishment of this promisse, and in signe of his affured faith, he reached his right hand to Sophonisba, and led hir into the inner lodging of the king's Palace, wher afterward Massinissa with himself considering how he might perform hys promised faith, vexed and troubled with a thousand cogitations, seing in a maner his manifest ouerthrow and ruine at hand, prouoked with mad and temerarious loue, the very fame day in open presence he toke hir to wife, folemnizing that mariage, which afterwardes bred vnto hym great vexation and trouble, meanynge by the fame to haue dyscharged Sophonisba from the Romanes rule and But when Lælius was come and hearde tell thereof, hee fretted and chafed, and wyth threatnynge Wordes commaunded Massinissa to send his new maried wife (as the booty and pray of the Romanes) together wyth Syphax, to their captaine Scipio. Notwithstanding, vanquished with the supplications and teares of Massinissa, referring the matter wholy to the judgement of Scipio, he dispatched Syphax with the other prisoners and bootie, to the Romane campe, and he himself remained with Masfinissa for the recouerie of other places of the kingdome, minding not to returne before the whole prouince were brought vnder the Romane fubication. In the meane time Lælius gaue intelligence vnto Scipio, of the successe of Massinissa his mariage: who knowing the fame to be fo hastilye celebrated, was maruellouslye offended and troubled in Minde, mutche maruellynge that Maffinissa woulde make sutch posthast before the comming of Lælius. Yea and upon the very first day of his entrie into Cirta, that hee would confummate that vnaduifed wedding: and the greater was Scipio his displeasure towards Massinissa, for that the loue which he had conceived of that woman, was vnfemely and dishonest,

wondering not a little that he could not find out fome Lady within the region of Spain of femblable beauty and comlinesse, to please and content his honest and commendable intent: wherfore he iudged Massinissa his fact to be done out of time, to the preiudice and great decay of his honor and estimation. Howbeit like a wife and prudent personage he dissembled his conceived gryefe, expecting occasion for remedye of the same. Now the time was come that Lælius and Maffinissa were sent for to the Campe. But to declare the teares and lamentable talke, the great mone and fighes vttered betwene this new maried couple, time would want, and tediousnesse would ouercome the Reader. He had scarce lven with his beloued two or thre Nyghts, but Lælius (to their great grief and forow) claymed hir to bee hys pryfoner. Wherfore verye forowfull and penfiue hee departed, and retourned to the Campe. Scipio in honourable wyfe accepted him, and openly before his Captaines and men of warre, gaue thanks to Lælius and him, for theyr proweffe and notable exploites. Afterwards fending for him vnto his Tent, he faid vnto him: "I do suppose (my dere frend Maffinissa) that the vertue and beneuolence which you faw in me did first of all prouoke you, to transfrete the straits, to visite me in Spaine, wherein the good will of my valiaunt frend Syllanus did not a little auaile, to follicite and procure amity betwene vs. And the fame afterwards inducing your constant minde, to retire into Affrica, committed both your felfe and all your goods into my hands and keeping. But I well pondering the quality of that vertue whych moued you thereunto, you beinge of Affrica, and I of Europa, you a Numidian borne, and I a Latine and Romane, of divers customes and language different, thought that the temperance and abstinence from venerial pleasures which you have fene to bee in me, and experience therof wel tried and proued, (for the which I render vnto the immortal Gods most humble thankes) would or ought to have moved you to follow mine example, being vertues which aboue all other I doe most esteme and cherish. For he that well marketh the rare giftes and excellent benefits wherwith dame Nature hath arraied you, would thinke that ther should be no lacke of diligence and trauell to fubdue and ouercome the carnall appetytes of temporal beauty: which had it bene applied to the rare giftes of nature planted in you, had made you a personage to the posterity very famous and renoumed. Confider wel my present time of youth, full of courage and youthly lust, which contrary to that natural race I ftay and prohibite. No delicate beauty, no voluptuous delectation, no feminine flattery, can intice my youth and state to the perils and daungers whereunto that heedeleffe age is most prone and fubiect. By which prohibition of amorous passions, temperatly raigned and gouerned, the tamer and fubduer of those pasfions, clofing his breaft from lasciulous imaginations, and stopping his eares from the Syrenes, and Marmaydes, of that fexe and kinde, getteth greater glorye and fame, than wee haue gotten by our victory agaynst Syphax. Hanniball the greatest ennimy that euer we Romanes felt, the stoutest gentleman and captain without peere, through the delites and imbracements of women effeminated, is no more the manlike and notable emperor that hee was wont to be. The great exploits and enterprises which valyantly you haue done in Numidia, when I was farre from you, your care, readinesse, animosity, your strength and valor, your expedition and bold attemptes, with all the refte of your noble vertues worthy of immortal praise, I might and could perticulerly recite, but to commend and extol them my heart and minde shall neuer be fatisfied, by renouacion wherof I should rather give occafion of blushing, than my felfe could be contented to let them fleepe in filence. Syphax as you know is taken prisoner by the valyance of our men of warre, by reason whereof, him selfe, his wife, his kingdome, hys campe, landes, cities, and inhabitants, and briefly all that which was king Syphax, is the pray and spoile to the Romane people, and the king and his wife, albeit she was no Citizen of Carthage, and hir father, although no captayn of our ennimies, yet we muste fend them to Rome, there to leave them at the pleasure and disposition of the Romane Senate and people. Doe you not know that Sophonisba with her toyes and flatteries did alienat and withdraw king Syphax from our amitie and friendthip, and made hym to enter force of armes against vs? Be you ignoraunt that she, full of rancor and malice aganyst the Romane people, endeuoured to fet al Affrica against vs, and now by her

fayre inticementes hath gayned and wonne you, not I fay our ennemy, but an ennymy fo farre as shee can, with her cruell Inchauntments? What Damage and hurt haue lyghted vppon dyuers Monarches and Prynces through fugred Lippes and Venemous Woordes, I wyll not fpend tyme to recite. With that prouocations and conjured charmes shee hath already bewitched your good nature, I wyl not now imagine, but referre the fame to the deepe confideration of youre wifdome. Wherefore Maffinissa, as you have bene a Conquerer over great nations and provinces, be now a conquerer of your own mind and appetites, the victorie whereof deferueth greater prayfe than the conquest of the whole world. Take heede I fay, that you blot not your good qualities and conditions, with the fpots of dishonor and pusillanimitye. Obscure not that fame which hitherto is advaunced aboue the Regyon of the glytterynge Starres. Let not thys vyce of Femynine Flatterye spoyle the defertes of Noble Chyualrye, and vtterly deface those merytes with greater ignomynie than the cause of that offence is worthye of difprayfe." Maffinissa hearynge these egree and sharpe rebukes, not onely blushed for Shame, but bytterly Weepinge, fayde: that hys poore prisoner and wyfe was at the commaundement of Scipio. Notwithstanding, so instantly as Teares coulde fuffer hym to fpeak, he befoughte hym, that if it were possible, hee woulde gyne him leaue to observe hys faythe foolishlye affured, bicause hee had made an othe to Sophonisba that with life shee shoulde not bee delynered to the Handes of the Romanes. And after other talke betweene them, Massinissa retired to hys pauylyon, where alone wyth manifolde fighes, and most bytter teares and plaintes, vttered wyth futch honlinges and outcryes, as they were hearde by those whych stoode neare hande, hee rested al the daye bewailynge hys presente state: the most part of the nyghte also hee spent with lyke heauynesse, and debating in hys mind vpon diners thoughts and deuifes, more confused and amazed than before, hee could by no meanes take reft: fomtimes he thought to flee and passe the straights commonly called the Pillers of Hercules, from thence to faile to the Fortunate Islandes with his wife: then agayne hee thoughte with hir to escape to Carthage, and in ayde of that City to ferue agaynst the Romanes, somtimes hee proposed by fworde, poylon, halter, or fom fuch meanes to end his life and finish his dolorous days. Many times hee was at pointe by prepared knife and fworde to pierce his heart, and yet stayed the same, not for feare of death, but for preferuation of his fame and honor. Thus thys wretched and miferable louer burned and confumed in loue: toffing and tumbling him felfe vppon his bedde, not able to find comfort to ease his payne, thus began to say: "O Sophonisba, my deare beloued wyfe, O the life and comfort of my life, O the deynty repast of my ioy and quiet, what shall become of vs? Alas and out alas I crye, that I shall see no more thine incomparable beauty, thy furpaffyng comely face, those golden lockes, those glistering eyes which a thousand times have darkned and obscured the rayes and beames of the Sunne it felf: Alas I fay, that I can no longer be fuffred to heare the pleasaunt harmonye of thy voice whose sweetenesse is able to force Iupiter himselfe to mitigate his rage when with lightning Thunderbolts and stormie claps in his greatest furie he meaneth to plague the earth. Ah that it is not lawfull any more for me to throw these vnhappy armes about thy tender neck, whose whitenesse of face entermingled with femely rudds, excelleth the Morning Rofes, which by fweete nightly dewes doe fproute and budde. The Gods graunt that I doe not long remaine on line without thy fweete haunt and company, which can no longer draw forth this breathing ghoste of myne, than can a Bodye lyue wythoute like Breathe in it. Graunt (O Myghty Iupiter) that one graue may close vs twaine to liue among the ghostes and shadowes that be already past this world for like right louing fitts, if intent of life be ment to mee without thy fellowship and delectable presence. And who (O good God) shal be more blisful amongs the Elysian fields, wandryng amids the spirites and ghostes of departed soules, than I, if there we two may lette and stalke amonge the shadowed friths and forests huge, besette with Mirtle trees, odoriferous and fweete? that there we may at large recount and fing the sweete and sower pangs of those our passed loues without anye stay or let at all: that there I say we may remembre things already done, reiovcing for delights and fighing for the paines. There shall no harde hearted Scipio bee found, there shal no marble minded captain rest, which have not had regard of Loue's toyes, ne yet haue pitied bitter payns, by hauing no experience what is the force of loue. He then with ouer cruell wordes shall not goe aboute to persuade me to forsake thee, or to deliuer thee into the Romanes handes, to incurre miferable and most cruell bondage: he shal there neuer checke me for the feruent loue I beare thee: we shal there abide without suspition of him or any other: they can not seperate vs, they be not able to deuide our fweetest companye. I would the Gods aboue had graunted me the benefite, that hee had neuer arrived into Affrica, but had still remayned in Sicilia, in Italy or Spayne. But what stand I vpon these termes, O I fole and beast? what meanes my drousie head to dreame futch fanfies? if he hadde not passed ouer into Affrica, and made war against kinge Syphax, how should I have ever seene my faire Sophonifba, whose beauty farre surmounteth eche other wight, whose comelines is withoute peere, whose grace inspeakable, whose maners rare and incomparable, and whose other qualities generally disparcled throughoute dame Nature's mould by speach of man can not bee described? If Scipio had not transfraited the feas to arrive in Affrike foile, how should I, (O onely hope and last refuge of my desires) have knowen thee, neither should I have bene thy feere, ne yet my wife thou shouldest haue ben, but great had ben thy gaine and loffe not much, neuer shouldest thou haue felt the present painfull state, wherein thou art, thy life (whereof most worthy no doubt thou art) shoulde not have lien in ballance poize, or refted in doubtfull plight, which now in choyfe of enimies thrall thou maift prolong, or elfe in Romanes handes a praye or spoile by captiue state. But I befeech the gods to preuent the choyce to be a Romane pryfoner. And who can thinke that Scipio euer ment to graunt me the life of one, and goeth about to fpoile me of the fame? Did not he give me the pardon of one, when he fent me to befiege the City of Cirta, where I found fayre Sophonifba which is my Life? A straunge kinde of pardon, by giuing me a pardon to dispossesse me of the same. Who ever hard tel of fuch a pardon? So much as if he faid to me, thus: 'Massinissa, go take the paine to cause the city yeld, and ransack it by force, and I wil pardon thee thy lyfe. And not wyth the onely benefit, but with Cræfus goods I wil inrich thee, and make thee owner of

the happy foyle of Arrabia, and when I have fo done and rafed the walles by myne indeuor, wherein myne onely lyfe and iov did rest, at my retourne for guerdone of that Noble fact, in steede of lyfe hee choppeth of my head, and for fayre promyfe of golden mountes, hee strips me naked, and makes mee a Romane slaue: accordynge to whych cafe and flate he deales wyth me. For what auailes my Lyfe, if in gryefe and forrowes gulffe I drown the pleasures of the same? Doth not he berieue my life and bredes my death by dividing me from my fayre Sophonisba? Ah Caitife wretch, what lucke haue I, that neither storme nor whirle Wynde could fende him home to Italian shore, or set him packing to Sicile land? what ment cruell Scipio, when fo fone as Syphax was taken, he did not streight way dispatch him to Rome, to present the glorious fight of the Numidian king to the Romane people? If Scipio had not beene here, thou Sophonisba frankly hadst bene mine: for at Lælias hands I could have found some grace: but furely if Scipio did once fee Sophonifba, and reclined his eyes to viewe hir pereleffe beauty, I doubt not but he would be moued to have compassion vpon hir and me, and would judge hir worthy not onelye to be queene of Numidia but of all the prouince befides. But what, do I make this good accompt? The common prouerbe fayth, that he which counteth before his hoste, must recken twice: and fo perhaps may be my lot: for what know I if Scipio did wel view hir, whether himfelfe would be inamored of hir or not, and so utterly depriue me of that Iewel? He is a man no doubt as others be, and it is impossible me think, but that the hardnesse of his heart must bow to the view of such a noble beauty. But (beast as I am) what mean these wordes? what follies doe I vaunt by finging to the deafe, and teaching of the blynd? O wretch, wretch, nay more than myferable Wretch. Marke the words of Scipio, he demaundeth Sophonisba, as a thing belonging vnto him, for which cause he sayeth that she is the pray and part of the Romane spoile: but what shall I do? shal I gyue hir vnto hym? He wyll haue hir, hee conftraynes me, he exhortes mee, hee prayes mee, but I know full well wherevnto those intreaties tend, and vnder the Graffe what lurking Serpent lieth. Shal I then put into his hands mine own Sophonisba? But before I so

doe, the armipotent God aboue, with his flashing fires and flamming brands shall thunder me downe into the depthe of Hell. The gapyng ground receive my corps, before I yeld to that request, the trampling steedes of sauage kinde do teare my members in thousand gobbets, the desert beastes consume my flesh, the rauening gripes and carrain kites pick out my tongue and eyes, before I glutte his rauenous mind with that demaund to break the fayth which by holy othe I have promifed to performe. caitif, but what shall I doe then? it behoueth to obey, and in despite of my teeth to do that which the Romane Emperour commaundeth. Alas, by thinking vpon that straight and needefull lot, I die a thousand deaths: wherfore of euils to chose the least of twaine, and to preserve my plighted faith, O swete Sophonisba, thou must die, and by meanes of thy beloued feere, shalt voyd the yoke of Romanes thral, for fo it pleafeth vnmindeful Ioua to appoynt. The wretched Heauens by cruel fate have throwen their lot, that I of mine owne mischiefe shal be the minister. And so (O life most deere) I shall performe the effecte to kepe the fayth whych last of all before thy face I did confirme." By this speach and maner of talke, the good Prince bewayled his cafe, excogitating by what meanes he myght doe to death the thing which aboue al the world he loued best: at length it came vnto his minde to fende hir a draught of poyfoned drink, which deuise he had no fooner founde, but he was driven into a new kinde of fury, and kindled with difdayne, his braynes were on fire with extreme madnesse, and as though Sophonisba had bene before him. hee talked and raued in Bedlemwyfe: fomtimes with taunts he checked hir to hir teeth, fometimes lamented hir vnfortunate state. fometymes with pawes displayed, he seemed to rampe into hir face, and then agayne into amorous toies his passions drove him forth. When I doe thinke what kinde of a man Maffiniffa was, who in deede was a crowned and most noble king, and who with futch prudence gouerned his new conquered and recourred kingdoms, and fo conftantly perseuered in amity of the Romane people, I pray to God to graunt my frendes and myfelfe alfo, not to enter into fo intricat and louefome Labyrinth, wherein this Noble Prince was tangled, and wyth more temperaunce to gouerne our beloued things. Butretourning agayne to this afflicted gentleman Massinissa. He sent vnto his beloued wyse and Queene a pot of poylon to rid hir of hir life: but yet staying his messenger, he cried out these words: God forbid that I should commit this infamous murder vpon hir whom I most deerely loue, I would rather conuey hir into the extreme partes of the vnknowen fandy Coaste of Libia, where the countrey is full of venomous beasts and crawling poyfoned Serpents, in which we shalbe safe and sure from the danger of cruell and inexorable Scipio, by which meanes he shall neuer see the rare and divine beauty, which the serpents once beholding, will mitigate and affwage their bitter poyfon, and for whose fake they will not annoy ne yet hurt me hir louing husband and companion: wherefore let vs make hast to flee thither, to avoide the bondage and death prepared for vs: and if fo be we be not able to cary with vs gold and filuer, yet shal we not want there some reliefe to maintayn our lives: for better it is to feede on bread and water, then to liue in perpetual thraldome. And liuing with thee (fweete wyfe) what pouerty and beggery am not I able to fustayne? The stormes of exile and penury, I have already fuffred: for beinge driven out of my kingdome many times, I have repayred to obfcure dens and caues, where I have hidden my felfe, and liued in the Wilderneffe among the fauage Beasts. But what meane I thus to say of my selfe, whom no misaduenture can affray or myslyke? But thou deare wyfe whych hast ben trayned vp and nourished amongs the delicacies and bankets of the Court, accompanied wyth traynes of many fayre and noble ladies, living lyke a Queene in al kinde of pleasures and delights: what shall I doe wyth thee? I know thy heart will not suffer thee to follow me, and yet if the same would serue thee, from whence shall I procure present shippinge? Vpon the Sea the Roman fleete beares fwinge, vpon the land Scipio wyth hys Army occupieth euery Coast, and is generall Lord of the field. What then shall I most miserable and vnfortunate caitife do? for whilest I am thus makinge my bitter playnts, the night is past away, day light approcheth, and the bright shining morning begynneth to cleare the earth. And behold yonder commeth the General's messanger for Sophonisba, whom I must eyther deliuer into his hands or

elfe commit her to present slaughter, beinge assured that she had rather make choise to dy, than fall into the Laps of the cruell Romans." Whereupon he determined to fend hir the poylon. and for very forrow fell downe vpon the ground like a man halfe deade. Afterwards being come agayne to him felfe, he curfed the Earth, the Ayre, the Fyre, Heauen, Hell, and all the Gods of the fame, and exclaming in lamentable wyfe he called vnto him one of his most faithfull feruants, who according to the custome of those dayes, alwaies kept poyson in store, and sayde vnto him: "Receyue thys Cuppe of Golde, and deliuer the fame with the poyfon, to Queene Sophonifba now abiding within the City of Cirta, and tel hir that I with greatest good will would fayne haue kept the mariage knot, and the firste fayth whych I plighted vnto hir, but the Lorde of the Fielde, in whose power I am, hath vtterly forbidden the same. I have assayed all possible meanes to preserve hir my Wyfe and Queene at liberty, but he which commaundeth me, hath pronounced fuch hard and cruell fentence, as I am forced to offend my felf, and to be the minister of mine own mis-Thys poyfon I fend hir with fo dolefull Meffage, as my poore hearte (God knoweth) doth only fele the fmart, being the most forowfull present that ever was offred to any fayre Lady. This is the way alone to fane hir from the Romanes handes. Pray hir to confider the worthines of hir father, the dygnity of hir countrey, and the royal maiefly of the II. kings hir husbands, and to do as hir mynd and wil shall fansie best. Get the hence with all possible spede, and lose no tyme to do thys Message: for thou fhalt cary the bane and prefent death of the fairest Ladye that ever Nature framed wythin hir fayrest mould." The servaunt with this commandment did departe, and Maffinissa lyke a Chylde beaten with the rodde, wept and cried. The meffenger being come to the Queene, and giving hir the cup with the poyfon, declared his cruell ambaffage. The Queene took the poyfoned Cuppe, and fayd vnto the meffenger: "Geeue the king thy mayster myne humble thankes, and fay vnto hym, that I receive and Drynke thys Poyfon wyth a wyll fo good, as if hee had commaunded me to enter in Tryumph wyth Laurel Garlande ouer myne ennymyes: for a better gifte a husbande can not gyue to wyfe,

than accomplyshment of affured fayth the funeralles whereof shall bee done with prefent obsequie." And fayinge nothinge else vnto the messenger, shee tooke the Cuppe, and mynglynge well together the poylon wythin, shee vnfearfully quafft it vp: and when she had dronke it shee delyuered the messenger hys Cuppe agayne, and layed hir felfe vpon hir bed, commaunding hir gentlewomen in comely wyfe to couer hir wyth Clothes, and withoute lamentation or Sygne of feminine minde, fhee stoutly waighted for approching death. The Gentlewomen which wayted vpon hir, bewayled the rufull state of their Maystresse, whose plaints and fcriches were heard throughout the palace, whereof the brute and rumor was great. But the good Queene vanquished with the strong force of the poylon, continued not long before she died. The messanger returned these heavie newes vnto Massinissa, who so sorowfully complained the loffe of his beloued wife, in fuch wife as many tymes hee was lyke to kyll hymfelfe, that hys Soule might have accompanied the ghost of hir, whych was beloued of hym aboue all the dearest things of the Worlde. The valyant and wyse capitayne Scipio vnderstanding the newes hereof, to the intente Massinista shoulde not commit any cruelty agaynst hymselfe, or perpetrate other vncomely deede, called hym beefore him, and comforted hym wyth the fweetest wordes he could deuise, and frendly reproued him. The next day in the prefence of al the army hee highly commended him, and rewarded him wyth the kyngdome of Numidia. geuing hym many rych Iewels and treasures, and brought hym in great Estimation amonges the Romaynes: whych the Senate and people of Rome very well approued and confirmed with most ample Priuileges, attributinge vnto hym the title of kynge

of Numidia, and freende of the Romaynes. Sutch was the ende of the vnhappy loue of kynge Massinissa, and of the fayre and lucklesse Queene Sophonisba.

THE EIGHTH NOUELL.

The cruelty of a Kynge of Macedone who forced a gentlewoman called Theoxena, to perfuade hir children to kill and poyfon themfelves: after which fact, she and hir husband Poris ended their lyfe by drowninge.

Byr now we have beegon to treate of the floutnesse of certayne noble Queenes, I wyll not let also to recite the Hystory of a lyke vnfearfull dame of Theffalian land, called Theoxena, of right noble Race, the Daughter of Herodicus Prynce of that Countrey in the tyme that Phillip the Sonne of Demetrius was kynge of Macedone, tolde also by Titus Liuius, as two of the former be. Thys Lady Theoxena, first was a notable example of piety and vertue and afterwardes of rigorous cruelty: for the fayd kyng Philip, havinge through his wickednesse first murdred Herodicus, and by fuccession of time cruelly done to death also the husbands of Theoxena and of Archo hir naturall fifter, vnto eyther of them being Wydowes remayninge a Sonne: afterwardes Archo being maryed agayne to one of the principall of their Countrey named Poris, of him she had many children. But when she was dead, the fayd Lady Theoxena hir fifter, who was of heart more constant and flout than the other, fill refused the second mariage, although fued vnto by many great Lordes and Princes: at length pityinge her nephewes state, for fere they should fall into the handes of fome cruell Stepdame, or that theyr father would not bryng them vp with futch diligence, as tyll that tyme they were, was contented to bee espoused agayne to Poris, (no lawe that time knowen to defend the same) to the intente she might trayne vp hir fifter's children as her owne. That done she began (as if they were hir owne) to intreate and vfe them louingly, with great care and industrie: wherby it manifestly appeared that she was not maried againe to Poris for hir owne commodity and pleafure, but rather for the wealth and gouernement of those hir fister's children. Afterwards Philip king of Macedone, an vnquiet Prince, determininge to make newe warres vpon the Romanes (then through-

out the worlde famous and renouned for theyr good fortune) exiled not onely the chiefe and noble men, but almost al the auncient inhabitants of the Cities along the fea coaste of Thessalia, and theyr whole and entier families into Pæonia afterwards called Emathia, a Countrey farre distant from the sea, giving their voided Cities for the Thracians to inhabite, as most propre and faithful for the Romains warres, which he intended to make: and hearinge also the curffes and maledictions pronounced against him by the banished people, and vniuerfally by all other, thought he was in no good furety, if he caused not likewyse all the sonnes of them, whom a litle before he had flayne, to be put to Death. Wherefore he commaunded them to be taken and holden vnder good gard in prison, not to do them al to be slain at once, but at times now one and then an other, as occasion ferued. Theoxena vnderstanding the edicte of this wicked and cruell king, and wel remembring the death of hir husband, and of him that was husband to hir fifter, knew wel that hir fonne and nephew incontinently should be demaunded, and greatly fearinge the king's wrath, and the rigour of his guard, if once they fell into theyr hands, to defend them from shame and cruelty, fodainly applied hir minde vnto a straunge deuice: for shee durst to saye vnto hir husband their father's face, that soner she would kil them with hir owne handes, if otherwise she coulde not warraunt them, then suffer them to bee at the will and power of kinge Philip. By reason wherof Poris abhorring so execrable cruelty, to comfort his wife and to faue hys Chyldren, promyfed hyr fecretelye to transporte them from thence, and carved them himselfe to certayneof hys faythfull Fryendes at Athens, whych done wythoute longe delaye, hee made as thoughe hee woulde goe from Thessalonica to Aenias, to bee at the Solemnytye of certayne Sacrifices, which yearelye at an appoynted tyme was done wyth greate ceremonies to the honour of Ænêas the founder of that Citty, where fpendinge the time amonges other in folemne bankets, the thrirde watch of the night when every man was a fleepe, as though he would have returned home to his countrey with his wyfe and children, priuely embarked himselfe and them, in a ship hired of purpose to passe into Euboea, and not to retourne to Thessalonica. But his intent was cleane altered and chaunged, for his ship was no fooner under faile, but at that inftant a contrary winde and tempest

rose, that brought him back againe, in despite of their labour, and all the endeuour they were able to doe. And when daye lighte appeared, the king's garrifon descried that shippe, and manned out a boate, to bring in the fame, which fecretly they thoughte was about to escape away, giving them straight charge, that by no meanes they should returne without hir. When the boate drew neare the shippe, Poris bent him felf to encourage the mariners to hoyse vp saile againe, and to make way with their oares into the Sea, if it were possible, to avoide the imminent and present daunger, to faue the life of him felfe, his wife and children: then hee lyfted hys handes vp vnto the heavens to implore the helpe and fuccor of the Gods, which the stoute Gentlewoman Theoxena perceiuing, and manifestly seeing the Daunger wherein they were, callinge to hir minde hir former determinate vengeance which she ment to do, and beholding Poris in his prayers, fhe profecuted hir intente, preparing a poyfoned drink in a cuppe, and made readye naked fwordes: al which bringing forth before the Childrens face, she spake these words: "Death alone must bee the reuenge of your fiely liues, wherunto there be two wayes, poifon or the fworde. Euery of you choose which ye lift to haue: or of whether of them your heart shall make the frankest choice. The king's cruelty and pride you must avoid. Wherfore deare children be of good chere, raife vp your noble courage: ye the elder aged boyes, shew now your felues like men, and take the fword into your handes to pierce your tender hearts: but if the bloudy fmart of that most dreadfull death shal feare and fright your greene and vnripe age, then take the venomed cup, and gulpe by fundry draghtes this poisoned drinke. Be franke and lufty in this your destened Death, sith the violence of Fortune, by Sea, doeth let the lengthning of your life. I craue this requeste of choyse, and let not the same rebound with fearfull refuse of thys my craued hest. Your mother afterwardes shal pass that strayght, whereof she prayeth hir babes to bee the poastes: ye the vaunt currours, and shee, with your louing fire, shall end and finishe Philip's rage bent agaynst vs." When shee had spoken these woordes and sawe the enimies at hand, this couragious dame, the deuifer of the death, egged and prouoked these yong trembling children (not yet wel resolued what to do) with her encharmed woords in futch wyfe, as in the ende, some dranke the poyfon, and

other strake them selues into the body and by hir commaundement were throwen ouer boord, not altogether dead, and fo she set them at liberty by death whom tenderly she had brought vp. Then she imbracing hir husband the companion of hir death, both did voluntarily throw themselues also into the sea: And when the kinge's espials were come aborde the ship, they found the same abandoned of theyr praye. The cruelty of which fact did so move the common people to detestatyon and hatred of the kinge, as a generall curffe was pronounced against him and his children, which heard of the Gods aboue was afterwardes terribly reuenged vpon his stocke and posterity. Thys was the end of good Poris and his frout wyfe Theoxena, who rather then she would fall into the lapse of the king's furie, as hir father Herodicus, and hir other husbande did, chose violently to dye with hir own hands, and to cause hir husband's children and hir owne, to berieue them selues of Lyfe, whych although agaynst the louinge order of naturall course, and therefore that kinde of violence to bee abhorred, as horrible in it felf, yet a declaration of a flout mind, if otherwise she had ben able to reuenge the fame. And what coward heart is that, that dare not vpon fuch extremity, when it feeth the mercilesse ennimy at hand, with shining blade ready bent, to stryke the blowe, that withoute remedye must ridde the same of breath, specially when it beholdeth the tremblyng babe, naturally begotten by hys owne kinde and nature, before the face imploring father's refcue, what dastarde heart dare not to offer himselfe, by fingular fight (thoughe one to twentye) either by desperate hardinesse to auoyd the same, or other anoyance, aduenture what he can? which in Christians is admitted as a comely fight, rather than wyth that Pagane Dame to do the death it felfe. But now returne wee to describe a fact that paffeth al other forced deedes. For Theoxena was compelled in a maner thus to do of meere constraint to eschue the greater torments of a tyrant's rage and thought it better by chosen death to chaunge hir lyfe, than by violent hands of bloudy Butchers to be haled to the flaughter. But thys Hidrufian dame was weary of hir owne life, not for that she seared losse of lyfe, but desperate to think of Fortune's

fickle staye: whych if fortune's darlings would regarde in time, they would foresee theyr slippery holde.

THE NYNTH NOUELL.

A straunge and maruellous vse, which in old time was observed in Hidrvsa, where it was lawfull, with the licence of a magistrate ordayned for that purpose, for every man, and woman that list, to kill them selves.

Bandello amonges the company of hys Nouels, telleth this history: and in his own person speaketh these words. If I should begin to tell those things which I saw in the tyme that I sayled alongs the Leuant feas, very tedious it would be for you to heare, and I in reporting could not tell which way to ende, bicaufe I faw and heard thynges ryght worthy to bee remembred. Notwythstandinge, for fatiffaction of dyners that be my frendes, I will not sticke to But first of all one straunge custome, reherse some of them. whych in the Romayes tyme was vsed in one of the Ilandes of the fea Ægeum, called Hidrusa, in these dayes by the trauaylers called Cea or Zea, and is one of the Ilandes named Ciclades, whilome full of Populous and goodly Cities, as the ruins therof at this day do declare. There was in olde time in that Iland a yery ftraunge lawe and ordynaunce, which many hundred yeares was verye well and perfectly kept and observed. The Law was, that every person inhabitant within the fayd Isle, of what fexe and condition so euer, being throughe age, infirmity, or other accidents, weary of their lyfe, might choose what kind of death that liked them best: howbeit it was prouyded that the partye, before the dooing of the fame, should manifest the cause that moued him therevnto, before the Magistrate elected by the people for that special purpose, which they conflituted because they sawe that divers persons had voluntarily killed themselues vpon trifling occasions and matters of little importance: according to whiche lawe very many Men and Women, hardily with so merry chere went to theyr Death, as if they had gone to some bankette or mariage. It chaunced that Pompeius Magnus the dreadfull Romane, betwene whom and Iulius Cæfar were fought the greatest battailes for superiority that euer were, failing by the Sea Ægeum, arrived at Hidrusa, and there

goynge a land vnderstoode of the inhabitantes the maner of that law and how the fame day a woman of great worship had obteined licence of the Magistrate to poyson hir selfe. Pompeius hearing tell hereof, was driven into great admiration, and thought it very straunge, that a woman which al the dayes of hir life had liued in great honour and estimation, shoulde vpon light cause or occasion poyson her felfe fith it was naturally given to ech breathyng wyght to prolong theyr living dayes with the longest threede that Atropos could draw out of dame Nature's webbe. Wherypon he commaunded the faid matrone to be brought before hym, whose Death for hir vertue was generallye lamented by the whole Countrye. When the gentlewoman was before hym, and had vnderstanding that she was fully resolued and determined to dye, hee began by greate perfuafions to exhort hir, that she should not wilfully cast hir selfe away, vpon consideration that she was of lusty yeares, riche and welbeloued of the whole countrey: and how greate pitye it were but shee shoulde renue hir Mynde and gyue hir selfe still to lyue and remayne, till Natural course dyd ende and finysh hir life: howbeit his graue and earnest persuasion could not divert hir from hir intended purpose. But Pompeius loth to have hir dye, ceassed not styll to profecute hys former talke with newe reasons and stronger arguments. All which shee paciently heard with fixed countenaunce, til at lengthe with cleare voyce and fmiling cheere fhe answered him in this maner: "You be greatly deceyued (my lord Pompeius) if you do beleeue that I wythout very great prouidence and mature aduife goe about to ende my dayes: for I do know and am fully perfuaded, that eche creature naturally craueth the prolongation and lengthninge of lyfe, and fo mutch abhoreth to die, as the defirous to lyue detesteth the poyson whych I haue prepared for confumation of my lyfe. Whereupon as I have diuers times thought, confidered and discoursed with my felfe, and amongs many confiderations oftentimes debated in my minde, there came into the same the instability and fickle change of Fortune, whose whirling wheele neuer ceasseth, ne yet remayneth stedfast. It is dayly seene how she doth exalte and advance some man from the lowest and bottomlesse Pit, even to the top of high Heauens, endowinge him with fo mutch Substaunce as he can VOL. II.

defire. An other that was most happy, honoured in this world lyke a God, vnto whom no goods and welfare were wantinge, who might wel haue bene called in his lyfe, a three times happy and bleffed wyght, fodaynly from his honour and state depriued and made a very poore man and begger. Some man also, that is both riche and lufty, accompanied with a fayre wyfe and goodly Children, lyuinge in great mirth and ioylity, this wicked Lady Fortune, the deuourer of all our contentations, depriueth from the inestimable treasure of health, causeth the fayre Wyse to loue an other better than hir husbande, and with hir venomous Tooth biteth the children, that in short space myserable death catcheth them al within his dreadfull Clouches whereby he is defrauded of those children, whom after his death he purposed to leave for hys Heyres. But what meane I to confume tyme and words in declaration of Fortune's vnfteady ftay, which is more cleare than the beams of the Sunne, of whom dayly a Thousande thousande examples be manifest: all histories be full of theym. The mighty countrey of Græcia doth render ample witneffe wherein fo many excellent men were bred and brought vp: who defirous with their finger to touch the highest heaven, were in a moment throwen downe: and fo many famous Cities, which gouerned numbers of people, now at this present day we see to be thrall and obedient to thy City of Rome. Of these hurtfull and perillous mutations (O noble Pompeius) thy Romane City may be a most cleare glasse and Spectacle, and a multitude of thy noble Citizens in tyme past and prefent, may geeue plentifull witnesse. But to come to the cause of this my death, I fay, that fyndyng myfelf to haue liued thefe many yeares (by what chaunce I can not tell) in very great prosperity, in al which tyme I neuer did fuffer any one myssehappe, but styll from good to better, have passed my time vntil thys daye: nowe fearyng the frownynge of Ladye Fortune's face, and that she will repente hir long continued fauour, I feare, I fay, least the fame Fortune should chaung hir stile, and begynne in the middest of my pleasaunt life to sprinckle hir poysoned bitternesse, and make mee the Receptacle and Quiuer of hir sharpe and noysome Wherefore I am nowe determined by good aduyfe, to rid my felfe from the captivity of hir force, from all hir miffortunes,

and from the noyfom and grieuous infirmities, which miferably be incident to vs mortall Creatures: and beleeue me (Pompeius) that many in theyr aged dayes have left their life with little honour, who had they bene gone in their youth, had dyed Famous for euer. Wherefore (my lord Pompeius) that I may not be tedious vnto thee, or hinder thyne affayres by long discourse, I besech thee to geeue me leaue to follow my deliberate disposition, that frankely and freely I may be vnburdened of all daunger: for the longer the life doth grow, to the greater annoysaunce and daunger it is fubiect." When she had so fayd, to the great admiration and compassion of all those which were present, with tremblinge handes and fearefull cheare, the quaffed a great Cup of poyfoned drynke, the which she brought with hir for that purpose, and within a while after dyed. This was the straunge vse, and order obserued in Hidrusa. Which good counsel of the Dame had the noble and valiaunt captayne followed, no doubt he would have bin contented to have bin brought to order: and then he had not loft that bloudy battel atchieued agaynst hym by Iulius Cæsar at Pharsalia in Ægypt. Then hee had not fustayned so many overthrowes as he did, then had hee not ben forsaken of his frendes, and in the ende endured a death so miserable. And for so mutch as for the most part hitherto we have intreated of many Tragicall and bloudy chaunces, respyring now from those, let vs a little touch some medicinable remedies for love, fome lessons for government

and obedience, some treaties of amorous Dames, and hauty
Gestes of Prynces, Queenes and other persons, to
variate the chaungeable diet, wherewyth dyners
bee affected, rellishinge their Stomackes
wyth some more pleasaunt Digestions
than they have tasted.

THE TENTH NOUELL.

The dishonest Loue of Favstina the Empresse, and with what remedy the same love was removed and taken away.

TRUE and most holy is the sentence, that the Lady, Gentlewoman, or other wyght of Female kinde, of what degree or condition foeuer she be, be she fayre, fowle, or ylfanoured, cannot be endued with a more precious Pearle or Iewell, than is the neate and pure vertue of honesty: which is of sutch valour, that it alone without other vertue; is able to render her that gliftereth in her attire, most famous and excellent. Be she more beautiful than Helena, be she mightier than the Amazon, better learned than Sappho, rycher than Flora, more louinge than Queene Dido, or more noble than the best Empresse and Queene of the worlde, or be she full of any other vertue, if she want the name of chast, shee is not worthy so mutch as to beare the title of honour, nor to be entertayned in honest company. Yee shall peruse hereafter an history of a Counteffe of Celant, that was a paffing fayre Dame, fingularly adorned with Nature's gifts. She was fayre, pleafaunt, amiable, comely, and perchaunce not altogether barrayne of good erudition and learninge: she could play upon the instruments, fing, daunce, make and compose witty, and amorous Sonets, and the more her company was frequented, the more amiable and gracious the fame was esteemed. But bicause she was unshamfast and lesse chaste, she was voyde of honest regarde. Sutch as bee dishonest, do not onely hurt themselues, but gieue cause to the common people to mutter and grudge at their parentes education, at their husbands gouernment and institution of their Children, causing them most commonly to leade a discontented and heavy lyfe. Thinke you that Augustus Cæsar (albeit he was a victorious Emperour, and led a triumphant raygne) lived a contented life when he faw the two Iuliæ, one of them his daughter, the other his Niece, to vse them felues like common strumpets, constrained through their fhameful acts to pin, and close vp himselfe, shunning the conuerfation of men, and once in minde to cut his Daughter's Vaynes

to let out hir Lusty blond? Was not he wont (the teares trickling downe his Princely Face) to fay, that better it was neuer to have children and to be deade without them, than to have a fruteful wife and children fo difordred? He termed his Daughter to be a Carrion lumpe of fleshe, full of stenche and filthinesse. But if I lift to speake of women of this age, from noble to vnnoble, from an Emperor's Daughter to a Ploughman's modder, whose lives do frame after Iulia hir lore, my pen to the stumpes would weare, and my hande be wearied with writing. And so likewise it would of numbres no doubt in these dayes that follow the trace of Lucrece line, that hufwifely and chaftly contriue the day and nightes in pure and Godly exercife. But of the naughty forte to speake, (leaning to voyde offence, futch as do flourish in our time) I will not conceale the Empresse Messalina, that was Wyse to the emperour Claudius, not only vnworthy of Empresse degree, but of the title of Woman: who being abused by many, at length arrived to futch abhominable luft, as not contented with dayly adulterous life, would refort to the common stewes, where the russians and publike harlots haunted, for little hire, and there for vilest price with eche flaue did humble herselfe: and at night not satisfied. but weared, returned home to hir Palace, not ashamed to disclose hir felfe to any that lift to looke vpon hir: and for victory of that beaftly game, contended with her lyke. But not to fay fo mutch of hir as I finde in Plinie his naturall history, in Suetonius, and Cornelius Tacitus, I leaue hir to hir felfe, bycause I haue made promife to remember the dishonest loue for example sake, which I read of Faustina, whose beauty of al Writers is vouched to be most excellent, if excellency of good life had thereunto ben coupled. She was the daughter and wyfe of two holy and vertuous Emperours, the one called Antonius Pius, the other Marcus Antonius. This M. Antonius in all vertuous workes was perfect and Godly, and fingulerly loued his wife Faustina, and although she was infamous to the world, and a Fable to the people, yet he cared not for the fame, futch was the passing loue hee bare vnto hir. Leaue we to speake of hir beaftly behauiour amongs the noble fort, without regard vnto hir most noble husbande, and come wee to treate of a certaine fauage kind of lust she had to one of the

Gladiatores, whych were a certaine fort of Gamsters in Rome, which we terme to be Maisters of defence. She was fo far in lone with this Gladiator, as she could not eat, drink, or slepe, ne take any rest. This Faustina was so vnshamefast, as not regarding hir state, being as I sayde before the daughter and wife of two most worthy Emperors, dysdayned not to submitte her Body to the Basenesse of one of the vilest fort, a Rascal Fencer, and many times would goe to Caieta, a Citie and hauen of Campania, to ioyne hir felfe with the galve flaues there. Hir hufbande which loued her dearely, comfortying his feble louing wyfe fo well as he coulde, caused the best Physicians he could finde, to come vnto hir for recouery of hir health. But all the deuysed physike of the world was not able to cure her, she was so louesicke. In the end knowing by long experience the fauour and loue hir husband bare vnto hir, and knowing that nothing could withdraw his continued minde, she tolde him, that al the torment and payne shee fustained, was for the loue of a gladiator, towards whom hir loue was fo miferably bent, that except she had his company, death was the next medicine for hir difease. The good husband whych beyond measure 'loued his wife, comforted hir with fo louing wordes as he could, and bad hir to bee of good cheare, promifinge hee would prouide remedy. Afterwards confulting with a wife man a Chaldee born, opened vnto him the effect of his wiue's difeafe, and how she was louesicke with sutch a person one of the Gamsters of the City, promising great rewardes if he could by his fecretes ferche out redresse to saue hir life. The Chaldee could tel him none other remedy, but that he must cause the Gladiator to be flaine, and with the bloud of him to anoint the body of the Empresse, not telling vnto hir what the ointment was: which don, that he must goe to naked bed to hir, and do the act of matrimony. Some Historiographers do write, that the Chaldee gaue him counfell, that Faustina should drinke the bloud of the Gladiator, but the most part, that hir body was bathed in the same." But how fo euer it was, it would have cooled the hottest Gentlewoman's stomack in the world, to be anounted with like Salue. To conclud the Gladiator was flayne and the medicine made and applied to the Pacient, and the Emperour lay with the Empresse,

and begat hir with childe. And immediatly she forgot the Gladiator, neuer after that tyme remembring him. If this medicine were applied to our carnall louinge dames (which God defend) they would not onely follow Faustina in forgetfulnes, but also would mislike hir Phisike: and not greatly regard the counsell of futch doctours. By meanes of this medicine and copulation was the Emperour Commodus borne, who rather resembled the Gladiator than his Father: in whose breast rested a storehouse of mischyese and vyce, as Herodian and other Wryters plentifully do wryte.

THE ELEUENTH NOUELL.

Chera hid a treasure: Elisa going about to hang her selfe, and tying the halter about a beame found that treasure, and in place thereof left the halter. Philene the daughter of Chera going for that treasure, and busily searching for the same, found the halter, wherewithal for dispayre she would have hanged hir selfe, but forbidden by Elisa, who by chaunce espied hir, she was restored to part of hir losse, leading afterwards a happy and prosperous lyfe.

FORTUNE, the Lady Regent and Gouernesse of man's lyfe, so altreth and chaungeth the state thereof, as many times we see the noble borne from that great mighty port, wherein they be, debased so farre, as either infamously their lyfe is spent in the hungry lap of Dame Penury, or else contriued in the vgly lothsom house of Wantonnesse, the stepdame of all honesty and vertue. Sometimes we marke the vnnoble ladde that was noofeled in the homely countrey caban, or rude civile shoppe, attaine to that whych the onely honorable and gentle do aspire: and he agayne that is ambicious in climbing vp the turning wheele, throwen down beneth the brink of aduerfe luck, whelmed in the ditch and pit of black despaire. We note also sometimes that the carelesse wyght of Fortune's giftes, hath (vnlooked for) his mouth and throte crammed full of promotion and worlde's delights. Such is the maner of hir fickle stay: whereof this History ensuing, gyueth fome intelligence, by remembring the destenied luck of 2 pore fory girles that were left destitute of desired things, both like to fal into despaire, and yet both holpen with that they most defired: which in this fort beginneth. In the time that Scipio Affricanus had befieged the City of Carthage, Chera that was a widow (dwellinge there) feeinge the daunger at hand wherein the Citty stoode, and doubtynge the losse and ouerthrowe of the same, and that the honor of the dames and womankinde, coulde vneths be fafe and harmeleffe, determined not to abide the vttermost: and havinge a good quantity of Gold and precious stones, she bestowed the same in a casquet, and hid it vpon one of the beames of hir house,

purposinge when the stir and daunger was past, to retourne to hir house agayne for those hir hidden things. Which done, in the habite of a poore woman with her onely daughter in hir hand that was about 5 or 6 yeares of age, she went out of Carthage, and passed ouer the Seas into Scicilia, where falling sicke, after she had bene there three or foure yeares, at length died. But before shee departed, shee called her Daughter before hir, then about Ten yeares olde, and told hir the place where she had layed hir Casket. And by reason of the victory gotten by Scipio, the city was maruelloufly chaunged, and amongs other things, the houfe of Chera was giuen to a Romane Souldiour that was fo enriched with Nobilyty of Mynd, as hee was poore of Fortune's Goods. Whych Chera vnderstandyng, was forowfull, and doubted of hir thynges secretlye bestowed vppon the beame. Wherevpon she fayd vnto hir daughter, that for fo much as their house was in the possession of an other, she ought to be wife and circumspect in the recourrye of hir hidden goods: and that hir death was the more greuous vnto hir, because she must leaue hir (so yong a maiden) vnprouided of frendes for hir good gouernement. But yet the incouraged hir againe and fayd: that fith necessity approched, she must in ehildyshe age, put on a graue and auncient minde, and beware howe shee bewrayed that casket to any person, for that of purpose fhee referued the knowledge thereof, to hir felf, that it might ferue for hir preferment, and procure hir a hufband worthy of hir felfe. And the maiden demaundinge the value of the fame, shee told hir that it was worth cc. Talentes, and gaue hir in writing the particulars inclosed within the Caskette, and that the lyke bill shee should find within the same, written wyth hir owne Hande, And fo the good woman within a while after dyed, leauyng behynde hir the yong mayden hir daughter, that maruellously lamented the death of hir mother, accordingly as nature taught hir, and ech other reafonable wyght depriued from their dearest friends. The maiden for hir yeres was very wife, and would disclose to none what her mother had fayd, keeping the writing very carefully. Not long after Philene (whych was the maiden's name) fell in loue with a Gentleman of Scicilia of greate reputation and authority, who al bee it he faw hir to be very faire and comely,

yet cared not for hir loue in respect of Maryage, for that hee knewe hir to bee poore, and withoute dowrie mete for a Gentleman, ieftyng and mocking to fee hir fixe hir minde on him, for defyre to have him to hir husbande, that was a personage so noble and rich: which refufall pierced the hearte of the tender maiden, bicause she saw hir selfe forsaken for nothynge else, but for want of goods: whych made hir to think and confider, howe shee myght recouer the riches that hir mother had layed vp in Carthage. It chaunced as she was in this meditation, the daughter of him to whome the House of Chera was given, called Elisa, was likewife enamoured of a noble youg gentleman in Carthage, who bicause Elisa was the daughter of a Souldiour, and not very rich, in like manner laughed and iested at hir loue, no lesse than the other did at Philene. Notwithstanding Elisa attempted al meanes possible to induce the yong man to loue hir, but hir practife and attemptes tended to none effect. And last of all, defirous to have a refolute answere, and thereby vnderstode, that he would rather dye than take hir to Wyfe, she fell into despayre and curssed fortune, and hir fate, that she was not borne riche enough to match wyth hir chosen Gentleman, and that she being poore, must fall in loue wyth futch a personage: whereupon she miserably tormented hir felfe, still bewaylinge hir vnhappy lucke, that shee could not win him to be hir husband, for whych only intent and And this amorous passion incredibly purpose she loued him. growing in hir, the rootes whereof be planted in the restlesse humor of melancholy, and wanting all hope and comforte to stay that Ranke and Rammishe weede, it so increased in her, as shee franticke in raging loue gaue hir felfe ouer to the spoyle of herfelf: and to rid her from the griefe, she determined to kill hir felfe, imagining whych way she might do the same. At length fhe was refolued, with hir father's fword to peerce hir body: but hir heart not feruing hir thereunto, deuised by the halter to end her lyfe, faying thus to herfelfe: "Thys death yet shal do me good, that the cruel man may know that for his fake I haue done this fact: and if his heart be not made of Iron or steele, he can not chose but forrowe and lament, that a poore mayde whych loued him better than hir owne lyfe, hath made futch wretched ende onely for his cruelty." Elifa concludinge vpon this intent, prepared a Halter: and being alone in her house, in the chamber where the Casket lay vpon the beame, placed a stoole vnder the fame, and began to tye the halter about the beame: in doinge whereof, she espied the casket, and reached the same vnto hir, who feeling it to be heavy and weighty, immediatly did open it, and founde the Byll within, which Chera had written with hir owne hand, agreable to that which she had deliuered to hir daughter, wherein were particularly remembred the Iewels and other riches fast closed within the casket. Who disclosing the bagges wherein the gold and Iewels were bound vp, and feeing the great value of the fame, wondred thereat, and joyfull for that fortune, hid the rope which she had prepared for hir death, in the place where she found the casket, and with great gladnesse and mirth went vnto hir father, and shewed him what she had found, whereat the father reioyced no leffe, then his daughter Elifa did, bicause he sawe himselfe thereby to be discharged of his former poore life, and like to proue a man of inestimable wealth and substance; and saw likewife that the poore wench his daughter, by the addicion of those riches, was like to attayne the party whom shee loued. When he had taken forth those bagges and well surveyed the value, to the intent no man might suspect the sodayne mutation of his flate, tooke his daughter with him, and went to Rome, where after he had remayned certayne monethes, hee returned to Carthage, and began very galantly to apparell himselfe, and to keepe a bountifull and liberall house. His table and port was very delicate and Sumptuous, and hys Stable stored wyth many fayre Horsse, in all poynctes sheewinge himselfe very Noble and rich: by which fodayne chaunge of state, the whole Citty beleened that he had brought that wealth from Rome. And bicause it is the common opinion of the vulgar fort, that where there is no riches, there is no nobility, and that they alone make men noble and gentle (a foolyshe Opinion in deede proceedinge from heads that be rash and light) the people markynge that porte and charge kept by the Souldiour, conceyued that he was of fome noble house. And throughout the whole Citty great and solemne honour was done vnto him: whereupon the young Gentleman, with whom Elifa was in loue, began to bee ashamed of himselfe, that he had difdayned the mayden. Whych mayden feeing hir Father's house to be in futch reputation, made fute to her father, that he would procure the Gentleman to bee hir husband. But hir father wylled hir in any wyfe to keepe fecret hir defire, and not to feeme her felfe to bee in loue, and wyfely tolde hir, that more meete it was that she should bee solicited by him, than shee to make fute or request for mariage: alleaginge that the leffe defirous the gentleman had bene of hir, the more deare and better beloued shee shoulde be to hym. And many tymes when hys Daughter was demaunded to Wyfe, he made aunswere that matrimony was a state of no litle importance, as enduring the whole course of Lyfe, and therefore ought well to bee confidered and wayed, before any conclusion were made. But for all these demaundes and aunswers, and all these stops and stayes, the mayden was indowed with an honest dowry, and in the end her louer and she were maried, with fo great pleasure and satisfaction of them both, as they deemed themselues happy. In the meane time while these things were done at Carthage, Philene in Scicilia toke thought how she might recouer her goods geuen to her by her mother, defirous by their meanes also to fort hir earnest and ardent loue to happy fuccesse. And debatinge with her selfe (as we have sayd before) howe she might obtayne them, because the house was in possesfion of an other, thought it to bee agaynst reason and order, that although she had lost hir house, yet hir goods ought to be restored vnto hir, which were hir onely mayntenance and reputation, and the fittest instrument that should conduct her loue to happy ende. And hearinge tell that the Father of Elifa the poffeffor of hir mother's house liued at Carthage in great royalty and magnificence, thought that if by some sleight and pollicie she founde not meanes to enter the house without suspicion, hir attempt would be in vayne: determined therefore to goe to Carthage, and to feeke feruice in that house, counterfaytinge the kynde and habite of a Page. For the confidered, that if the went thither in order and apparell of a mayden, she should incur the perill of her virginity, and fall into the lapse of divers other daungers, purposed then to go thyther in maner of a Page and lacky. And

when she had in that fort furnished hirselfe, she passed the Seas, and arrived at Carthage. And feekinge feruice about the City at length chaunced to be retayned in a house that was next neyghbour to the Souldier, and bicaufe this wench was gentle and of a good disposition, was wel beloued of her maister, who being the frend of Elifa, hir Father many times fent vnto him divers prefents and gifts by Philene, wherevppon she began to be acquainted and familiar with the feruantes of the house, and by her oft repayre thyther viewed and marked euery corner, and vpon a time entred the chamber wherein hir Mother Chera olde hir, that shee had bestowed hir goods, and lookinge vpont the Beames espied by certayne Signes and tokens, one of them to be the same where the Casket lay: and therewithal wel fatisfied and contented, verily supposed that the casket still remayned there, and without further businesse for that time, expected some other season for recourry of the same. In the ende, the good behauiour and diligence of Philene, was fo liked of Elifa, as hir father and she made sute to hir maister to give hir leave to ferue them, who bycause they were his friends, preferred Philene vnto them, and became a page of that house. And one day fecretly repayrynge into the chamber, where the treasure lay mounted vppon a stoole, and fought the beame for the casket: where she found no casket, but in place where that lay, the halter, wherwithal Elifa woulde have strangled hir felf. And searching all the parts of the Chamber and the beames, and finding nothing elfe but the halter, she was surprised with sutch incredible forrowe, as she seemed like a stock, without spiryte, voice or life. Afterwardes, being come againe to hir felfe, shee began pitifully to lament and complayn in this maner: "Ah wretched Philene, vnder what vnluckie figne and planet was thou begotten and borne? wyth what offence were the heavens wroth, when they forced thee to pierce thy mother's wombe? Could I poore creature when I was framed within the moulde of nature, and fed of my mother's fubstance within hir wombe, and afterwards in due time brought forth to light, commit fuch crime, as to prouoke the celestiall impreffions to conspire agaynst my Natiuity, to brynge mine increafed age into fuch wretched state and plighte wherein it is now

wrapped? No, no, my faulte was nothing, it was parent's offence, if any were at all: for many times we fee the innocent babe afflicted for the father's guilt. The Gods do punish the posterity, for fom facrilege or notorious crime committed by progenitors: theyr manner is not to fuffer heynous faultes vnreuenged: their iustice cannot abide such mischief vncorrected for example sake: fo fareth it by me. First my father died, after wardes my Mother a widow was driuen to abandon natiue foyle, and feeke reliefe in forrain land: and leaving that wherwith we were possessed in enimies keping, were forced a fimple life to leade among ftraungers. And my mother, yelding forth hir ghost, made me beleue that shee had hidden great treasures here: and I vnhappy wench thinking to obteine the pray, have wandred in counterfeit kind, and fetcheed many a bitter figh, vntil I came into this place: and the thing I hoped for, which myght have bene the meanes and ende of all my care, is turned to nothyng: a casket transformed into a halter: gold and Iewels into a piece of rope? Is this the mariage dowry (Philene) thou art like to have to match with him whom thou fo derely louest? Is this the knot that shall conjoyne you both in yoke of man and wife? Ah wretch and miserable caitife, the goods thy mother layd vp for thee, for maintenance of thy rest, and safegarde of thine honour, and for the reputation of thy noble house, wherof thou camst, is now berieved from thee: they that kepe this stately house, and beare their lofty port amid the best, haue despoiled thee pore wench of that after which thou didst vainly trauayle. But what remedye now? fith thy wicked lot doth thus fall out, fith thy cruel fate is loth thou shouldest atteine the thing on whych thy mind is bente, and fith thy painfull lyfe can take no ende, make fpede to rid thy felfe from mifery by that meanes which he hath prepared for thee that hath found thy goods: who feeing his good aduenture to be thy bane, his happy pray to bee thy spoyle, hath left in lieu of treasure, a halter, that therwith thou mightest dispatch thy selfe from all thy griefes, and in their vnhappye companye to ceafe thy life, that the lothfom, lengthning of the same might not increase thy further plaints, forowes, anguish and affliction. And in the place where infortunate Philene toke hir beginning, ther the Miserable wretche must finishe that.

which without hir defired gaine no longer can be maynteined. Peraduenture it may come to passe as when thy soule is losed from this mortall charge, it shall stalke by hym, by whom it lineth, and by him also whom she thought to joy in greatest contentation that euer mortall woman did." And thus plaininge and fighing hir il fortune, when she had ended those words she tyed the halter about the beame, where fometimes hir Treasure lay, which beyng done shee put the same about hir necke, sayinge: "O crooked Lady Fortune, that hast thus vnfrendly dealt with thine humble clyent: Ah dispayre, thou vgly wretch and companion of the diffressed that is vnwillinge to leave my haunte vntyll thou playe the Hangman. Ah Dyuell incarnate that goest aboute to hale and plucke the innocent into thy hellish caue. Out vppon the thou deformed hellish dogge, that waitest at the fiery gate to lette them in, which faine would passe an other porte." And as fhee was powrying forth these spitefull wordes, redy to remove the stoole to fetch hir fwynge, the Gods which would not give confent, that the innocent wench should enter that vile and opprobrious death, moued the heart of Elifa, to passe by the place where the was in workynge on her felfe that desperate end: who hearing those moneful plaints vttred after such terrible manner, opened the Chamber doore, and faw that myferable fight: and ignorant of the occasion, moued with pity, ranne and stayed hir from the fact, faying thus vnto hir: "Ah Philene," (whych was the name that fhe had given to hir felfe) "what folie hath bewitched thy mind? What phrenfie hath incharmed thy braine? What harde aduenture hath moued thee in this miferable wife, to ende thy life?" "Ah" (fayd Philene) "fuffer me Elifa, to finish my tormentes: giue me liberty to vnburden myselfe from the bande of cares that do assaile me on euery fide: lette these Helhoundes that stande heare rounde about mee, haue theyr praye for which they gape. Thou moued by compassion, arte come hither to stay mee from the Halter: but in doyng fo, thou doest mee greater wrong, than doeth despayre whych eggeth me therunto. Suffer I fay, that mine afflictions may take fome end, fith cruel fortune willeth it to be fo, or rather vnhappy fate: for fowre death is fweeter in my conceit, than bitter life contriued in sharper fauce than gall or wormwood." Elifa hearing her speake these wordes, sayd: "For so much as thy myshap is such, as onely death is the nearest remedy to depriue thy payne, what wicked chaunce hath induced thee, in this house to finish those thy miseries? What hath prouoked the to futch augury to this our most happy and joyfull family?" "Forced is the partye" (fayd Philene) "fo to doe when destenye hath fo appointed." "What desteny is that?" demaunded Elifa. "Tell mee I befecch thee, perchaunce thou mayft prcuent the same by other remedy than that whereabout thou goest." "No," (answered Philene) "that is impossible, but to fatisfie thy request which so instantly thou crauest of me, I wil tel thee the fumme of al my miserie." In faying so the teares gushed forth hir eyes, and hir voice brake oute into complaints, and thus began to fay: "Ah Elifa, why fhould I feke to prolong my wretched life in this vale of wretchednesse, wherein I have ben so miferably afflicted? my mother pitieng mine estate and seeynge me voyde of frends, and a fatherlesse child vpon hir death bed, disclosed vnto me a treasure which she had hidden vpon this beam whervnto this halter (the best remedy of my misery) is tied: and I making ferch for the fame, in place of that treasure found this halter, ordeined as I suppose (by what missortune I knowe not) for my death: and where I thought among the happy to be the most happy, I see my selfe amongs al vnlucky women to be the most vnfortunate." Elifa hearing hir say so, greatly maruelled and fayd: "Why then I perceive thou art a woman and not a man." "Yea, truly," answered the vnhappy mayden: "A finguler example of extreme misery to all fortes of women." "And why fo?" demaunded Elifa. "Bicaufe" (answered Philene) "that the pestilent planet vnder which I was borne, will haue it to be fo." And then she told hir al that which had chaunced from the time of hir mother's departure out of Carthage, and how she went into Scicilia and recounted vnto hir the loue that she bare to a Scicilian Gentleman, and howe that he disdayning hir for hir pouerty, refused to be hir husband: whervpon to atchieue hir defire as loth to forgoe him, was come in maner of a page to Carthage, to recouer the riches which hir Mother had hidden there, to the intente she might obtaine (if not by other meanes) with som

rich dowrie, the yong Gentleman to husband whom she so dearely loued. And then reenforcing hir complaint, she said: That sith Fortune had despoiled hir of that which might have accomplished hir defire, resting no cause why she should any longer liue, the halter was prepared for hir to end her daies, and to rid hir life from troubles. And therefore she praied hir to be contented, that she might make that end which hir misaduenture and wicked fortune had predestinate. I doubt not but there be many, which understanding that the treasure did belong to Philene, if they had found the like as Elisa did, would not onely not have forbidden hir the Death, but also by speedy meanes have hastened the same, for fo mutch as by that occasion the hidden treasure should have ben out of strife and contention: so greate is the force of couetousnesse in the minde of man. But good Elisa knew ful wel the mutability of Fortune in humaine thinges, for fo mutch as she by feeking death, had fonde the thinge which not onely deliuered hir from the same, but made hir the best contented woman of the worlde. And Philene feekinge hir contentation, in place thereof, and by like occasion, found the thinge that would have ben the instrument of hir death, and moued with very great compassion of the mayden, defired to have better advertisement howe that treafure could belong to her. Then Philene shewing forth hir mother's writing, which particularly remembred the parcels within the casket, and Elisa seeinge the same to be agreeable to the hand wherewith the other was written that was founde in the casket, was affured that all the gold and Iewels which she had found, did belong vnto Philene, and fayd vnto hirfelfe: "The Gods defend that I should prepare the halter for the death of this innocent Wench, whose substaunce hath yelded vnto mee my hart's desire." And comforting the mayden, in the ende she fayd: "Be contented Philene, and giue ouer this thy desperate determination, for both thy lyfe shalbe prolonged, and thy discontented minde appeased, hoping thou shalt receive the comforte thou desirest." And with those words she losed the halter from hir neck, and takinge hir by the hand, brought hir to the place where hir Father and husband were, and did them to vnderstand the force and terms whereunto the fier of loue and desperation had brought that amorous mayden: tellinge them that all the treasure and Iewels which she had found (where she left the halter, and wherewith Philene was minded to hang hir felfe) did by good right and reason belonge to hir: then she did let them se the counterpayne of that bill which was in the casket, in all points agreeable thereunto, declaringe moreouer that verye lyke and reasonable yt were, like curtefie should bee vsed vnto her, as by whom they hadde receyued fo greate honoure and delyghte. Her husband which was a Carthagian borne, very churlishe and conetous, albeit by conferring the writings together, he knewe the matter to be true, and that Philene ought to be the possessor thereof, yet by no meanes would agree vnto hys wyue's request, but fell into a rage, callinge hir Foole and Ideot, and fayinge that hee had rather that shee had bene a Thousande tymes hanged, than he would give hir one peny: and although she had faued hir life, yet she ought to be banished the Citty, for so mutch as the same and all the propertie thereof was brought into the Romane's handes, and amongs the fame hir mother's house, and al hir goods in possession of the victors, and enery part, at their disposition and pleasure. And moreover, for fo mutch as hir mother and shee had departed Carthage, and would not abide the hazarde and extremity of their country as other Citizens did, and having concealed and hidden those riches which ought to have ben brought forth for the common defence of their countrey, and gone out of the Citty as though she had ben a poore simple Woman, poorely therefore she ought to lyue in Scicilia, whyther she was fled. Wherefore he was of opinion, that she in this maner beinge departed when the Citty had greatest neede of hir helpe, was diffranchifed of all the rightes and customes of the countrey, and that like as a straunger can recouer nothinge in that Citty, except he haue the priniledge and Freedome of the same, even so Philene (for the considerations before recited) ought to be compted for a straunger, and not to participate any thinge within the City, accordingly as the lawes forbid. When he had so fayd, he was like by force to expell the forrowfull mayden out of the house. These wordes greatly grieued Philene, who doubted least his father in law would have ioyned with him, and agree vnto hys alleaged reasons, whych seemed to

be of great importaunce and effect: and therefore thought newly to returne to the Halter for remedy of hir griefes; but it otherwife chaunced, for the Father of Elifa, which was a Romane borne, and affected with a Romane minde, and therefore of a Gentle and well disposed nature, knew ful wel, that although the house was given vnto him by the confent of Scipio, and other the Captaynes, yet he knew that their pleasure was not to bestowe on him the treasure hidden in the same, and therefore ought to be restored to the true owner, or else confiscate and properly due to the Romane Eschequer, or common treasure house of the same: and albeit that it was true that hir Mother went out of Carthage, in the time of the Siege, and therefore had forfayted the same, yet he determined to shewe some curtesse vnto the younge mayden, and to be thankfull to fortune, for the benefite which by hir meanes he had receyued, thinkinge that she would be displeased with him, if he with vngratefull minde or dishonourable intent should receyue hir giftes. For in those dayes the Romans highly reuerenced Lady Fortune, and in hir honour had Erected Temples, and Dedicated Aultars, and in prosperous tyme and happy aduentures, they confecrated vowes, and facrifices vnto hir, thinkinge (although superfliciously) that like as from God there proceeded none euil, euen fo from him all goodnesse was deriued: that all felicity and other good happes, whych chaunced vppon the Romane Common wealth, proceeded from Fortune, as the Fountayne and most Principall Occasion, and that they which would not confesse hir force, and be thankful vnto hir Godheade, incurred in the ende hir Difpleasure and Daungers very great and haynous. This Romane then having this opinion, beinge (as I fayd before) of a gentle Disposition woulde at one instant both render thankes to Fortune, and vse curtesie vnto that mayden, by whose riches and goods from lowe degree he was advanced to honourable state. Wherefore turning his Face vnto hir, with louing countenaunce he spake these wordes: "Right gentle damosel, albeit by the reasons alleged by my sonne in law, none of the treasure hidden by thy mother, and founde by my Daughter in thys house, of right doth appertayne to thee, yet I will that thou shalte understande my curtesie, and that thou see how the Romanes

doe more esteeme the nobility of their minde, than all the riches of the world. Therefore that thou mayst enjoy thy loue, I referre vnto thee and to thy disposition all the goods and Iewels that were in the Casket, and contayned in thy writinge. Beholde therefore (caufing the casket to be brought vnto him) all the Iewels and other parcels that were in the fame when they were founde, take fo mutch thereof as thou wilt, and if fo bee thou defire the whole, willingly I render the fame vnto thee, fithens by means of those riches, and the industry of my trafique, I have gayned fo mutch, as havinge gyuen a convenient dowry vnto my daughter, I honorably liue without it." Philene feeing the curtesie of this valiaunt gentleman, gaue him infinite thanks, and then fayd vnto him: "Sir, I for my part dare aske nothinge, well knowinge that if you gene me nothinge, there is no caufe why I shoulde complayne of you, but of my hard and wicked fortune, whych hath offered and giuen that to you, which ought to have bin mine. Wherefore, fith your curtefie is futch, as you refer the whole to mee, I purpose to take nothing, but will that the whole shall bee in your disposition, and give mee what you lift, and that fo gieuen of your liberality, I shal more thankfully receiue, than if debt or duty did constrayne it: and if it shall please you to give me nothing, my heart shal bee so well appeased, for that your curtefie, as rather woulde I chose to liue in the poore estate wherein I am, than be rych with your displeasure." Howbeit, the Romayne intreated Philene to take thereof what fhee thought good: and Philene craued no more than it pleafed hym to gyue. Eyther of them standinge vpon these termes Elifa, brake the strife, who knowinge the force of loue, and the griefes incident to his clients, by hir own harmes, moued to have compassion upon the afflicted, turned towardes hir father, and fayd unto him: "Right louinge father, the contencion betweene Philene and you, is rifen of a matter which came by me. The treasure for which you striue, and committed to the will of Philene, was found by me, whereof if it please you both, I wyll take sutch order, as both you shalbe fatisfied." "I am contented," fayd hir father: "And I likewise," aunswered Philene. Then sayd Eliza: "You father hitherto have had but one Daughter, which

am I, vnto whom like a chylde and louinge daughter I haue bene obedient, and shalbe all the dayes of my lyfe: and I agayne haue received from you futch fatherly education, as your ability and state required. This treasure I found and gaue to you for ease and comfort of vs both: to me it yelded the only delectation of my heart in choyse of husband: to you honour and estimation within thys Citty. Wherefore, fith the principal came from me, and the right resteth in this careful maiden, my desire is, that where before you had but one daughter, you will adopt this mayden for another, and thinke that you have twaine, and that you will intreate Philene in like fort as if shee were my fister: and where this Inheritance and reuenue wherewith now you be poffeffed, and this casket also ought to be onely myne after your decease, for that you have no sonnes, nor other Issue, my defire is that you geue vnto her the halfe, and that you accept hir for your daughter, as I doe meane to take hir for my fifter: and accordingely to vie hir duringe lyfe." With these wordes Elisa imbraced Philene, and louingly dyd kiffe hir, fayinge vnto hir: "For my fifter I entertayn thee Philene." And then shee tooke hir by the hand and gaue hir vnto hir father with these wordes: "Beholde father, your new daughter, whom I befeech you fo hartily to loue as you do Elifa your naturall chylde." The father prayled the curtefie of Elifa, and received Philene for his daughter and was contented wyth the Arbitrament of his Daughter. But Elifa perceyuing hir husband to be somewhat offended therewyth, specially for that the same should be deuided into two partes, which was like to have bene hys wholly before, perfuaded hym by gentle meanes to be content wyth that agreement: and although at the first he could not well brooke the liberality of his wyfe, yet at length viewinge the good behauiour and gentle difposition of Philene, and the contented minde of his father in law, together with the noble nature of his wyfe, and hir wife aduertisement of Fortune's fickle affurance, yelded, and acknowledged Philene for hys kinfwoman. And fo Philene put in poffeffion of the halfe of those goods, whereof she was altogether out of hope, was well fatisfied, and had the Romane for hir father, Elifa for hir fifter, and hir husband for hir kinsman. That valyant

Roman was so careful ouer Philene, as if she had ben his owne daughter, and fo indeuored, as he brought to passe that she obteined hir beloued Scicilian to husbande: who also fent for hym to Carthage, where he continued with his wife in the Romane's house, and loved them both so dearely as though he had ben father to the one, and father in lawe to the other. In this maner thefe two poore wenches attained their two husbands, for having of whom, theyr onely care was for Ryches, and for lacke thereof were dryuen to despayre: and in the ende both (though diversly, and the one more fortunat than the other) recourred riches, and with the fame theyr husbandes, to their heartes fingular joye and contentation. Which lucke I wyshe to all other poore Girles (but not hangyng rype, or louynge in despayre) that bend their mindes on Mariage, and feeke to people by that estate, their countrey common wealth. But leauinge for a time these Tragicall Nouels and heavy chaunces, wee purpose to remember some morall matters right worthy of remembraunce: Letters they bee from a godly Pagane clerk, the famous Philosopher Plutarch, Schoolemaister to an Emperour of no leffe vertue, than hys mayster's Schoole and mynde was fraught with divine Precepts. Wherefore proceede (good Reader) to continue the paynes vpon the readinge of

good Reader) to continue the paynes vpon the readinge of these, so well as thou hast vouchsafed to employ thy time before. They shal no lesse delite thee, if vertue brooke thee, they shal no lesse content thee if duty please thee, than any delightfome thing, whereupon (at any tyme) thou hast employed thy vacaunte tyme.

THE TWELFTH NOUELLE.

LETTERS OF THE EMPEROUR TRAIANE.

Letters of the Philosopher Plutarch to the noble and vertuous Emperour Traiane, and from the Sayd Emperour to Plutarch: the lyke also from the Sayd Emperour to the Senate of Rome. In all which be conteyned godly rules for government of Princes, obedience of Subiects, and their duties to common wealth.

BICAUSE these Letters ensuinge (proceeding from the infallible Schoole of Wisedome, and practised by an apt Scholler of the same, by a noble Emperor that was well trained vp by a famous Philofopher) in myne opinion deserue a place of Recorde amonge our Englishe Volumes, and for the wholfome errudition, ought to Englishmen in english shape to bee described, I have thought good in this place to introduce the fame. And although to fome it shal not peraduenture seeme fit and convenient to mingle holy with prophane, (accordinge to the prouerbe) to intermedle amongs pleafaunt histories, ernest epistles, amid amorous Nouels, learned Letters, yet not to care for report or thought of futch findefaults, I judge them not vnfeemely, the course of those histories. For amid the divine works of Philosophers and Oratours, amongs the pleafaunt paynes of auncient Poets, and the Nouell writers of our time, merry verses so well as morall matters be mingled, wanton bankets fo wel as wife disputations celebrated, tauntinge and iocund Orations fo well as effectuall declamations and perfuafions pronounced. These letters contayne many graue and wholesom documents, fundry vertuous and chosen Institutions for Prynces and Noble men, yea and for futch as beare offyce and preferment in commonwealth from highest title to meanest degree. Theese letters do vouch the reioyce of a Schoolemayster for bringinge vp a Scholler of capacity and aptnesse, to imbrace and Fix in Memory futch leffons as he taught him. These Letters do gratulate and remembre the joy of the disciple for havinge sutch a maister. These letters do pronounce the minde of a vertuous Prince towardes

hys subjects for choyse of him to the empire, and for that they had respect rather to the vertue and condition, than to the nobility or other extreme accident. To be fhort, thefe letters speake and pronounce the very humblenesse and fealty that ought to rest in fubiectes' hearts: with a thousand other excellent sentences of duties. So that if the Emperour Nerua had bin aliue agayne to peruse these letters and Epistles of congratulation betweene the Schoolemayster and Scholler, he would no lesse haue reioysed in Plutarch than king Philip of Macedon did of Aristotle, when hee affirmed himself to be happy, not so much for havinge sutch a fonne as Alexander was, as for that he was borne in futch a time, as had brought Aristotle to be his maister. That good Emperor Nerua, shewed a patern to his successor by his good vertuous lyfe and godly gouernment, which made a fucceffor and a people of no lesse consequence than they were trayned, accordingly as Herodian voucheth, that for the most part the people be wont to imitate the Life of their Prince and foueraygne Lord. If Philip deemed hymfelfe happy and bleffed for having futch a fonne and mayster, then might Nerua terme himselfe threefolde more happy for futch a Nephew and futch a notable Schoolemayster as Plutarch was, who not only by doctrine but by practife proued a paffing good Scholler. Alexander was a good Scholer and for the time wel practifed his maister's Lessons, but afterwards as glory and good hap accompanied his noble disposition, so did he degenerate from former life, and had quite forgotten what he had learned, as the fecond Nouell of this Booke more at large declareth. But Traiane of a toward Scholler, proued futch an Emperour and victor ouer himfelfe, as schoolinge and rulinge were in him miraculous, and furmounting Paragon of piety and vertue: where-

fore not to flay thee from the perufinge of those Letters,
the right image of himselfe: thus beginneth
Plutarch to write vnto his famous
Scholler Traiane.

281

A Letter of the Philosopher Plutarch to the Emperor Traiane, wherein is touched how Gouerners of Common wealths ought to be prodigal in deedes and spare in words.

My most dread soueraygne Lorde, albeit of longe tyme I haue known the modesty of your mynde, yet neyther I nor other liuing man did euer know that you afpired to that, which many men defire, which is to be Emperour of Rome. That man should withdrawe himselfe from honour, it were cleane without the boundes of wysedome: but not to lycence the heart to desire the same, that truely is a worke divine, and not proceedinge of humayne nature. For he doeth indifferently well, that represent the works which his handes be able to do, without flaying upon his owne defires, and for good confideration wee may terme thine Empire to be very happy, fith thou haft fo nobly demeaned thy felfe to deferue the fame without fearch and feekinge industrious pollicy to attayne thereunto. I have known within the city of Rome many great personages, which were not so mutch honored for the offices whych they bare, as they were for the meanes and deuises whereby they fought to be advanced to the fame. May it please you to vnderstand (most excellent Prince) that the honor of a vertuous man doth not confift in the office, which he prefently hath, but rather in the merites that preferred him thereunto: In fuch wife, as it is the office that honoreth the partye, and to the officer there resteth but a painful charge. By meanes wherof, when I remember that I was your gouerner from your youth, and instructed your vertuous mind in letters, I can not chose but very much reioyce, fo well for your foueraigne vertue, as for your maiestie's good fortune, deming it to be a great happinesse vnto me that in my time Rome hath injoyed him to be their fouraigne lord, whom I had in tymes past to be my scholler. The principalities of kyngdomes fome winne by force, and maintayne them by armes, which ought not fo to be in you, nor yet conceiue opinion of your felfe, but rather to thinke that the empire which you gouerne by vniuerfall confent, yee ought to entertayne and rule with general inflice. And therfore if you loue and reuerence the Gods, if you

bee pacient in trauels, warie in daungers, curteous to your people, gentle to straungers, and not couetous of treasure, nor louer of your owne defires: you shall make your fame immortall, and gouern the common wealth in foueraign peace: that you be not a louer of your own defires, I speake it not withoute cause, for there is no worse gouernement than that which is ruled by selfe wyll and private opinion. For as he that governeth a common wealth ought to lyue in feare of al men, even fo mutch more in feare of him felfe, in fo mutch as he may commit greater errour by doinge that which his owne luste commaundeth, than if he were ruled by the counsell of other. Affure you fir, that you can not hurt your felfe, and mutch leffe prejudice vs your subjects, if you do correct your felfe before you chastise others, esteemyng that to bee a ryght good gouernment when you be prodigal in workes, and spare of speache. Assay then to be such a one now, that you do commaunde, as you were when you were commaunded. For otherwise it would lyttle auaile to do things for deserving of the empyre, if afterwards your dedes be contrary to former deferts. To com to honour it is a humane worke, but to conserue honour it is a thing divine. Take hede then (most excellent Traiane) that you do remembre and still revolue in minde, that as you be a Prince fupreme, fo to apply your felf to be a passing ruler. For there is no authority amongs men so high, but that the Gods aboue be judges of their thoughts, and men beneth beholders of their deedes. Wherfore fith prefentlye you are a mighty Prince, your duety is the greater to be good, and leifure leffe to be wycked, than when you were a pryuate Man. For having gotten authority to commaund, your lyberty is the leffe to bee idle: fo that if you bee not futch a one as the common people haue opinion of you, and fuch againe as your maister Plutarch defireth, you shall put your felfe in greate Daunger, and myne Ennymyes wyll feeke meanes to bee reuenged on mee, knowynge wel that for the Scholler's faulte the Mayster Dayly suffreth wronge by slaunderous checke imputed vnto hym (although withoute cause.) And for fo much as I have ben thy maifter, and thou my scholer, thou must indeuour by well doyng, to render me some honour. And lykewyse if thou do euyll, great infamy shall lyght on me, euen as

it did to Seneca for Nero his cause, whose cruelties don in Rome were imputed to his mayster Seneca. The like wronge was done to the Philosopher Chilo, by beyng burdened with the neglygent nouriture of his Scholler Leander. They truely were famous perfonages and greate learned men, in whom the gouernemente of myghty Princes was reposed: notwithstandyng, for not correcting them in their youth, nor teachying them with carefull dylygence, they blotted for euermore theyr renoume, as the cause of the destruction of many common wealthes. And for somuch as my pen spared none in times paste, bee well assured Traiane, that the fame will pardon neither thee or mee in tyme to come: for as wee bee confederate in the fault, even fo we shal be heires of the pain. Thou knowest well what lessons I have taught thee in thy youth. what counfell I have given thee, beeying come to the state of man, and what I have written to thee, fithens thou hast ben Prince, and thou thy felfe art recorde of the wordes which I have spoken to thee in fecrete: in all whych I never perfuaded thyng but that intended to the feruice of the gods, profite of the common wealthe and increase of thy renoume: wherfore, I am right sure, that for anye thing which I have written, fayd, or perfuaded there is no cause I should feare the punishment of the gods, and much lesse the reprochful shame of men, verily beleuing that al which I coulde fay in fecrete, might without reproch be openly published in Rome. Nowe before I toke my pen in hand to write this Letter, I examined my lyfe, to know, if (during the time that I had charge of thee) I dyd or fayd in thy presence any thing that might prouoke thee to euill example. And truely (vnmete for me to fay it) vpon that fearche of my forepassed life, I neuer found my felfe guilty of facte vnmeete a Roman Cytyzen, nor euer spoke woorde vnseemelve for a Phylosoper: by meanes whereof I doe ryght heartely wyshe, thou wouldest remember the good educatyon and instructyon whych thou dyddest learne of mee. I speake not thys, that thou shouldest gratifie me againe with any Benefite, but to the ende thou myghtest serue thy selfe, esteemynge that no greater pleasure there is that can redounde to me, than to heare a good report of thee. Be then well affured that if an Empyre bee bestowed vpon thee, it was not for that thou wer a Citizen of

Rome or a couragious person descended of noble house, rich and mighty, but only bicause vertues did plentifully abounde in thee. I dedicated vnto thee certaine bookes of old and auncient common wealth, which if it please thee to vse, and as at other times I have sayd vnto thee, thou shalte sinde mee to be a proclaimer of thy samous workes, and a chronicler of all thy noble sacts of armes: but if perchaunce thou sollow thine owne aduise, and chaunge thy selfe to bee other than hitherto thou hast ben, presently I inuocate and cry out vpon the immortall Gods, and this Letter shall be wytnesse, that if any hurt do chaunce to thee, or to thine Empire, it is not through the counsell or meanes of thy maister Plutarch. And so farewell most Noble Prynce.

The aunswere of the Emperour Traiane to hys mayster Plutarch.

Cocceius Traiane Emperour of Rome, to the Philosopher Plutarch, fometimes my mayster: falutation and confolation in the Gods of comfort. In Agrippina was deliuered vnto me a letter from thee, whych fo foone as I opened, I knew to be written wyth thine owne hand, and endited with thy wyfedom. So flowing was the fame with goodly woordes and accompanied with graue fentences, an occasion that made mee reade the same twice or thrice, thinking that I faw thee write and heard thee speak, and so welcome was the fame to me, as at that very instant I caused it to be red at my table, yea and made the fame to be fixed at my bed's heade, that thy well meaning vnto me might be generally knowen, how mutch I am bound vnto thee. I esteemed for a good presage the congratulation that the Conful Rutulus did vnto me from thee, touchinge my commyng to the empire: I hope through thy merites, that I shall be a good Emperoure. Thou fayest in thy letter, that thou canste by no meanes beleue that I have given bribes, and vsed meanes to buye myne Empire, as other haue done. For aunswere thereunto I say, that as a man I have defired it, but neuer by folicitation or other meanes attempted it: for I neuer faw wythin the City of Rome any man to bribe for honour, but for the same, some notable infamy chaunced vnto hym, as for example wee may learne of the Good old man Menander, my friende and thy nevghbour, who to be Conful, procured the same by vnlawful meanes, and therfore in the end was banished and died desperately. The greate Caius Cæsar, and Tiberius, Caligula, Cladius, Nero, Galba, Otho Vitelius, and Domitian, fome for usurpyng the Empire, some for tyranny, some for gettyng it by bribes, and fome by other meanes procuryng the fame, lost (by the fufferance of the righteous gods) not onely their honour and goodes, but also they died miserably. When thou dydst reade in thy schole, and I that time an hearer of thy doctrine, many times I hearde thee fay, that we ought to trauel to deferue honour, rather than procure the same, esteemynge it vnlawfull to get honour by meanes vnlawfull. He that is without credite, ought to affay to procure credite. Hee that is with out honour, ought to feeke honour. But the vertuous man hathe no neede of noblenesse, ne hee himselfe, ne yet any other person can berieue him of due honour. Thou knowest wel Plutarch, that the yere past, the office of Conful was gyuen to Torquatus, and the Dictatorship to Fabritius, who were fo vertuous and fo little ambitious as not defyrous to receyue fuch charges, absented themselues, although that in Rome, they might have ben in great estimation, by reason of those offices, and yet neuerthelesse without them they bee prefently esteemed, loued and honoured: and therefore I conceive greater delight in Quintius Lincinatus, in Scipio Affricanus, and good Marcus Portius, for contemning of theyr offices, than for the victories which they atchieued: for victories many times confift in fortune, and the not carying for honorable charge in onely wisedome. Semblably, thou thy selfe art witnesse, that when myn vncle Cocceius Nerua was exiled to Capua, he was more vifited, and better ferued, than when he was at Rome: whereby may bee inferred, that a vertuous man may bee exyled or banished, but honour he shall neuer want. The Emperour Domitian (if you do remember) at the departure of Nerua, made me many offers, and thee many fayre promifes to entertain thee in his house, and to fend mee into Almayne, which thou couldest not abyde, and much leffe confent, deeming it to be greater honour with Nerua to be exiled, than of Domitian to be fauored. I sweare by

the Gods immortall, that when the good olde man Nerua fent me the enfigne of the Empyre, I was vtterly ignorant thereof, and voyd of hope to atteyne the fame: for I was aduertifed from the Senate, that Fuluius fued for it, and that Pamphilius went about to buy it. I knew also that the Conful Dolobella attempted to enioy it: then fith the gods did permit, that I should be Emperour, and that myne vncle Nerua did commaund the fame, the Senate approued it, and the common wealth would have it to be fo: and fith it was the generall confent of all men, and specially your aduyle, I have greate hope that the Gods will be favorable vnto me, and Fortune no ennimie at all: affuring you, that like ioy whych you do faye you had by teachyng me, and feing me now to be Emperour, the lyke I have to thynke that I was your Scholler: and fith that you wyll not call mee from henceforth any other but Soueraygne Lord, I wyll terme you by none other name, than Louyng father. And albeit that I have ben vifited and counfelled by many men fince my commyng to the Empyre, and by thee aboue the rest, whom before all other I wyll beleue, considering that the intent of those which counsell me, is to draw my mynd to theyrs, your letters purportyng nothyng else but mine aduauntage. I doe remember amongs other woordes, which once you spake to Maxentius the Secretary of Domitian, this saying: that they which doe presume to gyue counsell vnto Prynces, oughte to bee free from all passions and affections: for in counsell, where the wyll is most enclined, the mynde is more prompte and ready: that a Prince in all thyngs doe his wyll I prayse not: that he take aduife and counfell of euery man I leffe allowe. That which he ought to doe (as me thinke) is to doe by counfel, forfeeing for al that to what counsel he applieth his mynd: for counsel ought not to be taken of hym whom I doe well loue, but of hym of whom I am well beloued. All this I have wrytten (my mayster Plutarch) to aduertife you that from henceforthe I defire nothing elfe at your handes, but to be holpen with your adulfe in myne affayres, and that you tell me of my committed faults: for if Rome do thinke me to be a defender of their common wealth I make accompte of you to bee an ouerfeer of my life: and therefore if you thinke that I am not thankfull ynough for the good aduyfe, and

holfom warenings that you gyue me: I am to intreate you (myne owne good mayster) not to take it in ill part, for in such cases, the griefe that I conceiue, is not for the good lessons you gyue me, but for the shame that I fayle in following them. The brynging of me vp in thy house, the hearyng of thy lectures, the following of thy doctryne, and liuing vnder thy disciplyne, haue ben truly the pryncipal causes that I am commen to this Empyre. This mutch I fay (mayster) for that it were an vnnatural parte in thee not to affift me to beare that thing, which thou hafte holpen me to gayne and winne: and although that Vespasian was of nature a very good man, yet his greatest profite redounded to him by entertayning of the Philosopher Appolonius. For truelye it is a greater felicity for a Prince to chaunce vpon a good and faythfull man, to be neare about him, than to atchieue a large realme and kingdome. Thou fayest (Plutarch) that thou shalt receive great contentation, from henceforth, if I be fuch a one now as I was before, or at lestwife if I be no worse. I belieue that which thou doest fay, bicause the Emperour Nero, was the first fine yeares of hys empyre good, and the other nine yeares exceedyng euill, in futch wyfe as he grew to be greater in wickednesse, than in dygnity. Notwithstanding, if thou thinke that as it chaunced vnto Nero, fo may happen vnto Traiane, I befech the immortall Gods rather to depriue me of life, than to fuffer me to raigne in Rome: for tyrantes bee they, whych procure dygnytyes and promotyons, to vfe them for delighte and filthye lufte: and good Rulers bee they which feeke them for profite of Common wealthe: and therfore to them whych before they came to those degrees were good, and afterwardes waxed Wycked, greater pity than enuye ought to be attributed, confideryng specyally, that Fortune did not aduaunce them to honour, but to shame and villany: beleue me then (good maister) that sith hitherto I have ben reputed vertuous, I wyl

affay by God's affiftance to afpire to be better, rather than to be worse. And so the Gods preserve thee.

The Letter of the Emperour Traiane to the Senate of Rome, wherein is conteined, that honour ought rather to be deserved than procured.

Coccerus Traiane Emperour of the Romanes, euer Augustus, to our facred Senate health and confolation in the gods of comfort. We beinge aduertifed here at Agrippina of the Deathe of the Emperour Nerua, your foueraigne Lord and my predecessour, and knowing it to be true, that you have wept and bewailed the loffe of a Prince fo noble and ryghteous, we likewife haue felt like forow, for the death of fo notable a father. When children lose a good father, and subjects a good Prynce, eyther they muste dye wyth them, or elfe by teares they must rayse them vp again, for fo much as a good Prince in a common wealth is fo rare, as the Phænix in Arabia. My lord Nerua broughte me out of Spayne to Rome, nourished me vp in youth, caused mee to bee trained in letters and adopted me for his fonne in mine olde age: which graces and benefits truly I can not forget, knowyng that the ingrate man prouoketh the Gods to anger, and men to hatred. The death of a vertuous man is to be lamented of all men, but the death of a good Prince, ought to be extremely mourned: for if a common person die, there is but one dead, but if a god Prynce dye, together with him dieth a whole Realme. I speake this (O ye Fathers) for the rare vertues abounding in myne vncle Nerua: for if the gods were disposed to fell vs the liues of good Prynces already departed, it were but a small ransome to redeeme them with teares: for what gold or fyluer may be fufficient to buie the lyfe of a vertuous man. Truely there woulde be a greate maffe of money gyuen by the Greekes for Alexander, by the Lacedemonians for Lycurgus, by the Romanes for Augustus, and by the Carthaginians for Annibal. But as you knewe the gods having made all thynges mortall, fo haue they referued onely themselues to bee immortall. How eminent and passing the vertue of the good is, and what priviledge the godly have, it may eafily bee knowne: for fo mutch, as honour is carried even to the very graues of the dead, but so it is not to the greate Palaces of the

wycked. The good and vertuous man, without fighte or knowledge we loue, ferue, and aunswer for him: wherein the wycked we cannot beleue what he fayeth, and leffe accepte in good part the thyng whych he doeth for vs. Touchynge the electyon of the Empyre, it was done by Nerua, it was demaunded by the people, approued by you, and accepted by me. prayt the immortall Goddes that it may bee lyked of theyr godheades: for to small purpose analyeth the election of Prynces, if the gods doe not confyrme it: and therefore a man maye knowe hym whych is chosen by the Gods, from him that is elected by men, for the one shal declyne and fal, the other shalbe vpholden and preferued: the choyfe of man fo vaynely exalted doth bowe and abase, but that which is planted by the gods, although it bee toffed to and fro wyth feuerall Wynds, and receiveth greate aduersitye, and boweth a lyttle, yet the same shall neuer fal. know right wel (most honorable Fathers) that I neuer demaunded the Empyre of Nerua my Soueraigne Lorde, although he broughte me vp and was his Nephew, having heard and wel remembring of my Mayster Plutarch, that honour ought rather to bee deserued than procured. Notwithstanding I wyll not deny but ioyfull I was when my Lord Nerua fent me the enfigne of that greate and hygh dignity: and yet I wyll confesse that having begon to tast the tranailes and cares which that imperial flate bringeth, I did repent more then a Thousand times for taking vppon mee a charge fo great: for Empire and gouernement is of futch quality that although the honor be mighty, yet the gouernour sustaineth manifold paines and miferable trauailes. O how greatly doth he bind himself, which by gouernment bindeth other! for if hee bee infte they call hym cruell, if hee bee Pitifull, he is contempned, if liberall, he is esteemed Prodigall, if he keepe or gather together he is counted couetous, if hee be peaceable and quiet, they deeme him for a coward, if he be couragious, he is reputed a quareller, if graue, they will fay he is proude, if he be easie to be spoken to, hee is thought to be light or fimple, if folitary, they will esteeme him to be an hypocrite, and if he be joyfull, they will terme hym diffolute: In futch wife as they wil be contented, and vse better termes to al others what so euer, than towardes him, which gouerneth a common wealth: for to futch a one they recken the morfels which he eateth, they measure his pases, they note his words, they take heede to his companies, and judge of his works (many times wrongfully,) they examine and murmure of his pastimes, and attempt to Coniecture hys Thoughtes: confider then the trauayles which bee in gouernement, and the enuy which many times they beare vnto him that ruleth. We may say, that there is no state more fure than that which is furthest of from Enuv. And if a man cannot but wyth great payne gouerne the wyfe which hee hath chofen, the children which he hath begotten, nor the feruaunt which he hath brought vp, hauing them altogether in one house: how is it possible that he can still conserue in peace a whole commonwealth? I praye you tell mee, in whom shall a poore Prince repose his trust, syth that many times hee is most flaundered by theym whom he fauoureth best? Prvnces and great Lordes cannot eate without a Garde, cannot sleepe without a watch, cannot speake without espiall, nor walke without some faufety, in futch wife as they being Lords of al, they be as it were, Prifoners of their owne people. And if we wil beholde fomewhat neerely, and confider the feruitude of Princes, and the liberty of Subjectes, we shall finde that he which hath most to doe in the Realme, or beareth greatest swinge, is most subject to Thraldome. So that if Prynces have authority to geue liberty, they have no meanes to be free themselues: the gods have created vs so fre, and enery man defireth to have hys liberty fo mutch at wyll, that a man be he neuer fo familiar a freende, or fo neare of kin, we rather have him to be our subject, than our Lorde and mayster: one man alone commandeth all, and yet it feemeth to him but little: ought we then to marueile, if many be weary to obey one? Wee lone and esteeme our selves so mutch, as I never saw any which of his owne good wil would be fubiect, ne yet agaynst his will was made a Lord, a Principle by dayly experience proued very true: for the quarrels and warres that be amongs men, are not fo mutch for obedience fake, as for rule and commaundment. I fay moreouer, that in drinking, eating, clothing, fpeaking, and louing, al men be of diuers qualities: but to get lyberty, they be all conformable. I have spoken thus mutch (O Fathers conscript) vpon

occasion of mine owne Empire, which I haue taken with good will, albeit afterwards I was fory for the great charge. For the waltering Seas and troublesome gournement be two things agreeable to beholde, and daungerous to proue. Notwithstanding sith it hath pleased the Gods that I should be youre Lord, and you my subjects, I beseech you hartely to vie your obedience, as to your souraygue lord, in that which shall be right and just, and to advertise me like a father, in things that shall seeme vnreasonable. The Consul Rutulus hath sayed mutch vnto mee in your behalfe, and hath saluted me for the people, hee himselfe shall bring aunswere and shall salute you al in my name. The Allobrogians and the inhabitaunts about the river Rhene, be at controversie for the limittees of their countrey, and have prayed me to be their Arbitrator, which will stay me a little there. I require that this

letter may be red within the Senate house, and manifested to the whole people. The Gods preferue you.

An other Letter of the Emperour Traian to the Romayne Senate, contaying how governers of Common wealths ought to bee friendes rather to those whych vse traficke, than to them that gather and heape together.

Cocceius Traiane Emperour of the Romaynes to our holy fenate health and confolation in the Gods of comfort. The affayres be so manyfolde, and businesse so graue and weighty, which we have to doe with divers Countries, that scarce we have tyme to eate, and space to take anye rest, the Romane Prynces having still by auncient custome both lacke of tyme, and commonly want of money. And bicause that they which have charge of common wealths, to the vttermost of their power ought to be fryends to trassicke of marchandise, and enimyes of heapynge treasure together, Prynces have so many people to please, and so greate numbre of crauers, that if they keepe any thing for them, the same shall rather seeme a spice of thest than of providence. To take away an other man's goodes, truly is a wycked part: but if it bee per-

mitted to take Treasure, better it were to take it out of the Temples, than to defraude the people: for the one is confecrated to the immortall Gods, and the other to the pore commons. I speake this (right honorable fathers) to put you in remembraunce, and also to aduise you, that you take good heede to the goodes of the common wealth, howe they bee dyspended, howe gathered together, howe they bee kepte, and howe they be employed. ought to vnderstand, that the goodes of the Common wealth be committed to you in trust, not to the ende yee shoulde enioy them, but rather by good gouernement to vse them. We do heare that the Walles be ready to fal, the Towers be in decay, and the Temples in great ruine, wherof we be not a lyttle offended, and you ought also to be ashamed, for so mutch as the damages and detryments of the Common wealth, we ought eyther to remedy, or elfe to lament. Ye have wrytten vnto mee to know my pleafure, whether the cenfors, pretors, and ediles should be yearely chosen, and not perpetuall, as hitherto they have bene: and fpecyally you fay, that the state of the Dictators (which is the greatest and highest dignity in Rome) is onely but for fixe moneths. To that I aunswer, that we are wel contented wyth that aduyse: for not wythout cause and iust reason our predecessours dyd abolyshe the syrst kynges of Rome, and ordayned, that the Confuls should yearely be chosen in the Common wealthe. Whych was done, in confyderation that hee whych had perpetuall gouernement, many tymes became infolente and proude. And therefore that the charges and offices of the Senate, should be yearely, to auoyde danger, which if they should be perpetual there myght ensue great hurt and damage to the common wealth: for if the Officers beyng yerely chosen, be good, they may be continued: and if they bee euyll, they may be changed. And truely the officer, whych knoweth that vpon the end of euery yeare he must be chaunged and examined of his charge, he wyll take good heede to that whych he fpeaketh, and first of all wil confider what he taketh in hand. The good Marcus Portius was the first that caused the Officers of the Romane Common Wealthe to bee thus visited and corrected. that these Almayne Warres doe styll increase, by reason that kyng Deceball wyll not as yet bee brought to obedience of the

Romanes, but rather goeth about to occupy and winne the Kingdomes of Dacia and Polonia, I shall be forced through the businesse of the wars, (so long continuing) to deuyse and consult here vppon the affayres touchyng the gouernement of the common wealth of Rome. For a leffe euyll it is for a Prynce to be neglygent in matters of Warre, than in the gouernement of the Common Wealth. A Prvnce also ought to think, that he is chosen, not to make wars, but to gouerne, not to kyll the Enimies, but to roote out vices, not that he goe in person to inuade or defend his foes, but that he refide and be in the Common Wealth, and not to take away other men's goodes, but to do iustice in euery man, for fo mutch as the Prynce in the warres can fight but for one, and in the publyke wealth he committeth faults against a numbre. Truly it liketh me wel, that from the degree of captaines men be aduaunced to bee emperors, but I think it not good, that emperours do descende to be captains, considering that, that realm shall neuer be in quyet, where the Prince is to gret a warrior. This haue I spoken (fathers conscript) to the intent ye may beleue, that I for my parte if these warres of Almayne were to begin, I being at Rome, it wer impossible that I should be brought vnto the fame, for that my principal intent, is to be estemed rather a good gouerner of a common wealth, than a forward captain in the field: nowe then principally I commend vnto you the veneration of the temples, and honor of the gods, bicaufe kings neuer liue in furety, if the gods be not honored, and the temples ferued. The last words which my good lord Nerua wrot vnto me were these: "Honour the Temples, feare the gods, maintein Iustice in thy commonwealth and defend the pore: in fo doing thou shalt not be forgotten of thy friend, nor vanquished by thy foe." I do greatly recommend vnto you the vertues of amity and fraternity, for that you know how in great common wealthes, more hurt and damage do ciuile and neighborly wars bryng vnto the fame, than those attempted by the enimies. If parents against parents, and neighbours against neighbours had not begon mutuall hatred and contention, neuer had Demetrius ouerthrowen the Rhodes, neuer had Alexander conquered Thyr, Marcellus Syracufa, Scipio Numantia. I recommend vnto you also the poore people, loue the orphanes

and fatherlesse children, support and help the widowes, beware of quarrels and debates amongs you, and the causes of the helplesse fe that ve maintaine and defende: bicaufe the Gods dyd neuer wreake more cruell vengeance vpon any, than vpon those which dyd ill intreate and vse the poore and neady: and many times I haue heard my Lord Nerua fay, that the gods neuer shewed themfelues fo rygorous, as agaynst a mercilesse and vnpitifull people. Semblably, we pray you to be modest of woords, pacient to suffer, and ware in your forme of lyfe. For a great fault it is, and no lesse shame to a Gouerner, that he prayse the people of his common wealth, and gyue them occasion to speake euill of him: and therefore they which have charge of the common wealth, ought rather to repose trust in their workes, than in theyr woords, for fo mutch as the Citizens or common people, do rather fixe theyr indgement vpon that which they fee, than on that which they heare. I would wysh that (touching the affayres appertinent to the Senate) they might not know in you any sparke of ambicion, malice, deceipte, or enuy, to the intent that the iust men might not fo mutch complain of the commaunding of the common wealth, as vpon the entertainment and profite of the fame. The Empire of the Greeks putting theyr felicity in eloquence, and we in well doing. I fpeake this (ryght honorable Fathers) to Counfell and Exhorte ye, that when ye be affembled in Senate, ye do not confume tyme in dysputing and holding opinions for the verification of any thynge. For if you will judge wythout parciality and affection without great disputation, ye may come to reason. do remember that being at a lesson of Appolonius Thianeus, I heard him fay that it was not fo expedient that Senators and Emperors should be skilful and wyse, as if they suffred themfelues to bee gouerned by those that were of great experience and knowledg: and verely he faid truth: for by that meanes he prohibited and forbad them, not to arrest and stand vpon their owne opinion, whereof they ought to be many times suspicious. Lykewyse we recommend vnto you the censores, who have charge of Iudgement, and the Tribunes, whose office is to attende the affrayes of Common Wealthe, that they bee wyse and learned in the Lawes, expert in the Customes, prouident in Judgementes, and

ware in theyr trade of lyfe: for I fay vnto you, that a wyfe man is more availeable in gouernement of a common wealth, than a man of ouermutch skyll and experience. The forme then whych ve shal observe in matters of Judgement shall be thus: that in civile processe you keepe the law, and in criminall causes to moderate the fame, bicaufe haynous, cruell, and rigorous lawes be rather made to amaze and feare, than to be observed and kept. When you give any fentence, ye ought to confider the age of the offendaunt, when, how, wherefore, with whome, in whose presence, in what time, and how longe ago, forfomutch as enery of these thyngs may eyther excuse or condempne: whych you ought to beare and vie towards them in lyke fort as the gods towards vs, who give vs better helpe and fuccoure and correct vs leffe than we deferue. That confideration the Judges ought to haue, bycaufe the offenders doe rather trespasse the Gods than men: if then they be forginen of the gods for offences whych they commit, reason it is that we pardon faultes don by those rather then by our felues. In like maner we commaund you, that if your enimies do you any anoiance or iniury, not incontinently to take reuenge, but rather to diffemble the fame, bicaufe many wrongs be don in the world, which were better to be diffembled than renenged. Wherin ye shal have like regard, touching offices in the Senate and Common Wealth, that they be not given to ambicious or conetous persons: for there is no Beaste in the World so pestiferous and Venomous, to the Common Wealth, as the Ambicious in commaunding, and the couetous in gathering togither. Other things we let passe for this tyme, vntil we have intelligence howe these our commaundements be fulfilled. This Letter shal be red in the chyefest place within the Senate, and afterwards pronounced

to the people, that they may both know what yee commaunde, and fee also what ye doe. The Gods keepe
you, whome we pray to preserue our mother
the City of Rome, and to send vs good
successe in these our Warres.

296

A notable Letter fent from the Romane Senate to the Emperour Traiane, where in is declared how sometimes the region of Spayne did furnish Rome wyth golde from their Mines, and now do adorne and garnish the same with Emperours to governe their Common wealth.

THE facred Romane Senate, to thee the great Cocceius Traiane new Emperour Augustus, health in thy gods and ours, graces euerlastyng wee render to the immortall Gods, for that thou art in health, which wee defyre and pray may be perpetual. We fignified vnto thy maiesty the death of Nerua Cocceius, our soueraigne Lord, and thy predecessor, a man of sincere lyse, a fryend of his Common Wealth, and a zealous louer of Iustice, wherein also we aduertised, that like as Rome did weepe for the cruell lyfe of Domitian, fo mutch the more bitterly doth she bewayle the death of thine vncle Nerua, whose councel (although hee was very olde and diseased) which he gaue vs lyinge on his Bedde, we loued better, and imbraced with greater comforte, than all the enterpryfes and deedes don by his predeceffors, when they were in health and lufty: and befides the ordinary mourning vfed to bee done in Rome for Prynces, wee have caused all recreation and pastime to cease, so wel in the common wealth as with every of vs particularly. We have shut vp the Temples and made the Senate vnderstand, how displeasantly we accept the death of good men. The good old gentleman Nerua dyed in hys house, and was buried in the fielde of Mars: he died in debte, and we have payd hys debtes: he dyed callyng vppon the Gods, and we haue canonized him amongs theyr numbre, and that which is most to be noted, hee died commending vnto vs the common wealth, and the Common wealth recommending it felf vnto him: and a little before his latter gaspe, to the principall of the holy Senate, and many other of the people, standing about his bedside, he fayde: "O ye fathers, I committe vnto you the common wealth and my felfe also vnto the Gods: vnto whom I render infinite thankes, bicause they have taken from me my children, to bee mine heires and have lefte mee Traiane to fuccede." You do remembre (most

dread foueraign lord) that the good Empereour Nerua had other fucceffours than your maiesty, of nearer alyance, of greater frendship more bound by seruice, and of greater proofe in warfare: notwithstandyng amongs other noble personages, vpon you alone he cast his eyes, reposinge in you such opinyon and confidence, as to reviue the prowes and valyaunt facts of the good Emperor Augustus, he suppressed in oblivion the insolent facts of Domitian. When Nerua came vnto the Crowne, he found the treasure pilled, the Senate in diffentyon, the people in commotion, Iustice not observed, and the Common wealth overthrowen: which you likewyse presentlye shall finde, although otherwyse quiet and wholy reformed: wherfore we shalbe right glad, that you conferue the Common wealth in the flate wherin your vncle Nerua left it, confidering specially that new Prynces vnder colour to introduce new customs, do ouerthrow their common Wealths: fourtene Prynces your predeceffours in the Empyre were naturally borne in Rome, and you are the firste straunger Prynce. Wherefore we pray the immortall Gods, (fith that the stocke of our auncient Cæsars is dead) to fend thee good Fortune. Out of the countrey of Spaine was wont to come to this our Romane city great abundance of gold, filuer, steele, leade, and tinne, from theyr mines: but now in place thereof, she giueth vs Emperours to gouern our common wealths: fith then that thou commest of so good a countrey as Spayne is, from fo good a Prouince as is Vandolofia, and from fo excellent a citty as Cales is, of fo noble and fortunate a Linage as is Cocceius, and aduaunced to fo noble an Empire, it is to be supposed that thou wilt proue good and not euil: for the Gods immortall many times do take away their graces from vngratefull men: moreouer (most excellent prince) sith you wrote vnto vs the maner and order what we ought to doe: reason it is that we write to you agayne what you ought to foresee: and sith you have tolde vs, and taught vs to obey you, meete it is that we may know what your pleafure is to commaunde: for that (it may come to passe) that as you have bene brought vp in Spayne, and of longe time bene absent from Rome, through followinge the Warres, that not knowing the lawes whereunto we are fworn, and the customes which we have in Rome, yee commaunde some thinge

that may redound to our damage, and to your dishonor: and therefore we accoumpt it reason that your Maiesty bee aduertised hereof, and the same preuented, for so much as Princes oftentimes be negligent of many things, not for that they wil not forefee the same, but rather for want of one that dare tell them what they ought to doe: and therefore we humbly befeech your most excellent maiesty, to extende and shewe forth your wisedome and prudence, for that the Romanes hearts bene drawen and made pliant rather by fauourable diligence, than by prouoked force. Touchinge the vertue, Iustice, may it please you to remembre the fame: for your olde vncle Nerua was wont to fay, that a Prince for all his magnanimity, valiaunce, and felicity, if he do not vse and maintayne Iustice, ought not for any other merite to be prayfed and commended. Semblably we make our humble Petition, that those commaundements which you shal fend and require to be put in execution, be thoroughly established and observed: for the goodnesse of the lawe doth not consist in the ordinaunce, but in the fulfilling and acomplishement of the same: wee will not also omit to say vnto you (most famous Prince) that you must have pacience to fuffer the importunate, and to diffemble with the offenders: for that it is the deede of a Prince to chaftise and punishe the wrongs done in a common wealth, and to pardon the disobedience done vnto him. You fend vs word by your letters that you wil not come to Rome, vntyll you have finished the Germaine Warres: whych feemeth vnto vs to be the determination of a vertuous and right noble Emperour, for fo mutch as good Princes fuch as you be, oughte not to defire and chose places of delite and recreation, but rather to feke and win renowne and fame. You commaunde vs also to have regarde to the veneration of the Temples, and to the feruice of the Gods: whych request is iuste, but very iuste it were and meete that your selfe should doe the same: for our service would little prevaile, if you should displease them. You wil vs also one to loue an other, whych is the counsel of a holy and peaceable Prince: but know ye that wee shal not be able to doe the same, if you wil not loue and intreat vs all in equall and indifferent forte: for Prynces chearyshinge and louing some aboue the rest, do raise slanders

and grudges amongs the people: you likewife recommend vnto vs, the poore and the widowes: wherin we thinke that you ought to commaund the Collecters of your Tributes, that they do not grieue, when they gather your ryghtes and customes: for greater finne it is to spoyle and pill the needy fort, than meritorious to fuccour and relieue them. Likewise you do persuade vs to be quiet and circumfpect in our affayres, which is a perfuafion refembling the nature of a worthye Prynce and also of a pitifull father. In femblable maner you require vs not to be opinionatiue and wilfull in the Senate, ne affectionate to felf wil whych shal be done accordingly as you commaund, and accept it as you fay: but therwithall you ought to think that in graue and wayghty matters, the more depely things be debated, the better they shall be provided and decreed: you bid vs also to beware, the Censores be honest of lyfe and rightful in doing instice: to that we aunfwere, that in the same we will have good respect, but it is expedient that you take hede to them whom you shal name and appoint to those offices: for if you do chose such as they ought to be, no cause shal rise to reprehend them. Item wher you say, that we ought to take hede, that our children committe no offences to the people, wherein the aduife of the fenate is, that you do draw them awaye from vs, and cal them to the Almayne warres, for as you do knowe (right fouerain prince) that when the publike welth is exempt, and voyd of enimies, then the same wil begin to bee replenyshed with youthfull vices. Notwithstanding when the warres bee farre of from Rome, then the same to them is profitable, bicaufe there is nothing which better cleanfeth common wealths from wicked people, than warres in straunge Countries. Concernyng other things which you write vnto vs nedefull it is not now to recite them, but onely to fee them kept: for truely they seeme rather to be the lawes of God Apollo him selfe,

than counfels of a Mortall man. The gods preferue your

Maiesty, and graunt you good successe in those
your warres.

These Letters and Epistles, although besides the Scope and Nature of a Nouell, yet so worthy to be read and practysed, as no History or other mortall Precepte more: expressing the great care of a mais-

ter towards his scholler, that he should proue no worse being an emperor, than he shewed hymselfe diligent when he was a Scholer: fearing that if he should gouerne contrary to his expectation, or degenerate from the good inflitution, whych in hys yong yeares hee imbraced, that the blame and flaunder should rest in hymfelfe: that was his tutor and bringer vp. O careful Plutarch, O most happy maister, as well for thine owne industry, as for the good fuccesse of such a Scholer: and O most fortunate and vertuous Emperor, that could fo wel brooke and digeft the bliffed perfuafions of futch a maister, whose mind wyth the blaft of promotion, was not fo fwolne and puffed, but that it vouchfafed to cal him father and maister, stil crauing for in instigation of reproofe, when he flid or flypped from the path of reason and duety. And happy Counsel and Senate that could fo wel like and practyfe the documents of fuch an Emperour.

THE THIRTEENTH NOUELL.

A notable History of three amorous Gentlewomen, called Lamia, Flora, and Lais: conteyning the futes of noble Princes and other great Personages made vnto them, with their answeres to divers demandes: and the manner of their death and funerals.

LEAUYNGE now our morall discourse of a carefull Mayster, of a prouydent Scholer, of a vertuous Emperoure, of a facred Senate, and vniforme magistery, returne we to the setting forth and description of three arrant honest Women, which for lewdnesse wer famous, and for wicked Lyfe worthy to be noted with a blacke coale, or rather their memory raked in the Dust and Cinders of their Corpfes vnpure. But as all histories be ful of lessons of vertue and vice, as Bookes, facred and prophane, describe the liues of good and bad for example fake, to yelde meanes to the posterity, to enfue the one and eschue the other, so have I thought to intermingle amongest these Nouels the seuerall fortes of either, that ech Sexe and Kinde may pike out like the Bee, of ech Floure, Honny, to ftore and furnishe with delightes their well disposed myndes. I purpose, then, to value the dissolute lyues of three Amorouse Dames, that with their graces allured the greatest Princes that euer were: enticed the noble men, and fometimes procured the wifest and best learned to craue their acquaintance, as by the sequele hereof shall well appeare. These three famous Women, (as Writers do witneffe) were furnished with many goodly graces and giftes of nature: that is to fay, great beautye of face, goodly proporcion of body, large and high foreheades, theyr breaftes placed in comely order, fmal wasted, fayre handes of passing cunning to play vpon Instruments, a heavenly voice to fayne and fing: briefly, their qualities and beauty were more famous than euer any that were born within the Countries of Afia and Europa. They were neuer beloued of Prince that did forfake them, nor yet they made request of any thing which was denied them: they neuer mocked or flowted man (a thing rare in women of theyr condition) ne yet were mocked of any: but theyr specyal propreties wer to allure men to

302 OF THREE

loue them: Lamia wyth hir pleafaunt loke and eye, Flora with hir eloquent tongue, and Lais wyth the grace and sweetenesse of hir finging voyce: a straunge thinge that he which once was surprysed wyth the loue of any of those three, eyther to late or neuer was delyuered of the fame. They were the richest courtizans that euer lyued in the worlde, fo long as theyr life did laft, and after theyr decease, great monumentes were erected for theyr remembraunce, in place where they died. The most auncient of these three Amorous dames was Lamia, who was in the tyme of King Antigonus, that warfared in the feruice of Alexander the Great, a valyant gentleman, although not fauored by Fortune. Thys kynge Antigonus left behynde hym a fonne and heyre called Demetrius, who was leffe valyaunt, but more fortunate than his father, and had bene a Prynce of greate estimation, if in hys youthe hee had acquyred frendes, and kept the same, and in hys age had not ben gyuen to fo many vices. Thys King Demetrius was in loue with Lamia, and prefented hir wyth rich giftes and rewardes, and loued hir fo affectionately, and in futch fort, as in the loue of his Lamia he femed rather a fole than a true louer: for, forgetting the grauity and authoritye of his person, hee dyd not onelye gyue hir all such things as fhe demaunded, but befides that hee vfed no more the company of his wyfe Euxonia. On a tyme Kyng Demetrius asking Lamia what was the thing wherewyth a woman was fonest wonne? "There is nothing," answered shee, "whych sooner ouercommeth a Woman, than when she feeth a man to loue hir with al hys hart, and to fusteyne for hir fake greate paynes and passyons wyth long continuance and entier affection, for to love men by collusion, causeth afterwards that they be mocked." Agayn, Demetrius asked hir further: "Tell me, Lamia, why doe diuerse Women rather hate than love men?" Whereunto she auswered: "The greatest cause why a Woman doth hate a man, is, when the man doth vaunt and boast himselfe of that which he doth not, and performeth not the thing which he promifeth." Demetrius demaunded of her: "Tell me, Lamia, what is the thing wherewith men doe content you best?"-" When wee see him," sayde she, "to be dyscrete in wordes, and secrete in his dedes." Demetrius asked hir further: "Tell me, Lamia, how chaunceth it that men

be ill matched?" "Bycaufe," answered Lamia, "it is impossible that they be well maryed, when the wife is in neede, and the husbande vndiscrete." Demetrius asked hir what was the cause that amitye betwene lwo louers was broken? "There is nothing," answered she, "that soner maketh colde the loue betwene two louers, than when one of them doth straye in loue, and the Woman louer to importunate to craue." He demaunded further: "Tell me, Lamia, what is the thinge that most tormenteth the louing man?" "Not to attayne the thing which he defireth," answered fhe, "and thinketh to lofe the thing whych he hopeth to enioy." Demetrius yet once agayne asked hir thys question: "What is that, Lamia, which most troubleth a Woman's hart?" "There is nothing," answered Lamia, "wherwith a woman is more grieued, and maketh hir more fad, than to be called ill fauored, or that she hath no good grace, or to vnderstand that she is dissolute of lyfe." This lady Lamia was of judgement delicate and fubtyll, although il imployed in hir, and thereby made al the world in loue with hir, and drew al men to hir through hir fayre speach. Now, before she lost the heart of Kyng Demetrius, shee haunted of long time the vniuerfities of Athenes, where she gayned great store of money, and brought to destructyon many young men. Plutarch, in the lyfe of Demetrius, faith, That the Atheniens having prefented vnto him x11. c. talents of money for a subsidie to pay his men of warre, he gaue al that fumme to his woman Lamia: by meanes whereof the Atheniens grudged, and were offended wyth the kyng, not for the loffe of their gift, but for that it was fo euil employed. When the King Demetrius would affure any thynge by oth, hee fwore not by his gods, ne yet by his predeceffors, but in this fort: "As I may be styll in the grace of my lady Lamia, and as hir lyfe and mine may ende together, fo true is this which I fay and do, in this and thys fort." One yere and two Moneths before the Death of King Demetrius, his frend Lamia died, who forowed fo mutch hir death, as for the absence and death of hir, he caused the Phylosophers of Athens to entre in this Disputation, Whether the teares and forow whiche he shed and toke for her sake, were more to be estemed than the riches which he spent in her obsequies and funerall pompes. This Amorous gentlewoman Lamia, was borne

in Argos, a City of Peloponnesus, besides Athenes, of base parentage, who in hir first yeares haunted the countrey of Asia Maior, of very wyld and diffolute lyfe, and in the ende came into Phænicia. And when the Kyng Demetrius had caused hir to be buried beefore hys chamber-window, hys chiefest frendes asked him, wherefore hee had entoomed hir in that place? his aunswere was this: "I loued hir fo wel, and she likewyse me so hartyly, as I know not which way to fatisfie the loue which she bare me, and the duety I have to love her agayne, if not to put hir in fuch place as myne eyes maye wepe euery day and mine hart still lament." Truely this loue was straung, which so might a Monarch as Demetrius was, did beare vnto fuch a notable curtizan, a woman vttcrly void of grace, barren of good workes, and without any zeale or spark of vertue, as it should appeare. But sith we read and know that none are more given or bent to vnreasonable love, than mighty Princes, what should it bee demed straung and maruellous, if Demetrius amongs the rest do come in place for the loue of that most famous woman, if Fame may stretch to eyther forts, both good and euill? But let vs come to the fecond infamous gentlewoman, called Lais. She was of the ifle of Bithritos, which is in the confines of Græcia, and was the daughter of the great Sacrificer of Apollo his temple at Delphos, a man greatly experienced in the magike art, wherby he prophecyed the perdition of his daughter. Now this amorous Lias was in triumph in the time of the renowmed King Pyrrhus, a Prince very ambitious to acquire honor, but not very happy to keepe it, who being yonge of fixteene or feuenteene yeares, came into Italy to make warres against the Romains: he was the first (as some say) that aranged a camp in ordre, and made the Phalanx, the mayne square and battell: for before hys time, when they came to entre battell, they affailed confusedly and out of array gaue the onset. This amorous Lias continued long time in the campe of Kynge Pyrrhus, and went wyth hym into Italy, and wyth him retourned from warre agayne, and yet hir nature was futch, as shee woulde neuer bee mainteined wyth one man alone. The fame Lias was fo amorous in her conuersatyon, so excellent fayre, and of so comely grace, that if shee would have kept hir felfe faythfull to one Lorde or gentleman, there

was no prynce in the world but if he would have yelded himselfe and all that he had at hir commaundement. Lias, from hir retourne out of Italy into Greece, repayred to the citye of Corinth, to make hir abode there, where she was pursued by many kings, lordes, and prynces. Aulus Gellius faith (which I have recited in my former part of the Pallace of pleasure, the fiftenth Noeuill,) that the good Philosopher, Demosthenes, went from Athens to Corinth, in disguised apparell, to see Lais, and to have hir company, But before the dore was opened, she fent one to demaunde .x11. C. Sestercios of filuer: whereunto Demosthenes answered: "I buy not repentance fo deere." And I beleue that Demosthenes spake those wordes by following the sentence of Diogenes, who sayeth, that every beast after fuch acte is heavy and fad. Som wryters affirme of this Amorous Lais, that thing whych I neuer reade or hearde of Woman: whych is, that shee neuer shewed signe or token of loue to that man whych was defyrous to doe her feruice: nor was neuer hated of man that knew her. Whereby we may comprehend the happe and fortune of that amorous Woman. Shee neuer shewed semblance of great loue to any person, and yet shee was beloued of all. the amorous Lamia had a good Spirite and mynde, Lais truely had no leffe. For in the art of loue she exceeded all other women of hir detestable Arte and Scyence, as well in Knowledge of Loue as to profite in the same. Vppon a Daye a Younge Man of Corinth demaundying of hir, what hee shoulde say to a Woman whome hee long tyme had loued, and made fo greate fute, that thereby he was like to fal into dispayre. "Thou shalt say," (sayd Lais) "vnto hir, that fith she wyl not graunt thy request, yet at least wyse it myght please hir to suffer thee to bee hir servant, and that shee would take in good parte the Seruice that thou shalt doe vnto hir. Whych requeste if shee doe graunte, then hope to attayne the ende of thy attempte, bycause wee Women bee of such nature, as opening our mouthes to gyue fome mylde and pleafant answere to the amorous person, it is to bee thoughte that wee haue gyuen our heart vnto hym." An other Daye, in the presence of Lias, one praysed the Phylosophers of Athens, faying, that they were very honest perfonages, and of great learnynge. Whereunto Lais aunswered: "I can not tell what great knowledg they have, nor what science VOL. II.

they studye, ne yet what bookes youre Philosophers doe reade, but thys I am fure, that to me beynge a woman and neuer was at Athenes, I fee them repayre, and of Philosophers beecome amorous A Theban knighte demaunded of Lais, what he might doe to enioy a ladye wyth whose loue hee should bee surprised: Shee aunswered thus, "A man that is defirous of a woman, must folow his fute, ferue hir, and fuffer hir and fomtymes to feeme as though he had forgotten hir. For after that a womans heart is moued to loue, she regardeth more the forgetfulnesse and negligence vsed towards hir, than she doth the service done before." An other Gentleman of Achaia asked hir what he shoulde doe to a woman, whom he suspected that she had falsified hir fayth Lais aunswered, "make hir beleue that thou thinkest she is very faythful and take from hir the occasions wherby shee hath good cause to be vnfaythful: For if she do perceiue that thou knowest it, and diffemblest the matter, she wyll sooner dye than amende." A gentleman of Palestine at another time inquired of hir what hee fhould doe to a Woman whych he ferued, and did not esteeme the feruyce done vnto hir, ne yet gaue him thankes for the loue which hee bare hir. Lais fayed vnto him: "If thou be disposed to serue hir no longer, let hir not perceive that thou hast gyuen hir over. For naturally we women be tendre in loue, and hard in hatred." Beyng demaunded by one of hir Neyghbours what shee shoulde doe to make hir Daughter very wyfe. "Shee" (fayde Lais) "that wyll haue hir Daughter to bee good and honest, must from her youth learne hir to feare, and in going abrode to haunte litle company, and that she be shamefast and moderate in hir talke." An other of hir neighbors inquyryng of hir what shee myght doe to hir daughter whych began to have delyght to rome in the fieldes and wander abroade. "The remedy" (fayde Lais) "that I finde for your daughter disposed to that condition, is, not to fuffer hir to be ydle, ne yet to be braue and fumptuous in apparel." This amorous gentlewoman Lais, dyed in the Citye of Corinth, of the age of .lxxII. Yeares, whose death was of many matrones defired and of a great numbre of amorous persones lamented. The thyrd amorous gentlewoman was called Flora, which was not fo auncient, ne yet of fo greate renoume as Lamia and Lais

were, whose country also was not so famous, For she was of Italy, and the other two of Grecia, and although that Lamia and Lais exceded Flora in antiquity, yet Flora furmounted them in lineage For Flora was of noble house, although in life and generofitie. lesse than chast. She was of the country of Nola in Campania, iffued of certayne Romans, Knights very famous in facts of Armes and of great industrie and gouernement in the common wealth. When the Father and mother of this Flora deceased, she was of the age of xv. yeares, indued with great riches and fingular beauty, and the very orphane of all hir kynne. For shee had neyther brother lefte wyth whom shee myght soiourne, ne yet vncle to gyue her good counsell. In such wyse that lyke as this young maistres Flora had youthe, riches, lyberty and beauty, euen fo there wanted neyther baudes nor Pandores to entyce hir to fal, and allure hir to folly. Flora feeing hir felf befet in this wife, she determined to goe into the Affrick warres, where she hazarded both in hir person and hir honor. This dame florished and tryumphed in the tyme of the firste Punique warres, when the Conful Mamillus was fent to Carthage, who dispended more Money vpon the loue of Flora, than hee did vpon the chase and pursute of his enimies. This amorous lady Flora had a writyng and tytle fixed vpon hir gate, the effect wherof was this: King, Prince, Dictator, Conful, Cenfor, high Bishop, and Questor may knocke and come in. In that writyng Flora named neither emperor nor Cæfar, bycause those two most Noble names were long tyme after created by the Romanes. Thys Amorous Flora woulde neuer abandon hir Person, but wyth Gentlemen of Noble House, or of greate Dygnitye and Ryches. For shee was wonte to say that a Woman of passinge Beauty shoulde be so mutch esteemed as shee doth esteeme and sette by hir felfe. Lias and Flora were of contrary maners and conditions. For Lias would first bee payde, before shee yelded the vse of hir bodye: but Flora wythout any femblance of defire eyther of golde or filuer was contented to bee ruled by those with whom shee committed the facte. Wherof vppon a day being demaunded the question, she answered: "I gyue my body to prynces and noble Barons, that they may deale with mee lyke Gentlemen.

308 OF THREE

fweare vnto you by the Goddeffe Venus, that nener man gaue me fo little, but that I had more than I looked for, and the double of that which I could demannd." This Amorous lady Flora was wont many times to fave, that a wife woman (or more aptly to terme her a fubtyll Wench) oughte not to demaund reward of her louer for the acceptable pleafure which she doth hym but rather for the lone whych she beareth him, bycause that al thinges in the world have a certayn pryce, except loue, which cannot bee payde or recompenced but wyth loue. All the Ambaffadors of the worlde, whych had accesse into Italy, made so greate reporte of the Beauty and Generofitie of Flora, as they dyd of the Romane common wealth, bycaufe it feemed to bee a Monftrons thynge to fee the Ryches of hir house, hir trayne, hir beauty the princes and great lordes by whom she was required, and the prefents and giftes that were gynen vnto hir. This Amorous Flora had a continual regard to the noble house whereof shee came touchyng the magnyficence and flate of her feruyce. For albeit that fhe was but a common woman, yet fhe was ferued and honored lyke a great lady. That day wherein she rode about the city of Rome, the gaue occasion to be spoken of a whole month after, one inquirynge of an other what great Romaine lords they were that kepte her company? Whose men they were that waighted vpon her? And whose linery they ware. What Ladies they wer that rode in her trayne. The brauery of hir apparell, hir great beauty and port, and the wordes spoken by the amorous gentlemen in that troupe were not vnremembred. When this maistres Flora waxed old, a yong and beautifull gentleman of Corinth, demaunded her to wyfe, to whom she answered: "I know well that thou wilt not marie, the three fcore yeares whych Flora hath, but rather thou defireft to have the twelve hundred thousand Sestercios which she hath in hir Coffres. Content thy felfe therefore, my frende, and get thee home agayne to Corinth from whence thou comest. For to futch as be of myne age great honor is borne, and reuerence done for the riches and wealth they haue, rather than for mariage." There was neuer in the Romane Empyre, the lyke amorous woman that Flora was, indued wyth fo many graces and Queenelyke

qualities, for fhee was of noble house, of fingular beauty, of comely personage, discrete in hir affayres, and besides al other comly qualyties, very lyberall. This maistres Flora spent the most part of hir youth in Affrica, Almayne and Gallia Transalpina. albeit that she would not suffre anye other but great lords to have possession of hir body, yet she applyed hir selfe to the spoile of those that were in place, and to the praye of those that came from the warres. This amorous Flora died when she was of the age of LXXV. yeares. She left for the principal heire of all hir goods and Iuells. the Romain people, which was estemed sufficient and able to make newe the Walles of Rome, and to raunsome and redeme the common Wealth of the same. And bycause that shee was a Romaine, and had made the state therefore hir heyre, the Romaines builded in hir honor a fumptuous Temple, whych in memorye of Fora was called Florianum: and euery yeare in the memorye of hir, they celebrated hir feast vppon the day of hir death: Suetonius Tranquillus fayeth, that the first feaste which the Emperour Galba the fecond celebrated wyth in Rome, was the feast of the amorous Flora, vpon whych daye it was lawful for men and women, to doe what kynd of dishonesty they could deuise. And she was estemed to be the greater faint which that day shewed her selfe moste dissolute and wanton. And bicause that the temple Florianum, was dedycated to amorous Flora, the Romanes had an opinion, that al women which vpon the same day repayred to the Temple in whorish apparell, should have the graces and giftes that Flora had. These were the fond opinions and maners of the auncient, which after their owne makinge and deuises framed Gods and Goddesses, and bycause she proued vnshamefast and rich, a Temple must bee erected, and Sacrifices ordayned for hir Whorish triumphes. But that noble men and Kings haue bene rapt and transported with the lurements of futch notorious ftrumpets, is and hath bene common in all ages. And commonly futch infamous women be indewed with greatest gifts and graces. the rather to noofell and dandle their fauorers in the laps of their fadinge pleafures. But every of them a most speciall grace, above the rest. As of a Kyng not long agoe we reade, that kept

three, one the holieft, another the craftieft, and the third the meriest. Two of which properties meete for honest Women: although the third so incident to that kinde as heat to a liuinge body. Cease wee then of this kynde, and let vs step forth to be acquaynted with a lady and a Queene the Godlyest and stoutest, that is remembred in any auncient Monument or Hystory.

THE FOURTEENTH NOUELL.

The lyfe and giftes of the most Famous Queene Zenobia with the letters of the Emperour Avrelianvs to the sayde Queene, and her stoute aunswere thereunto.

ZENOBIA Queene of Palmyres, was a right famous Gentlewoman, as diuerse Hystoriographers largely do report and write. Who although fhee was no Christian Lady, yet so worthy of Imitation, as the was for hir vertues and heroycall facts of Immortall prayle. By hir wysedome and stoutnesse she subdued all the empire of the Orient, and refisted the inuincible Romans. And for that it is meete and requifite to alleage and advouch reasons by weight, and words by measure, I wil orderly begin to recite the History of that most famous Queene. Wherefore I fay, that about the .284. Olimpiade, no long tyme after the death of the vnhappy Emperour Decius, Valerian was chosen Emperour by the Senate, and (as Trebellius Pollio his Hyftorian doth describe) he was a well learned prince, indued with manyfold vertues, that for his speciall prayse, these wordes be recorded of him. If all the World had bene affembled to chose a good Prince, they would not have chosen any other but good Valerian. It is also written of hym, that in liberality he was noble, in words true, in talke wary, in promise constant, to his frends familiar, and to his enemies seuere, and which is more to be esteemed, he could not forget seruice, nor yet reuenge wronge. It came to passe that in the xiv. yeare of his raygne, there rose sutch cruell Warres in Asia, that forced he was to go thither in his owne person, to resist Sapor king of the Perfians, a very valyaunt man of Warre and fortunate in his enterprifes, which happinesse of hys not long time after the arryuall of Valerian into Afia, hee manifested and shewed. For beeying betwene them fuch hot and cruell warres, in a skyrmish, throughe the greate faulte of the General, (which had the conduct of the armye) the Emperour Valerian was taken, and brought into the puissance of King Sapor hys ennimy, whych curfed tyrant fo wickedlye vsed that victory, as hee woulde by no meanes put the

Emperour to raunsome, towards whom hee vsed such cruelty, that fo oft and fo many tymes, as hee was disposed to gette vp on horsebacke hee vsed the body of olde Valerian to serue hym for advauntage, fetting his feete vppon the throate of that aged gentleman. In that myserable office and vnhappy captiuity serued and dyed the good Emperour Valerian, not wyth oute the greate forrowe of them that knew him, and the rueful compassion of those that sawe him, which the Romans considering, and that neither by offre of gold, or filuer, or other meanes, they were able to redeeme Valerian, they determined to choose for Emperour his owne fonne called Galienus: which they did more for respect of the father, than for any minde or corage they knew to bee in the sonne. Who afterwardes shewed himselfe to bee farre different from the conditions of his father Valerian, being in his enterprifes a cowarde, in his promiffes a lyer, in correction cruell, towards them that ferued him vnthanckfull, (and which is worse,) hee gaue himselfe to his defires, and yealded place to sensuality. By meanes wherof, in his tyme the Romain Empyre more than in any others ravgne, loft most prouinces and received greatest shame. In factes of warre he was a cowarde, and in gouernement of common wealth, a very weake and feeble man. Galienus not caryng for the state of the Empire, became so myserable as the Gouernors of the same gaue ouer their obedience, and in the tyme of hys raygne, there rose vp thyrty tyrants, whych vsurped the same. Whose names doe followe, Cyriades, Posthumus the yonger, Lollius, Victorinus, Marius, Ingenuus, Regillianus, Aureolus, Macrianus, Machianus the younger, Quietus, Odenatus, Herodes, Mœnius Ballista, Valens, Piso Emilianus, Staturnius, Tetricus, Etricus the younger, Trebelianus, Heremianus, Timolaus, Celfus, Titus, Cenforinus, Claudius, Aurelius, and Quintillus, of whom xviii, were captaynes and feruiters vnder the good Emperour Sutch delight had the Romanes, in that auncient world, to have good Captaynes, as were able to bee preferred to be Emperours. Nowe in that tyme the Romanes had for their Captayne generall, a knight called Odenatus, the Prynce of Palmerines, a man truely of great vertue, and of paffinge industry and hardinesse in facts of warre. This Captayne Odenatus maried a

woman that descended of the anneient linage of the Ptolomes, ometymes Kinges of Ægypt, named Zenobia, which (if the hiftorians do not deceive vs) was one of the most famous Women of the Worlde. Shee had the heart of Alexander the great, shee possessed the riches of Cræsus, the diligence of Pyrrhus, the trauel of Haniball, the warie forefighte of Marcellus, and the Iustice of Traiane. When Zenobia was married to Odenatus, she had by hir other husband, a fonne called Herodes, and by Odenatus shee had two other, whereof the one was called Hyeronianus, and the other Ptolemus. And when the Emperour Valerian was vanguyshed and taken, Odenatus was not then in the Campe. For as all men thought, if he had ben there, they had not receyued fo greate an ouerthrow. So fone as good Odenatus was aduertized of the defaict of Valerian, in great hafte he marched to the Roman Campe, that then was in great diforder. Whych with greate diligence hee reaffembled, and reduced the fame to order, and (holpen by good Fortune,) wythin xxx. Dayes after hee recouered all that whych Valerian had lofte, makynge the Perfian kyng to flee, by meanes whereof, and for that Odenatus had taken charge of the army, hee wanne amonges the Romanes great reputation, and truely not with out cause: For if in that good time he had not receyued the charge the name and glory of the Romanes had taken ende in Afia. Duryng all thys tyme Galienus, lyned in hys delyghtes at Myllan, wythout care or thoughte of the Common wealth, confumynge in his wylfull vices, the Money that was leuied for the men of war. Whych was the cause that the gouernours of the prouinces, and Captens general, feing him to be fo vicious and neglygent, vsurped the provinces and armies which they had in charge, Galienus voyde of all obedience fauing of the Italians and Lombards, the first that rose vp against him were Posthumus in Fraunce, Lollians in Spayne, Victorinus in Affrica, Marius in Britane, Ingenuus in Germanie, Regillianus in Denmark, Aureolus in Hungarie, Macrianus in Mesopotamia, and Odenatus, in Syria. Before Odenatus rose against Valerian, Macrianus enioied Mesopotamia and the greatest part of Syria, whereof Odenatus having intelligence, he marched with his power agaynst him and killed him, and discomfited all his army. The death of the Tyran Macrian being

knowen, and that Galienus was fo vicious, the armies in Afia affembled and chofe Odenatus Emperour: which Election although the Senate publickly durst not agree vpon, yet secretly they allowed it, bycause they received dayly newes, of the great Exploytes and deedes of armes done by Odenatus, and faw on the other fide the great continued follies of Galienus. Almost three yeares and a halfe was Odenatus Emperour and Lord of all the Orient, duringe which time he recouered all the Lands and Prouinces lost by Galienus, and payde the Romane army all the arrerages of their wages due vnto them. But Fortune ful of inconstancy, suffred not this good Prynce very long to raygne. For hauing in hys house a kinsinan of hys, named Meonius, to whom he bare great good will, for that he fawe him to be a valiant man of warre, although Ignorant of his Enuy and couetonfnesse: it chaunced vpon a day as they two rode on huntinge, and gallopinge after the pursute of a wylde Bore, with the very same Bore Speare which Meonius caried to strike the beast, he killed by treason his good Coufin Odenatus. But that murder was not long time vnreuenged. For the Borespeare wherewith he had so cruelly killed the Emperour his Cousin, was incontinently known by the hunters which folowed Odenatus: whervpon that day the head of Meonius was striken of. And Galienius vnderstandinge the death of Odenatus, gaue great rewardes and prefents to them that brought him the newes, beinge so ioyfull as the Romans wer angry to vnderstand those pitiful tydings, bycause through the good ordre which Odenatus vsed in Asia, they had great tranquillity and peace throughout Europa. Now after the death of thys good Emperour Odenatus, the Armies chose one of his two Sonnes to be Emperour of the Orient: But for that he was younge, they chose Zenobia to be Protector of hir fonne, and gouerner oner the fayd Orient Empyre. Who feeing that vpon the decease of Odenatus certayne of the East Countries began to renolt, shee determined to open hir Treasure, ressemble hir men of Warre, and in hir owne perfon to march into the fielde: where she did sutch notable enterprifes, as fhee appalled hir enemies, and made the whole world to wonder. About the age of .xxxv. yeares Zenobia was widow, beinge the Tutrix of hir children, Regent of an Empyre, and Cap-

tayne generall of the army. In which weighty charge she vsed hir felfe fo wifely and well, as shee acquired no lesse noble name in Afia, than Queene Semiramis did in India. Zenobia was constant in that whych she tooke in hand, true in words, liberall, mylde, and feuere where she ought to be, discrete, graue, and secrete in her enterprises, albeit she was ambicious. For, not content with hir title of Gouernesse, or Regent, she wrote and caused her selfe to be called Empresse, she loued not to ride vpon a Mule, or in a littor, but greatly esteemed to have great horse in hir stable and to learne to handle and ryde them. When Zenobia went forth of hir Tent to fee the order and gouernment of hir Campe, she continually did put on her Armure, and was well guarded with a band of men, fo that of a woman, she cared but onely for the name, and in the facts of Armes shee craued the title of valiannt. The Captaynes of hir Army, neuer gaue battell, or made affault, they neuer skyrmished or did other enterprise of warre, but she was present in her owne person, and attempted to shewe hirselfe more hardy than any of all the troupe, a thinge almost incredible in that weake and feeble kinde. The fayd noble Queene was of stature, bigge and well proporcioned, her eyes black and quicke, hir forehead large, hir stomak and Breastes fayre and vpright, her Face white, and ruddy, a little mouth, hir Teeth fo whyte, as they feemed like a rancke of white pearles, but aboue all things she was of sutch excellent Spirit and courage, as shee was feared for hir stoutnesse, and beloued for her beauty. And although Zenobia was indued with fo great beauty, liberality, riches, and puissannce, yet she was neuer stayned with the blemish of vnchaste lyfe, or wyth other vanity: and as hir husband Odenatus was wont to fay, that after shee felt hir felfe wyth chylde, shee neuer suffred hym to come neare her, (futch was hir great Chastity) sayinge that Women ought to marry rather for children than for pleafure. She was also excellently well learned in the Greke and Latine tongue. Shee did neuer eate but one Meale a Day. Hir talke was verye lyttle and The Meate which shee vsed for hir repaste, was either the hanch of a Wylde Bore, or elfe the fyde of a Deere. Shee could drinke no Wyne, nor abyde the fent thereof. But shee was so curvous in good and perfect Waters, as shee would grue so great

a Pryce for that, as is ordinaryly gynen for Wyne bee it neuer fo excellent. So foone as the Kinges of Ægypte of Persia, and the Greekes, were advertized of the death of Odenatus, they fent theyr Ambassadours to Zenobia, aswell to visite and comfort hir, as to bee her confederats and frendes. So much was she feared and re-The affayres of Zenobia beinge in doubted for her rare vertues. futch estate in Asia, the Emperor Galienus died in Lombardie, and the Romanes chose Aurelianus to bee Emperour, who although he was of a base and obscure lineage, yet hee was of a great valiance in factes of Armes. When Aurelianus was chosen Emperour, he made great preparacion into Afia, to inferre warres vpon Queene Zenobia, and in all hys tyme hee neuer attempted greater enterprife for the Romanes. When hee was arryued in Asia, the Emperour proceded agaynst the Queene, and shee as valiantly defended hir felfe, continually being betwene them great Alarams and skirmishes. But as Zenobia and hir people were of lesse trauell and of better skyl in knowledge of the Country, so they did greater harme and more anoiance vnto theyr Enimy, and thereof received leffer damage. The Emperour feing that hee should have mutch adoe to vanquishe Zenobia by armes, determined to ouercome hir by gentle wordes and fayre promisses: for which cause he wrote vnto hir a letter, the tenor whereof ensueth.

Aurelianus Emperour of Rome and Lord of al Afia, to the right honorable Zenobia fendeth greetyng. Although to fuch rebellyous Women as thou art, it should seeme vncomely and not decente to make request, yet if thou wylt seeke ayde of my mercy, and rendre thy selfe vnder myne obedience, bee affured that I wyll doe thee honour, and gene pardon to thy people. The Golde, Siluer, and other riches, within thy Pallace I am content thou shalt enioy, together with the kingdome of Palmyres, which thou mayest keepe duringe thy life, and leaue after thy death to whom thou shalt think good, vpon condicion not with standinge, that thou abandone all thine other Realmes and Countryes which thou haste in Asia, and acknowledge Rome to be thy superior. Of thy vasfalls, and subjectes of Palmyres, we demand none other obedience, but to be confederates and frendes, so that thou breake vp thy Campe, wherewyth thou makest warre in Asia, and disobeyest the city of Rome, wee will

fuffer thee to have a certayne number of men of warre, so wel for the tuicion of thy person, as for the desence of thy kingdome, and thy two Children which thou haddest by thy husbande Odenatus. And he whom thou louest best shal remayne with thee in Asia, and the other I will carry with me to Rome, not as prisoner, but as hostage and pleadge from thee. The prisoners which thou hast of ours, shalbe rendred in exchange for those which we have of thine, without raunsome of eyther parts. And by these meanes thou shalt remayne honored in Asia, and I contented, will retourne to Rome. The Gods be thy desence, and preserve our mother the city of Rome from all vnhappy fortune.

The Queene Zenobia havinge reade the letter of the Emperour Aurelianus, without feare of the contents, incontinently made futch aunswere as followeth.

Zenobia Queene of Palmyres, and Lady of all Asia, and the kingdomes thereof, to thee Aurelianus the Emperour, health, and confolation, &c. That thou do intitle thy felfe with the Emperour of the Romanes I doe agree, but to prefume to name thy felfe lord of the East kingdomes, I say therein thou doest offend. For thou knowest wel, that I alone am Lady Regent of all the Orient, and the only dame and maystresse of the same. Th'one part whereof descended vnto me by lawful Inheritaunce from my predecessors, and the other part, I have won by my proweffe and deedes of armes. Thou fayest that if I rendre obedience vnto thee, thou wilt do me great honor: To that I aunswere, that it were a dishonest part of me, and a deede most vniust, that the Gods having created Zenobia to commaund all Afia, she should now begyn to bee flane and thral vnto the city of Rome. Semblably, thou faiest that thou wylt gyne and leave me al the golde, filuer, and other ryches whych I haue: Whereunto I aunswer, that it is a wycked, and fond request, to dispose the goodes of another as they were thine owne. But thine eyes shall neuer see it, ne yet thy handes shal touche it, but rather I hope in the Gods aboue to bestow and crye a larges of that which thou haste at Rome, before thou finger that whych I have and poffesse in Asia. Truely Aurelianus, the warres which thou makest agaynst me, and thy quarell, bee most vniuste beefore the supernall Gods, and very vnreafonable before men, and I for my part if I have entred or doe take armes, it is but to defend my felf and myne. Thy comming then into Asia is for none other purpose, but to spoile and make hanocke of that which an other hath. And think not that I am greatly afrayde of the name of Romane Prynce, nor yet the power of thyne huge army. For if it bee in thy handes to gyue battell, it belongeth onely to the gods to gyue eyther to thee or me the victory. That I remaine in fielde it is to me greate fame, but thou to fight with a widdowe, oughtest truelye to bee ashamed. There be come vnto myne ayde and Campe the Perfians, the Medes, the Agamennonians, the Irenees, and the Syrians, and with them all the Gods immortall, who be wont to chastice futch proude princes as thou art, and to helpe poore Widowes as I am. And if it so come to passe, that the Gods doe permit and suffre my lucke to be futch, as thou do bereue me of lyfe and dispoyle me of goods, yet it will be bruted at Rome, and published in Asia, that the wofull wight Zenobia, was ouerthrowne and flayne, in defence of hir Patrimony, and for the confernation of hir husbande's honor. Labor no more then Aurelianus, to flatter and pray me, nor yet to threaten me: requere me no more to yeelde and become thy prisoner, nor yet to surrender that which I haue: for by doinge that I can, I accomplish that I ought. For it will be fayd and noyfed through the world, (may it fo come to paffe as Fortune do not fauor mee) that if the Empresse Zenobia be captine, she was not yet vanquished. Now touchinge my fon which thou demandest to cary with thee to Rome, truely that request I cannot abide, and mutch leffe do meane to graunt, knowing full well that thy house is stored full of manyfolde vices, where myne is garnished with many notable Philosophers: whereby if I leave vnto my Children no great heapes of goods, yet they shalbe wel taught and instructed: For the one half of the day they spend in Learninge, and the other halfe in exercise of Armes. For conclufion of thy demaund, and finall aunswere, thereunto, I pray thee trauayle no more by letters to write vnto mee, ne yet by ambassage to fpende any furder talke, but attend vntill our controuersie bee decided rather by force of Armes than by vttered wordes. The Gods preferue thee.

It is fayd that Aurelianus, receiving that aunswere did reiovce, but when he had red it, he was greatly offended, which incontinently hee made to bee known, by gathering together his Camp, and befieginge the Citty wherein Zenobia was. And Aurelianus, wroth and outraged with that aunswere, although his army was weary and halfe in dispayre (by reason of the longe Warres,) yet he vsed futch diligence and expedition in the fiege of that place, as the Queene was taken and the city rafed: which done, the Emperour Aurelianus retourned to Rome, caryinge with him Zenobia, not to doe hir to death, but to tryumph ouer her. At what tyme to fee that Noble Lady goe on foote, and marche before the tryumphinge Chariot bare footed, charged with the burden of heavy chaynes, and hir two children by hir fide: truly it made the Romane Matrons to conceyue great pity, being wel knowen to al the Romans, that neither in valorous deedes, nor yet in vertue or chastity, any man or woman of hir time did excell hir. The dayes of the triumph being done, all the noble Ladies of Rome affembled and repayred to Zenobia, and vsed vnto her great and honorable entertaynement, giving hir many goodly prefentes and rewards. And Zenobia lived in the company of those noble Matrons the space of .x. yeares before she dyed, in estimation like a Lucrecia, and in honour like a Cornelia. And if Fortune had acompanied hir personage, so well as vertue and magnanimity, Rome had felt the egrenesse of hir displeasure, and the whole world tasted the fweetnesse of hir Regiment. But nowe leave we of, any longer to speak of Zenobia, that wee may direct our course to the hard fate of a King's daughter, that for loue maried a fimple person bred in hir father's house, who in base parentage, and churlishe kynde coulde not be altered: but shewed the fruicts of brutishnesse:

tyll Lady Fortune pityinge the Ladie's case: prouided for her better dayes, and chastized her vnkinde companion with deserts condigne for sutch a matche.

THE FIFTEENTH NOUELL.

Evphimia the Kyng of Corinth's daughter fell in love with Acharifto, the feruaunt of her father, and besides others which required hir in mariage, she disdayned Philon the King of Peloponess, that loved hir very fervently. Acharisto conspiring against the Kyng, was discovered, tormented, and put in prison, and by meanes of Evphimia delivered. The King promised his daughter and kingdome to him that presented the head of Acharisto, Evphimia so wrought, as hee was presented to the King. The King gave him his daughter to wyse and when he died made him his heyre. Acharisto began to hate his wyse, and condemned hir to death as an adulteresse. Philon delivered hir: and vpon the sute of hir subjects, she is contented to mary him, and therby he is made Kynge of Corinth:

Constancy in honest love (being a perfect vertue, and a precious ornament to the beloued, induinge eyther, befides ioy and contentacion, with immortall fame and Glory,) hath in it felfe these onely marks and properties to be knowen by, Chastity, and toleration of aduerfity: For as the mynde is constant in loue, not variable, or geuen to chaunge, fo is the body continent, comely, honest and pacient of Fortunes plages. A true constant minde is moued with no fugred perfuations of frendes, is diverted with no eloquence, terrified with no threats, is quiet in all motions. The bluftering blasts of parents wrath, cannot remoue the constant mayde from that which she hath peculiarly chosen to hir selfe. The rigorous rage of frendes, doth not difmay the louing man from the embracement of hir whom he hath amongs the rest selecte for his vnchanged feere. A goodly example of conftant and noble loue this hiftory enfuing defcribeth, although not like in both, yet in both a femblable conftancy. For Euphimia, a kings daughter, abandoneth the great loue borne vnto hir by Philon, a yong prince, to loue a fervant of hir father's, with whom she perseuered in great constancy, for all his false and ingratefull dealings towards hir. Philon feeing his love despifed never maried vntill he maried hir,

whom afterwards he deliuered from the false surmised treason of hir cancred and malicious husband. Euphimia fondly maried agaynst hir father's will, and therefore deservedly afterwards bare the penaunce of hir fault: and albeit she declared hir selfe to be constant, yet duty to louinge Father ought to have withdrawen hir rash and heady loue. What daungers do ensue sutch like cases, examples be rise, and experience teacheth. A great dishonour it is for the Lady and Gentlewoman to disparage hir noble house with mariage of hir inserior: yea and great griefe to the parents to see their children obstinate and wilfull in carelesse loue. And albeit the Poet Propertius describeth the vehement loue of those that be noble, and have wherewith in loue to be liberall, in these verses:

Great is the fayth of Loue, the constant mynde doth mutch analyse: And hee that is well fraught with wealth, in Loue doth mutch prenayle.

Yet the tender Damosell or louing childe, be they never so noble or rich, ought to attend the father's tyme and choyfe, and naturally encline to parent's will and likinge, otherwife great harme and detriment enfue: for when the Parentes fee the disobedience or rather rebellious mynde of theyr childe, their conceived forrow for the same, so gnaweth the rooted plante of natural loue, as either it haftneth their vntimely death, or else ingendreth a heape of melancholie humors: whych force them to proclaime defiance and bytter curffe against their propre fruit, vpon whom (if by due regard they had bene ruled) they would have pronounced the fweete bleffyng that Ifaac gaue to Iacob, the mother's best beloued Boye: yea and that displeasure may chaunce to dispossesse them of that, whych should have bene the onely comfort and stay of the future age. So that neglygence of parent's hest, and carelesse heede of Youthfull head, breedeth double woe, but specially in the not aduifed Chylde: who tumbleth himselfe first into the breach of divine lawes, to the cursses of the same, to parent's wrath, to orphan's state, to begger's lyfe, and into a sea of manifold miseries. In whom had obedyence ruled, and reason taken place, the hearte mught have bene fatisfied, the parent wel pleased: the life VOL. II.

ioyfully spent, and the posteritie successively tast the fruits that elders have prepared. What care and forrow, nay what extremetie the forefayde Noble Gentlewoman fusteined, for not yelding to hir father's minde, the fequele shall at large declare. There was fometimes in Corinth, a Citty of Grecia, a Kinge, which had a daughter called Euphimia, very tenderly beloued of hir father, and being arrived at the age of mariage, many Noble men of Grecia made fute to have hir to wife. But amongs al, Philon the young king of Peloponefus, fo fiercely fell in love wyth hir, as he thought he could no longer liue, if he were maried to anye other: for which cause her father knowing him to be a King, and of fingular beautye, and that he was far in loue wyth his Daughter, would gladly have chosen him to be his fonne in lawe, perfuading hir that she should liue with him a lyfe so happy as was possible for any noble lady matched wyth a Gentleman, were he neuer fo honorable. But the daughter by no meanes would confent vnto hir father's wyll, alleaging vnto him diuers and fundry confideracions wherby hir nature by no meanes would agree, nor heart confente to joyne wyth Philon. The king aboue all worldly thynges loued his fayre daughter: and albeit hee would fayne haue broughte to passe, that she should have taken him to husband, yet he would not vse the father's authoritie, but defired that Loue rather than force should mach his daughter, and therfore for that tyme was contented to agree vnto hir wyll. There was in the Court a young man borne of hir Father's bondman, whych hyght Acharisto, and was manumifed by the kinge, who made him one of the Efquiers for hys body, and vsed his feruyce in fundrye enterpryses of the warres, and bicause hee was in those affayres very skilfull, of bolde personage, in conflicts and battayles very hardy, the king did very much fauor him, aswell for that he had defended him from manifold daungers, as also bycause he had deliuered him from the treafon pretended against him by the kyng of the Lacedemonians: whose helpe and valyance, the king vsed for the murder and destruction of the sayde Lacedemonian king. For whych valiant enterpryfe, he bountifully recompenced him wyth honorable prefermentes and stately reuenues. Vpon this yong man Euphimia fixed hir amorous eyes, and fell fo farre in loue, as vpon him alone

fhe bent hir thoughtes, and all hir louing cogitations. Whereof Acharisto being certified, and well espying and marking hir amorous lookes, nouryshed with lyke flames the fire wherewyth she burned. Notwythstanding his loue was not so feruently bent vpon hir personage, as his defire was ambicious for that she shoulde be hir father's onely heyre, and therfore thought that he should be a most happy man, aboue al other of mortall kynde, if he myght possessed that inheritance. The king perceiving that love, told his daughter, that she had placed her minde in place so straunge, as hee had thought hir wvfdome would have more warely forefeen, and better wayed hir estate and birth, as com of a princely race, and would have demed futch love, farre vnworthy hir degree: requiringe hir wyth fatherly words, to withdraw hir fettled mynde and to ioyne with him in choyse of husbande, for that he had none other worldly heire but hir, and tolde hir how he ment to bestow hir vppon sutch a personage, as a most happy life she should leade, fo long as the destenies were disposed to weave the Webbe of her Predestined life: and therefore was resolved to Espouse hir vnto that noble gentleman Philon. Euphimia hearkned to this vnliked tale, and with vnliked words refused hir father's hest, protesting vnto him sutch reasons to like effect as shee did before, therby to draw him from his conceiued purpose, wherunto the wife king having made replye, continuing his intended mynde, at length in ragyng wordes, and stormed mind, he sayd vnto Euphimia: "How mutch the fweter is the wyne, the sharper is the egred fawce thereof. I speake this Parable, for that thou not knowing or greatly regarding the gentle disposition of thy father's nature, in the ende mayst so abuse the same, as where hitherto he hath bene curteous and benigne, he may become through thy difordred deedes, ryghte fowre and sharpe:" and without vtterance of further talke, departed. Who resting euill content wyth that fonde fyxed Loue, thoughte that the next way to remedy the fame, was to tell Acharisto how greuously he toke his prefumed fault, and in what heinous parte he conceived his ingratitude, and how for the benefits which liberally he had bestowed vpon him, he had broughte and enticed hys daughter to loue him, that was farre vngreeable her estate. And therfore

he called hym before hym, and with reasons firste declared the duetye of a faythfull feruaunt to his Soueraigne lord, and afterwards hee fayd: That if the receyued benefits were not able to lette him know what were convenient and feemely for hys degree, but would perfeuere in that which he had begon, he would make him feele the iust displeasure of a displeased Prince, whereby hee shoulde repent the tyme that ener hee was borne of Woman's wombe. These woordes of the Kyng seemed greeuous to Acharifto, and not to moue hym to further anger hee feemed as though that (being fearfull of the Kyng's displeasure) he did not loue his daughter at all, but fayd vnto hym, that he deferued not to bee so rebuked, for that it lay not in his power to wythstand hir loue, the fame procedyng of hir own good wyll and lyberty: and that hee for his part neuer required loue: if shee did bend hir mynd to love hym, hee could not remedye that affection, for that the freewyll of futch viibrydled appetite rested not in hym to reforme. Notwythstandyng, bycause he vnderstoode hys vnwyllyng mind, he from that tyme forth would fo endeuor hymfelfe as he shoulde well perceyue that the vnstayde mynde of the young gentlewoman Euphimia, was not incenfed by hym, but voluntarily conceyued of hir felfe. "You shall doe well" (sayde the kyng) "if the effecte procede accordinge to the promife: and the more accep table shall the same bee vnto mee, for that I desyre it shoulde so come to passe." The king liked wel these words although that Acharisto had conceived within the plat of his entended mind, fom other treason. For albeit that he affirmed before the kyng's owne face, that hee would not loue his daughter, yet knowing the affured wil of the louyng gentlewoman, hee practifed the mariage, and like an vnkind and wretched man, deuifed conuenient tyme to kil him: and fully bent to execute that cruel enterpryfe, he attempted to corrupt the chiefest men about him, promising promocions vnto fome, to fome he affured restitucion of reuenewes, which by father's fault they had loft beefore, and to other golden hilles, fo that hee mighte attayne by flaughter of the king, to wynne a kingly state and kingdome: which the sooner he peruaded himself to acquire, if in secrete silence, they coulde put vp that which by generall voice they had agreed. And although

they thought themselues in good assurance, that theyr enterpryse could take no ill fuccesse, by reason of their sounde and good discourse debated amonges themselves for the accomplishement thereof, yet it fortuned that one of the conspiracy (as commonlye in futch lyke trayterous attemptes it chaunceth) beeynge wyth hys beloued Ladye, and fhee making mone that little Commodytye fucceeded of hir Loue for hir Aduauncement, brake out into these wordes: "Hold thy peace" (fayde hee:) "for the tyme wyll not bee longe before thou shalt bee one of the chiefest Ladies of this land." "Howe can that bee?" (fayde hys Woman.) "No more adoe?" (quod the Gentleman:) "Cease from further questions, and bee merrye: for wee shall enione together, a verye Honourable and a quyete Lyfe." When hir Louer was departed, the gentlewoman went to an other of hir goffips very iocunde, and tolde hir what hir Louer had fayd: and shee then not able to keepe Counfell, wente and tolde an other: in fuch wyfe as in the ende it came to the eares of the King's steward's wyfe, and she imparted the fame vnto hir husband, who marking those words, like a man of great wisedome and experience, did verily beleue that the same touched the daunger of the king's person: and as a faythfull servant to his lorde and maister, diligently harkned to the mutteringe talke murmured in the Court, by him which had tolde the same to his beloued Lady: and knowinge that it proceeded from Acharisto, which was an obstinate and fedicious varlet, and that he with three or four other his familiars, kept fecret company in corners, iuged that which he first coniectured, to be most certayne and true: wherefore determined to moue the king thereof, and vpon a day finding him alone, he fayd vnto him, that the fidelity and good will wherewith he ferued him, and the defire which he had to fee hym lyue in longe and prosperous Estate, made hym to attend to the falfegard of hys person, and to hearken vnto sutch as should attempt to daunger the same: for which cause, marking and espying the doings of certayne of his chamber (whose common affemblies and priny whifperings miflyking) he feared leaft they conspiring with Acharisto, should worke treason, for berieuinge of his life: and to th' intent their endeuours might be preuented, and his fafety foreseene, he thought good to reueale the same to

hys Maiesty. Then he tolde the King the words that were spoken by the first Gentlewoman, to one or two of her companions, and disclosed the presumptions which he had seene and perceyued touchinge the fame. Amongs the ill conditions of men, there is nothinge more common than Poyfon, Conspiracies, and Treason of Prynces and great Lordes: and therefore enery little suspicion prefuming futch perill, is a great demonstration of lyke myschiefe: which made the Kyng to geue credit to the Woords of hys Steward, having for hys long experience knowen him to be faythfull, and trusty. And sodaynly he thought that Acharisto attempted the fame, that after hys death, by mariage of Euphimia, he might be the Inheritour of hys Kyngdome: the beliefe whereof, and the fingular credite which he reposed in hys Steward, befides other thinges, caused hym to commaund the captayne of hys Guard to apprehend those 4 of whom hys Steward told hym, and Acharisto, committinge them to feuerall Prifons. Then he fent hys Officers to example them, and found vpon their confessions, the accusation of his fleward to be true: but Acharisto, although the whole effecte of the Treason was confessed by those source conspirators that were apprehended, and advouched to his Face, and for all the Tormentes wherewith he was racked and cruciated, yet still denied, that eyther he was authour of the enterprise, or partaker of a treason fo wicked: then the king incontinently caused the foure Gentlemen of hys Chamber to be rewarded accordinge to the worthinesse of their offence, and were put to death, and Acharisto to be repryued in sharpe and cruell prison, vntill with torments he should be forced to confesse that which he knew to be most certayne and true by the euidence of those that were done to death. Euphimia for the imprisonment of Acharisto, conceived incredible forrow, and vneths could be perfuaded, that hee would imagine, mutch lesse conspyre, that abhominable fact, aswell for the loue which Acharisto seemed to beare vnto hir, as for the great good wyl wherewith he was affured that she bare vnto hym, and therefore the death of the kyng to be no leffe griefe vnto him, than the fame woulde be to hir felfe, the Kyng being hir naturall and louing father: Acharisto thought on the other side, that if hee might speake with Euphimia, a way would be founde eyther for hys

escape, or else for hys delyuery. Whereupon Acharisto beinge in this deliberation, found meanes to talke wyth the Iaylor's wyfe, and intreated hir to shewe hym so mutch fauour, as to procure Euphimia to come vnto him: she accordingly brought to passe, that the yong Gentlewoman in fecrete wife came to speake wyth thys trayterous varlet, who fo foone as he fawe hir, shedinge from hys eyes store of teares, pitifully complayninge, sayd vnto hir: "I know Euphimia, that the kinge your father doth not inclose me in this cruell prison, ne yet afflicteth me wyth these miserable torments, for any fuspicion he conceyueth of me for any intended fact, but only for the loue which I beare you, and for the like, (for whych I render humble thanks) that you do beare to me: and because that I am wery of this wretched state, and know that nothing elfe can rid me from this paynefull Lyfe, but onely death, I am determined wyth myne owne propre hands to cut the threed of life wherewith the destinies hitherto have prolonged the same, that thys my breathinge Ghoast, which breatheth forth these doleful playntes, may flee into the Skyes, to rest it selfe amonges the restfull spirites aboue, or wandre into the pleasaunte hellish fieldes, amongs the shadows of Creusa, Aeneas wyfe, or else wyth the ghost of complayning Dido. But ere I did the same, I made myne humble prayer to the maiesty divine, that hee would vouchfafe to fhew me fo much grace, as before I dye, I myghte fulfil my couetous eyes with fight of you, whose ymage still appeareth before those greedy Gates, and fansie representeth vnto my myndfull heart. Which great defired thing, fith God aboue hath graunted, I yeld him infinit thankes, and fith my desteny is sutch, that futch must be the end of loue, I doe reioyce that I muste dye for your fake, which only is the cause that the King your father so laboureth for my death: I neede not to molest you with the false euidence giuen against me, by those malicious villaines, that be already dead, which onely hath thus incenfed the Kinge's Wrathe and heavy rage agaynst mee: whereof I am so free, as worthilve they bee executed for the same: for if it were so, then true it is, (and as lyghtly you myght beleue) that I neuer knew what Loue you beare mee, and you lykewyse did neuer knowe, the loue I bare to you: and therefore you may thinke that so impossible is the

one, as I dyd euer meane, thinke, or ymagine any harme or peryll to your father's person. To be short, I humbly do besech you to beleue, that so faythfully as man is able to loue a woman, so have I loued you: and that it may please you to bee so myndfull of me in thys fadyng Lyfe, as I shal be of you in that life to come." And in fayinge fo, with face all bathed in teares, he clypped hir about the myddle, and fast imbracing hir said: "Thus takinge my last farewell of you (myne onely life and ioy) I commende you to the gouernement of the fupernall God, and my felfe to death, to be dysposed as pleaseth him." Euphimia, which before was not perfuaded that Acharisto was guylty of that deuised Treason, nowe gaue full belyefe and credite to his wordes, and Weeping wyth him for company, comforted him fo wel as the could, and bidding him to bee of good chere, she fayde, that she would feeke such meanes as for hir fake and loue he should not dye: and that before longe time did passe, shee would help him out of prison. Acharisto, although he vttered by ruful voice that lamentable talke, for remedye to ridde himselfe from pryson, yet he did but fayne all that he fpake, addyng further: "Alas, Euphimia, do not incurre your Father's wrath to pleafe my minde: fuffer me quietly to take that death, which finister Fortune and cruell fate hath prouided to Euphimia, vanquished with inspeakable abridge my dayes." griefe and burning paffion of loue, faid: "Ah, Acharifto, the onely ioy and comfort of my lyfe, do not pierce my heart with fuch displeasant wordes: for what should I do in this wretched world, yf you for my fake should suffre death? Wherfore put away that cruel thought, and be content to faue your Lyfe, that hereafter in joye and myrth you may spend the same: trusting that yf meanes may be founde for your dispatche from hence, we shall liue the reste of our prolonged Lyfe together, in sweete and happy dayes: for my Father is not made of stone slint, nor yet was nourced of Hircan Tigre: he is not fo malicious but that in tyme to come hee may be made to know the true discourse of thine innocent life, and hope thou shalt atteyne his fauour more than euer thou didst before, the care whereof onely leave to me, and take no thought thy felfe: for I make promife vpon myne affured faith to brynge the same to passe: wherefore give ouer thy conceyued

gryefe, and bende thy selfe to lyne so merie a life, as euer gentleman did, trained vp in court as thou hast bene." "I am content." said Acharifto, "thus to doe. The Gods forbid that I should declyne my hearte and mynde from thy beheft, who of thy wonted grace doest feeke continuance of my Lyfe, but rather, sweete Euphimia, than thou shouldest suffre any daunger to performe thy promise, I make request (for the common lone betwene vs both) to leaue me in this present dangerous state: rather would I lose my lyfe than thou shouldest hazard the least heare of thy heade for my releefe." "Wee shall be both salfe ynough, (aunswered Euphimia) for my deuice proceedinge from a woman's heade, hath already drawen the plot of thy delineraunce." And with those wordes they both did end their talke, whose trickling teares did rather finishe the fame, than willing mynds: and eyther of them geening a kyffe vnto the Tower Walle, wherein Acharisto was fast shutte, Euphimia departed turmoyled wyth a Thousande amorous Pryckes, and ceased not but firste of all to corrupt and winne the Iayler's Wyfe, whose husband was fent forth on bufinesse of the king's: the conclusion of which practife was, that when shee caried meate to Acharifto, according to the order appoynted, she should fayne hirfelfe to be violently dispoyled of the Pryson Key by Acharisto, who taking the same from hir: should shut hir in the Prison and escape, and when hir husband did returne, shee should make complaynt of the violence done vnto hir: accordinge to which deuise, the practyfe was accomplished: And when hir husbande returned home, hearing his wyfe crie out within the Tower, was maruaylloufly amazed, and understandinge that Acharisto was fled, (ignoraunt of the pollicy betwene his Wyfe and Euphimia,) hee fell into great rage, and speedely repayred to the Kynge, and tolde him what had chaunced. The Kinge thinking that the breach of Prison was rather through the woman's simplicity than purposed malice, did mitigate his displeasure, howbeit forthwith he sent out fcouts to fpy, and watch into what place Acharisto was gone, whose fecret flight, made all their trauayle to be in vayne. Then the Kinge when hee faw that he could not be found, made Proclamation throughout his realme, that who fo would bringe vnto him the head of Acharisto, should have to Wyse hys onely Daughter, and

after hys decease shoulde possesse his Kingdome for Dowry of that mariage. Many knightes did put themselues in redinesse to atchieue that enterprife, and aboue al, Philon was the chiefe, not for gredinesse of the kingdome, but for loue which hee bare vnto the Gentlewoman. Whereof Acharisto havinge intelligence, and perceyuinge that in no place of Europa hee could bee fafe and fure from daunger, for the multitude of them which purfued him vnto death, caused Euphimia to vnderstand the miserable Estate wherein hee was. Euphimia which bent hir minde, and employed hir study for his fafegarde, imparted hir lone which shee bare to Acharisto, to an aged Gentlewoman, which was hir nurse and gouernesse, and befought hir that she would intreat hir sonne called Sinapus, (one very well beloued of the king) to reach his help vnto hir defire, that Acharisto might retourne to the court agayn. The Nourse like a wyfe woman lefte no perfuafion vnfpoken, nor counfell vnremembred, which she thought was able to diffuade the yong gentlewoman from hir conceiued loue: but the wound was fo deepely made, and hir hearte fo greuously wounded with the three forked arrows of the little blinde archer Cupide, that despising all the reasons of hir beloued nurse, shee sayde, how she was firmely bent eyther to runne from hir father, and to feke out Acharisto, to fustaine wyth him one equall fortune, or elfe with hir owne hands to procure death, if some remedy were not found to recouer the king's good grace for the returne of Acharifto. The Nurse vanquished with pity of the yong mayden, fearinge both the one and the other daunger that myght enfue, fent for Sinapus, and vppon their talke together, Euphimia and hee concluded, that Acharisto should bee brought agayne vnto the Courte, and that she hir selfe should present him to the King: wherein should want no kinde of diligence vntill the Kyng did entertayne him agayne for his faythfull fernaunt, as he was wont to do. Vpon which refolution, Acharisto was fent for, and being come, Sinapus and Euphimia together with the nurse tolde hym in what fort they three had concluded touchinge his health and fafegarde: which of him being well lyked, did giue them humble thankes: and then Sinapus went vnto the kyng, and told him, that there was one newly arrived at Corinth, to make a prefent vnto his grace of the head of

Acharisto. At which newes the kynge shewed hymselfe so ioyfull, as if hee had gotten an other Kingdome: and beinge placed vnder his cloath of state, with his Counsell and Princely trayne about hym, tellinge them the cause of that assembly, commaunded hym that brought those news, to bring the party forth newely come vnto the City to present the head of Acharisto before the presence of the King, who no sooner looked vpon him, but fell into futch a rage, as the fire feemed to flame out of his angry eyes, and commaunded him prefently to be taken and put to death. But Acharifto falling downe vpon hys knees, humbly befought his maiesty to geeue him leave to speake: but the kinge not suffering him to vtter one word commaunded hym away. Then the Counfellours and other Lords of the Court, intreated his grace to heare him: at whose requestes and supplications he seemed to be content. Then Acharisto began to fay: "Most facred Prynce, and redoubted fouerayne Lord, the cause of this my presumptuous repaire before your maiesty, is not to shew my selfe guilty of thy late deuised conspiracy, ne yet to crave pardon for the same, but to fatisfie your Maiesty, wyth that contented defire, whych by Proclamation ye have pronounced through your highnesse Realmes and dominions: which is, to offer this heade for reuenge of the faulte vniustlye layed vnto my charge by those foure, which worthily have tasted the deserved payne of theyr offense. Wherfore I am come hither of myne owne accord, to shew the loue and greate defyre, whych euer I had to ferue and please your Maiesty: and for that I would not confume my life in your displeasure, I make offer of the fame to your mercifull wyll and dysposition, chofynge rather to die, and leaue your maiesty satisfied and contented, than to lyue in happy state, your princely minde displeased: but defyrous that your maiefly should know myne innocence, I humblye befech your grace to heare what I can fay, that my fidelity maye bee throughly vnderstanded, and the wickednesse of the Varlets, mine accusers wel wayed and considered." Then he began to rehearfe all the things done by hym for the feruyce of his crowne and maiestye, and finally into what daunger he did put himself, when he kylled the Lacedemonian king, that went about by treason to murder him: whych enterpryse might appeare vnto

him to bee a fure and euident testimony, that hee ment nothinge hurtfull or preiudiciall to his highnesse: and that hee esteemed not his life, when hee aduentured for his feruice and fauegard to employ the same: and after these alleaged causes, he added briefly, that the lone which his maiesty knew to be betweene him and Euphimia his Daughter, ought to have perfuaded him, that he had rather have fuffered death himfelfe, than commit a thing difpleafant to Euphimia. And knowing that a more offensive thynge coulde not chaunce to hir, than the vilent death of her father, hee myghte well thyncke that hee woulde have deuyfed the death of a Thousande other, rather than that horible and abhominable deede, futch as hys greatest Ennemy woulde neuer haue done, mutch lesse hee whych was bounde vnto hym by fo many Receyued Benefittes, for whose feruice and preservacion he had dedicated and vowed hys Lyfe and Soule: but if so be his maiestie's rancor and displeasure could not be mitigated, but by doinge him to death, hee defired that none of his alleaged reasons should bee accepted, and therefore was there ready to facrifice his life at his maiestie's disposition and pleafure. Acharifto by nature could tel his tale excedingly well, and the more his tongue flode him in feruice, the greater appeared his eloquence: whych fo pierced the minde of the king and perfuaded the Counfellers, and other of the Court, as he was demed giltleffe of the treason: and the matter was so debated, and the King intreated to graunt him pardon, as he was accompted most worthy of his fauour. Then the kyng, by the aduise of hys Counfell, was perfwaded, that by force of hys proclamation, hys daughter should be given to Acharisto in mariage, and his kingedome for a dowrie, bicause hee had offered his owne heade, accordyng to the effecte of the same. So the kinge repentinge himfelse that he had offended Acharisto, in the end agreed to the aduise of his Counsell, and gaue him his daughter to wife: whereof Euphimia was so ioyful, as they bee that atteyne the summe of their heart's defire. The father lived one whole yeare after this mariage, and Euphimia fo pleasant a life for a certaine time, as was possible for any Gentlewoman. Hir father was no fooner dead, but the vnkinde man, nay rather brute beafte, had forgotten all the benefits receyued of his kinde and louing wife: and having by hir onelye meanes got a Kingdome, began to hate hir fo straungely, as he could not abide hir fight, (futch is the property of cancred obliuion, which after it crepeth into ambicious heads, neuer hath minde of passed amitie, ne regardeth former benefite, but like a monster and deadly enniny to humaine nature, ouerwhelmeth in his bottomlesse gulfe all pietie and kindnesse) and determined in the ende for recompence of futch great good turnes, to despoyle hir of hir Lyfe. Howe thinke you, fayre Ladies, was not this a fayre rewarde for the loue, the trauailes and forrowes fusteined for this ingrate and villanous man, by that royal lady, to faue his life, and to take him to husband? Here is manifest (probatum) that in a vile and servele minde, no vertue, no duety, no received benefites can be harboured. Here is a leffon for yong Gentlewomen to beware howe they contemne and despife the grave adulfe of theyr auncient fathers. Here they may fee the damage and hurt that vnaduised youth incurreth, when neglecting their Parents holesome admonitions, they gyue themselues to the loue of sutch as be vnworthy theyr estate and callyng. For what should ayle the Gentle pucell borne of gentle bloud but to match her selfe in like affinity, and not to care for curryshe kind, or race of churle. Bee there no Gentlemen to be found of personage and beauty worthy to ioyne in loue wyth them? Bee they fo precious in nature or tender in education as theyr lyke can not be vouchfafed to couple in mariage yoke? Compare the glyfteringe gold to droffie durte, and futch is the difference betweene gentle and vngentle. But perhaps bringyng vp may alter nature, and custome transforme defect of birth: as Licurgus the lawemaker dyd trye betwene the Currish whelpe and the Spanyell kinde, both by trayning vp running to their contraries, the Spanyel not vsed to hunt eigre vpon the potage dishe, the other nouseled in that pastime pursuing his game. But that Metamorphofis is feldome feene amongs humane fort, and therfore I aduife the gentle kind, to matche themselues in equal lotte, and not to trust Sir Custome's curtesse in choyse of seere. Returne we then to vnkind Acharisto, who now in full possession of his defired praie, reuertinge to his puddle of carlishe will and cancred nature, after many thousand wronges don to his most noble and gentle Quene, accused hir to be an adulteresse, and as one indeede,

(although most innocent) she was condemned to the mercilesse fire. Philon, Kyng of Peloponefus, which (as we have fayd before) loued Euphimia as he did the balles of his owne eyes, vnderstanding the crueltye that this wicked Man vsed towards hir, to whom both his lyfe and Kyngdome did belonge, moued wyth nobility of mynd, determined to declare to Euphimia the inward feruent loue which he bare hir, and to chastise Acharisto for his ingratitude with due correction. Wherfore depely debating wyth himselfe of this adventure, thus he sayde: "Now is the time Euphimia, that Philon shewe what faythful Loue he hath euer borne vnto thee, and that he delyuer thee both from the prefent daunger wherein thou art, and from the hands of that vnkynde wretche, that is farre vnworthy of futch a wife: for if thou haddest agreed to thy father's wyll, and yelded to the purfute of him that loued thee beste, thou haddest no neede of rescue nowe, ne yet bene in perill of the wastfull flames of fire, which be ready to confume thy flesh and tender corps, full tenderly sometimes beloued of thy deare father, and of thy louyng frend Philon." When he had spoken those wordes, hee earnestly disposed him self vpon that enterpryse. There was in those daies a custome in Corinth, that they which were condemned to death, were caried 111. miles forth of the City, and there the fentence pronounced against them, were put to execution. Philon hauving intelligence hereof, did put in readinesse a good troupe of horsemen, and being secretly imbarked, arrived at Corinth, and closely the nyght before Euphimia should be brought to the fire, harde by the place where the miserable Lady should be burnt, into a woode he conveyed his People: and fo foone as the Sergeants and officers were approched neere the place wyth the lady, he issued forth, and did set vpon the throng, not fufferyng one of them to remayne aliue, to carve newes. When he had delyuered Euphimia from that prefent daunger of hir lyfe, and the companye dispercied, he fayd to the Queene: "Nowe thou mayft fee (fayre Queene) the diverfitie, betwene the disloyaltie and vnkindenesse of Acharisto, and the faith and loue of Philon. But for that I meane not to leave hys ingratitude vnrevenged, thou shalt staye here, vntyll thou heare newes of the due chastisment which I shall give hym." Those

dire and cruell words foretold of hir husband's death moued hir honest and Pryncely hearte that by no meanes could bee altered from the gentle nature, which it first had tasted and received: and althoughe shee had suffred Mortall and Solempne iniury of hir vnkynde husbande for Manyfolde Benefites, yet (shee good gentlewoman) woulde permyt no duetye of a trustye and faythfull Wyfe vnperformed. Wherefore shee befoughte Philon vpon her knees, not to procede to further reuenge of Acharisto, telling him, that enough it was for hir to have escaped that present peryl, from which he like a princely Gentleman had deliuered hir, and therefore duering hir life was most bounde vnto him. Philon greately wondred at the goodnesse of this Ladie: howbeit the ingratitude of that Varlet by no meanes he would fuffer to bee vnpunished. And beeing aduertifed that Acharifto remayned in hys Palace without any suspicion of this adventure, banded neyther with Guarde or other affurance, committed Euphimia to fafe custodie, and fodainly affailed the Palace of Acharisto: and finding the Gates open, he entred the city, crying out vpon the Wickednesse and treason of Acharisto. At which wordes the whole City began to ryse, to helpe Philon in his enterpryfe: for there was no state or degree, but abhorred the vnkind order of that Varlet, towards the noble woman their Queene. Philon aided with the people, affaulted the Palace, and in fhort space invaded the same: and the Varlet beeing apprehended, was put to death. The Corinthians feeing the noble mind of Philon, and the loue which he bare to Euphimia, and knowing that their late Kyng was disposed to have matched her wyth Philon, were very willing to haue him to be their Kinge, and that Euphimia should be his wife, supposinge that vnder the gouernement of a Prynce fo gentle and valiant, they might liue very happily and ioyefullye. Execution don vpon that moste vnkinde varlet, Philon caufed the Lady to be conneyed home into hir royal pallace: and the people with humble fubmission, began to perfuade hir to marie wyth that younge Prince Philon. But shee which had lodged hir thoughts and fixed hir mind vpon that caytife, who vnnaturally had abused hir, would by no meanes confent to take a new husband, faying, that the seconde mariage was not to bee allowed in any woman. And albeit that shee

knewe howe greately the was bounde to Philon, as duringe life not able to recompence his louing kindnesse and valyante exployte performed for hir fafegard, yet for al hir vnhappy fortune, shee was minded styll to remayne a widowe, and well contented that Philon shoulde possesse hir whole domynion and kingdome, and fhe pleafed to lyue his fubicate: which state she sayd, did like her best. Philon, that not for desire of the Kingdome, but for loue of the Lady had attempted that worthy and honourable enterprife, fayd vnto hir: "Euphimia, it was onely for youre fake that I aduentured thys daungerous indeuor, to ridde you from the slander that might have enfued your innocent death, and out of the cruel hands of hym, whom vnworthily you did fo dearely loue. No defyre of kyngdome or worldly glorye induced me herevnto: no care that I had to enlarge the boundes of my countrey foile pricked the courage of my mynd (that is altogether empty of ambytion) but the Paffion of careleffe Loue, whych thys long tyme I haue borne you in your happy father's dayes, to whom I made inceffant fute: and to your felfe I was fo long a Suter, vntyll I receyued extreame repulse: for which I vowed a perpetuall fingle Lyfe, vntyll thys occasion was offred: the brute whereof when I hearde first, so stirred the mynde of your most louyng knight, that droufie fleepe or greedy hunger, coulde not force this reftleffe body to tarry at home, vntyl I reuenged my felfe vpon that villaine borne, which went about wyth roafting flames to confume the innocente flesh of hir whome I loued best. And therfore mustred together my men of armes and in fecret fort imbarked our felues and arryued here: where wee haue accomplished the thyng we came for and haue fettled you in quiet raygne, free from peryl of traiterous mindes, crauing for thys my fact nought elfe of you but wylling mynd to be my wife: which fith you do refuse, I passe not for rule of your kyngdom, ne yet for abode in Corinth, but meane to leaue you to your choyfe. For fatisfied am I, that I haue manifested to the world the greatnesse of my loue, which was fo ample as ever king could beare to vertuous Queene: and fo farewell." At which words he made a figne to his people, that they shoulde shippe them selues for return to Peloponesus. But the Senatours and al the people of Corinth feing the curtefie of Philon.

and how greatly their Queene was bound vnto him, fel downe vpon their knees, and with ioyned hands befought hir to take him to husbande, neuer ceasing from teares and supplication, vntyl she had confented to their requeste. Then the mariage was solempnifed with great ioy and triumph, and the whole City after that tyme, lyued in great felicity and quiet, so long as nature lengthned the dayes of those two Noble

Prynces.

THE SIXTEENTH NOUELL.

The Marchionisse of Monferrato, with a banket of Hennes, and certaine pleasant wordes, repressed the fond love of Philip the French Kynge.

GOOD Euphimia (as you have harde) did fondly apply hir loue vpon a feruile man, who though bred vp in court where trayninge and vse doth alter the rude conditions of sutch as be intertayned there, yet voyde of all gentlenesse, and frustrate of Nature's fweetenesse in that curteous kinde, as not exchaunginge natiue fiercenesse for noble advancement, returned to hys hoggish soyle, and walowed in the durty filth of Inhumanity, whose nature myght wel with fork, or staffe be expelled, but home againe it would have come, as Horace pleadeth in his Epiftles. O noble Gentlewoman, that mildly fuffred the displeasure of the good king hir father, who would fayne have diffuaded hir from that vnfeemely match, to ioyne with a yong Prince, a king, a Gentleman of great perfection; and O pestilent Carle, being beloued of so honourable a pucell, that for treason discharged thy head from the block, and of a donghill flaue preferred thee to be a king, wouldest for those deferts in the ende frame fayned matter to confume hir. With iust hatred then did the Noble Emperour Claudius Cæsar prosecute those of bond and seruile kinde that were matched with the free and noble. Right well knew hee that some taste of egrenesse would rest in sutch sauage fruite, and therefore made a law, that the iffue of them should not have like liberty and preheminence, as other had, which agreeably did couple. What harme futch mariage hath deferred to divers flates and persons (t'avoide other examples) the former Nouell teacheth. Wherfore to ende the fame, with bewailing of Euphimia for hir vnluckie lot, begin we now to glad our felues with the wife and stoute aunswer of a chaste Marquesse, a Gentlewoman of singular beauty and discretion, made to the fond demaund of a mighty Monarch, that fondly fell in loue with hir, and made a reckening of that, which was doubtfull to recouer. This king by Louing Hir whome he neuer faw,

fared like the man that in his slepe dreamed that he had in holde the thynge furthest from him. For the King neuer saw hir, before he heard hir praifed, and when hee hearde hir praifed, for purpose to winne her, he trauailed oute of his way, so sure to enjoy hir, as if he had neuer feene hir. This hiftorie, although briefe, yet sheweth light to noble dames that be purfued by Prynces, and teacheth them wyth what regarde they ought to interteine fuch futers. The Marquesse then of Monferrato, a citye in Italy, beynge a Gentleman of great prowesse and valiance, was appointed to transfrete the Seas in a generall passage made by the Christians, wyth an huge Armie and great furniture. And as it chaunced, vpon a day greate talke was had in the court of king Philip furnamed Lufcus (bicaufe he was poreblinde) who likewyfe was making preparation to depart out of Fraunce in the faid iorney. Report was made by a knight which knewe the faid Marquize, that in all the world there was not the like maried couple, as the Marquize and his wyfe were, as well bicaufe the Marquize was bruted to be an excellent gentleman, as also for that his wyfe amonges al the troupe of Ladies, that lived in the world that time, was the fairest and most vertuous. Which words so entred the French king's head, as fodainely (neuer feeing hir in all his life) he began to loue hir, and for that purpose determined to imbarke him felfe at Genoua, that by tranailyng that way by lande, he myght haue good occasion to see the Marchionisse, thinking that her husband being absent, hee might easily obtain that he defired. And as he had deuifed, he began his enterpryfe: who fending al his power before, toke his iorney wyth a meane trayne of Gentlemen: and beynge within one Daye's iourney of the Ladye's House, hee fent hir worde that the nexte Daye hee would visite her at Dynner. The fage and discrete lady joyfully aunswered the Messanger, that she would accompt his comming for a great and finguler pleafure, and fayd that hys grace should be most heartily welcome. Afterwards she maruelled why futch a king as he was, would in hir husband's absence, come to hir house: and in that maruel and confideration she was no whit deceyued, coniecturinge that the fame of hir beauty was the cause of hys comminge. Neuertheleffe, like a wife Lady and honest gentlewoman, she determined to do him honour, and caused the worshipfull of hir country futch as remayned behinde, to be affembled, for aduice in all thinges that were necessary for hys intertaynement. But the feast and variety of meats that should be served, she alone tooke vppon hir to dispose and order: wherefore speedily sendinge about, and makinge prouision for all the Hennes that might be gotten throughout the countrey, commaunded hir cookes, of those Hennes without other thing what so euer, to prepare diuers seruices. The king fayled not the next day to come accordingly as he had fent word: and was with great honour receyued of the Lady, and in beholdinge hir, she seemed vnto hym (besides hys imagination comprehended by the former woordes of the Knyght) to be farre more faire, honest and vertuous, than hee thought, attributyng vnto hir, fingular prayfe and commendation. And fo much the more his defire was kindled, as she passed the estimation bruted of hir. And after that the King had wythdrawen him felfe into the chamber ordeined and made ready for him, as appertained to a Prynce fo greate, and that dinner time was come, the King and Madame the Marchionisse sat together at one boorde, and other according to their degrees were placed at feueral tables. The King ferued with many Dishes and excellent Wynes, beholdinge fometymes the Lady Marchionesse, conceyued great delight and pleafure. But vewing the feruice, and meates (although dreffed in divers fortes) to be but Hennes, he began to wonder, specially knowing the foyle wherein they were to be fo rich and plentifull, as by little trauayle, great abundance of Foule and Venison might haue bin prouided, and thought that she had indifferent leysure to Chafe and Hunt, after that he had fent hir woorde of hys comminge. Notwythstandinge he would not take occasion to enter into talke of those wants of better Cheare (hir Hennes only excepted) who lookyng vpon hir, with mery Countenaunce hee fayde vnto hir: "Madame were all these Hennes bred in thys countrey wythout a Cock?" The Marchionisse which full well vnderstoode the cause of his demaunde, thinkinge that God had fent hir an apt tyme for aunswere as she defired, boldly aunswered the Kinge: "No and it please your grace, but of Women, albeit in honour and apparell there is some difference, yet they be al made in this Countrey as they be elfe where." The kyng hearing hir aunswere, right wel did know the occasion of the Banket of Hennes, and where-unto hir wordes did tend: and considered that to bestow any further talke to so wyse a Lady, it were in vayne, and that force there could take no place. Lyke as vnaduisedly he fell in loue, so it behoued him of necessity wysely to staunch the fire for his honour sake, and wythout any more taunting wordes, fearing hir reuenge, he dined without hope to get other thinge of hir. And when hee had done, to the intent by hys sodayne departure, he might couer his dishonest comming, thankinge hir for the honour which he had receyued, and sherecommending him to God, he departed to Genoua.

Here may be proued the great difference betweene Wysedome and Folly, betweene Vertue and Vice. The King more by Lust, than other desire, by circumstances endeuoured to sound the deapth of the Ladie's minde:

she by comely answere, payd hym home for his folly. A liuely representation of a noble creature, so well bedecked wyth Vertue as wyth Beauty.

THE SEUENTEENTH NOUELL.

Mistresse Dianora demanded of maister Ansaldo a garden so faire in Ianuary, as in the moneth of May. Mayster Ansaldo (by meanes of an obligation which he made to a Nicromancer) caused the same to bee done. The husband agreed with the gentlewoman that she should do the pleasure which maister Ansaldo required, who hearinge the liberality of the husband, acquited hir of hir promise, and the Necromancer discharged maister Ansaldo.

OF all things commonly accompanying the maner and trade of man's life, nothing is more circumspectly to be attended and prouided for, than regard and estimation of honesty: which attire, as it is most excellent, and comely, so aboue al other vayne Toyes of outward apparell to bee preferred: and as honefty hath all other good Conditions included in it felfe, as the fame by any meanes cannot stray out of that tract, troden before by the steppes of that most excellent vertue: euen so, impossible it is for the party adorned with the same, to wander one iote from that foretrodden Path: wherefore let eche wyght that traceth this worldly Lyfe, foresee the due observation of all thinges incident to that which is honest. Nothinge in thys lyfe (fayth Tully in his oration, for the Poet Archias) is fo mutch to bee regarded. Honesty, for the gettinge whereof all torments of body, all perills and daungers of death be not to be regarded: honesty then beinge a Treafure fo precious, what care not onely for the atchieuinge but for the conferuation ought to bee employed? in the practife whereof, one speciall thinge ought to be attended, which is, how a vow or promife ought to be made, or how the estimation of honesty ought to be hazarded for any thinge feeme it neuer fo impossible: for what is it that love and Money hath not brought to passe? what heard aduentures by Iafon? what fleight by Alexander the Sonne of kynge Pryamus? what monsters slavne and labours sustayned by Hercules? what daungers and exploits fome haue incurred and other attempted by divers? to bee fhort,

Nihil eft quod non effreno captus amore, ausit.

As Ouide the Poet fayth:

Nothinge there is, but that the louing man doth dare, Surprifed with frantike fit, eche deed he doth not spare.

Wherfore let euery wight beware how they gage their honesty for any enterprise (seeme it neuer so impossible). Dianora deerely beloued of a gentleman, and earnestly assayled, in the ende yelded vpon a condition: which if it could be brought to passe (which she thought impossible) was content to surrender to his loue: who confulting with a Magitian, performed hir request: then what followed, and what counsel hir husband gaue hir, after she had broken the effect of hir promise to hym, and what Curtesie was vsed on all fides, the sequele hereof dyscloseth. The Countrey of Frioli although it be colde, yet is it pleafaunt by reason of many faire mountaines, riners, and cleere sprynges that are in the same: where there is a City called Vdina, and in the fame fometime dwellyng a faire gentlewoman called Mistresse Dianora, the wyfe of Gilberto, a notable rich man, a very curteous personage, and of good behaviour. This Lady, for hir graces and vertues, was intierly beloued of a Gentleman and great Lord, called maister Ansaldo Grandese, who for his liberalyty and valyance in armes, was famous and well knowen: and albeit that hee loued hir feruently, feking al meanes possible to be beloued of hir, foliciting hir many tymes by Anıbassadours, yet his labour was in vayn. And the Lady being offended for hys dayly fute and trauayle, hee for al hir refusal and disagreement to his defire, would not abstaine from louing hir, but still mayntayne his importunate fute: the denifing with her felfe how to rid him away, made a request vnto him, so straunge and impossible, (in hir iudgement) as he was not able to bring the fame to paffe: and vpon a day she fayd vnto an old woman, (the which cam often tymes to fue vnto hir in hys behalf) these words: "Good wife, thou hast many times affured me, that Maister Ansaldo doth loue mee aboue all other, and thou hast offered vnto me maruellous giftes and prefents in hys name: al which I have refused, vpon confideration,

that I mynd not to fauour or loue him for his goods: but if thou canft inftify by warrantize, or other probable argument, that hee loueth me fo mutch as thou fayest, I will condescend without fayle to love him againe and to doe the thing that it shal please him to commaund me: therfore if he wil affure me to do that thing which I shal require hym to do, tel him that I am at his commaundement." "What is that madame," (faid the old woman) "that you defire?" "The thing which I demaund" (answered the Gentlewoman) "is, that he should cause to be made here without the Citie, during the moneth of Januarie next commyng, a garden full of greene herbes, floures and trees, befored wyth leanes, euen as it were in the moneth of May: and if so be that he do it not, then let him neuer fend thee or any other vnto me agayn: for if afterwards he be importunate vpon me, like as I haue hitherto kept it close from my husbande and parents, euen fo complayning vnto them, I wyll affaye to bee dispatched from hys long and tedious fute." When the knight vnderstoode that request, and the offer that hys Mystresse made him (although it feemed a thinge very difficulte and all most impossible to bee done) knowinge very well that she did the same for none other purpose, but onely to put him out of hope that euer hee should enioy hir, hee determined notwithstandinge, to proue what hee was able to do. And for that purpose fent to seeke in many places of the Worlde if there were any man that could affift him and geue him Counsel therin. In the ende there was one found that offred to doe it (if he were well waged thereunto) by the art of Necromancie, with whom maister Ansaldo bargained for a great summe of Then he expected the moneth of Ianuarie with great deuotion, whych beeing come, euen when the coldest wether was, and that al places were ful of fnow and yee, this Necromancer vsed his art in futch fort, as in the night after the holy dais of Christmasse, in a faire medow adioyning to the city, ther appered in the morning (as they can testify that saw the same) one of the fairest gardens that euer any man faw, full of herbes, trees, and fruites of all fortes: which when maister Ansaldo had seen, God knoweth if he were glad or not: and incontinently caufed to be gathered the fairest fruites and floures that were there, and secretlye fente the fame to his Friende, inuiting hir to come and fee the Garden which she had procured him to make, to the intent thereby she might know the love that he bare hir, and to remember the promife which she made him, and confirmed by othe, that he might from that time forth efteeme hir a woman fo good as hir promife. When the Gentlewoman fawe the flowers and fruictes and hearing tell by report of the straunge things that were in that Garden, began to repent hir felfe of the promise which shee had made: but for all her repentaunce, she like one desirous to se fraung things, wente wyth many other women to fee the fame: and having praifed it, not wythout greate admiration, she returned home, the angrieft woman that ever was, when she had considered in what fort she had abused hir selfe by meanes of that Garden: and hir rage was fo greate, that she could by no meanes keepe the same so secrete or close, but that her husband muste perceive the fame, who woulde needes knowe of hir al the whole matter: the Gentlewoman a long time kepte it fecrete: in the ende she was constrained to declare vnto him the same in order. Hir husbande hearing what she had promised was sodainly very angry: afterwardes confidering the pure intente of his wife, hee wifely appealed hir, and fayd: "Dianora, it is not the acte of a wyfe and vertuoufe wife to encline hir eare to futch meffages as those be, and lesse honest to make any marte or bargain of hir honesty with any person, under what condicion soener it be. Words which the hart receiveth by the eares, have greater force than many do esteme, and there is nothing so difficult, but by the amorous is brought to passe. First therfore thou hast done euil to give eare vnto such ambassage, and afterwards for agreement to the bargaine: for the weight of chastity is so ponderous, as by no meanes it ought to be laid in balance, eyther by impossibilities to boast and bragge therof, or else by affurance of their conceined thought to bring it into question, leaste in all places the same may be dysputed vpon, and blemysh with the note of lightnesse, the person tyll that time vnspotted: but bycause I know the purity of thy heart, I wyll agree vnto thee for discharge of thy promise, whych peraduenture, fome other would not doe, moued therunto for the feare I have of the Necromancer, who if he fee Mayster

Anfaldo to be offended bicanfe thou haft deluded hym, may doe vs fome displeasure: wherfore I wyll that thou go to maister Anfaldo, and if thou canest by any meanes to vse thy selfe (as thyne honour faued) thou mayst discharge thy promise, I shall commende thy wit: but if there be no remedye otherwyse, for that onely time then lende forth thy Body and not thy wyll." The gentlewoman hearyng hir husband so wisely speake, could doe nought else but weepe, and fayd, that she would not agree to his requeste. Notwythstanding, it pleased the husband (for al the denial whych his wife did make) that it shoulde be so: by meanes wherof, the next morning vpon the point of day the Gentlewoman in the homliest attire she had, with two of hir servantes before, and hir mayde behinde, wente to the lodging of maifter Ansaldo, who when he hearde tell that hys Louer was come to fee hym, maruelled mutch, and rifing vp, called the Necromancer, and fayde vnto him: "My wyll is, that thou fee how mutch thyne arte hath preuailed:" and going vnto hir, without any difordinate luft, he faluted hir wyth reuerence, and honeftly received hir. Then they entred into a faire Chamber, and fittyng downe before a great fire, he fayde vnto hir these Wordes: "Madame, I humbly befeeche you, if the loue which I haue borne you of long time, and yet doe beare, deserue some recompence, that it please you to tell me vnfainedly the cause which have made you to come hither thus early, and with such a company." The shamefast Gentlewoman, hir eyes ful of teares, made answere: "Sir, the loue which I beare you, nor any promifed faith haue brought me hither, but rather the only commaundement of my husband, who hath greater respect to the payne and trauaile of your disordinate loue, than to his own honour or my reputation, who hath caused me to come hither, and by hys commaundement am redy for this once to fatisfie your pleasure." If Mayster Ausaldo were abashed at the begynnyng, he much more did maruell when he hearde the Gentlewoman thus to speake, and moued with the liberality of hir husband, he began to chaunge his heate into compassion, and faid: "Mistresse, God defend if it be true that you do say, that I should foyle the honour of hym, whych hath pity vpon my loue, and therefore you may tarrie here fo long as it shall please you,

with futch affurance of your honesty as if you were my naturall fifter, and frankly may depart when you be disposed, vpon futch condicion, that you render in my behalf those thanks vnto your husband which you shal thinke convenient, for the great liberality whych he hath imployed vpon me, deeming my felfe henceforth fo much bound vnto him, as if I were his brother or Seruaunt." The Gentlewoman hearing those wordes, the best contented that euer was, fayd vnto him: "All the worlde could neuer make me beleue (your great honesty considered) that other thing could happen vnto mee by my commyng hyther, than that which prefently I fee: for which I recken my felfe perpetually bounde vnto you." And takynge hir leaue, honorablye returned in the aforefayde company home to hir hufband, and tolde hym what had chaunced, which engendred perfect loue and amytye betweene hym and mayster Ansaldo. The Necromancer to whom maister Anfaldo determined to gyue the price, couenanted betwene them, feyng the liberality which the husbande had vsed towards mayster Anfaldo, and the like of mavster Ansaldo towards the Gentlewoman, fayd: "God defend, that fith I have feene the hufband lyberall of his honour, and you bountiful of your loue and curtefie, but that I be likewyse franke in my reward: for knowing that it is well employed of you, I purpose that you shall keepe The knyghte was ashamed, and would have forced him to take the whole, or part: but in offryng the same, he lost his laboure: and the Necromancer the third day after, hauving vndon his Garden, and defirous to departe, tooke his leaue.

Thus Anialdo extinguishing the dishonest loue kindled in hys hearte, for inioving of his Lady, vpon consideration of honest charity, and regard of Curtesie, repressed his wanton minde, and abstevned from that which God graunte that others by lik Example may refrayne.

THE EIGHTEENTH NOUELL.

Mithridanes envious of the liberality of Nathan, and goinge aboute to kill hym, spake vnto him vnknowne, & being infourmed by himfelf by what meanes he might do the same he found him in a little wood accordingly as hee had tolde him, who knowinge him, was ashamed, and became his friende.

STRAUNGE may feeme thys following Hystory, and rare amonges those, in whom the vertue of liberality neuer florished: many we reade of, that have kept Noble and bountifull houses, entertayninge Guestes, both Forrayne and free borne, plentifully Feastinge them with variety of cheere, but to entertayne a Guest that aspyreth the death of his hoaft, and to cherishe hym after hee knew of it, or liberally to offer his life, feldome or neuer we reade, or by experience knowe: but what moued the conspirator to frowne at the state and life of Nathan? even that froward pestilent passion Enuy, the confumer and deadly monster of all humanity: who imitatinge the like cost, and port of his deuout hoast Nathan, and feekinge after equall glory and fame, was through enuie's force for not attayninge the like, driven to imagine how to kill a good and innocent man: for enuy commonly wayteth vpon the vertuous, euen as the shadow doeth the body. And as the Cantharides (which similitude Plutarch vseth) delight in ripe and prosperous wheate, and crawle in spreadinge roses, so enuy chiefly them which in vertue and richesse do abound: for had not Nathan bene famous for hys goodnesse, and glorious for liberality, Mithridanes would neuer haue profecuted him by enuy, nor gon about to berieve hys lyfe. He that envieth the vertuous and industrious person, may bee compared to Dedalus, whom the Poets fayne to murder Telon hys Apprentice for deuifing of the Potter's wheele: and Mithridanes disdaynfull of Nathan's hospitality, would have flayne him: but how ashamed Mithridanes was of his practife, this example at large discourseth. Very true it is (at least wyse if credite may bee gieuen to the words of certayne Genoua Merchauntes, and of others whych have trauayled that

countrey) how in Cataya, there was fometimes a rich Gentleman without comparison, named Nathan, who having a place or Pallace ioyning vpon the high way, by which the trauaylers to and from the West, and East, were constrayned to passe, and having a noble and liberal heart, defirous by experience to have the fame to be knowen, and wyth what nature and quality it was affected, he affembled dyuers maister Masons and Carpenters, and in short tyme erected there one of the stateliest Pallaces for greatnesse and costly furniture that euer was seene in that countrey, which afterwards he caused to be stored with all things necessary, honourably to entertayne ech Gentleman that paffed that way: and with a great trayne of feruantes he welcomed and accepted futch as iourneved to and fro. And in this commendable custome he perfeuered fo longe as both in the East and West partes, report was bruted of his renoume and fame: and being come to auncient yeares, not for all that weary of his liberality, it chaunced that his fame flewe to the eares of a yong gentleman called Mithridanes, who in a country not farre of from his, had his abode and refiance. Mithridanes knowing himfelfe to be fo rich as Nathan, enuious of his vertue and liberality, purposed by some meanes or other to defame and obfcure his neyghbour's good reporte: and having builded a Palace like to that which Nathan did possesse, began to vse curtesses to those which passed to and fro, in outragious and difordred fort: whereby in little time he purchased great fame. Now it chaunced vpon a day, as Mithridanes was alone in the court of his Palace, a poore woman entring in at one of the gates of the fame, craued almes, and had it and fo fucceffiuely euen to the twelfth and thirtenth time, also she retorned agayne, which Mithridanes perceiuing, faid vnto her: "Good wyfe you come hither very often:" and yet he denied not hir almes. The old woman hearing those words, fayd: "O how maruellous is the liberality of Nathan, whose palace hath xxxII. entries by seuerall gates, fo greate as this, and daily begging almes there, neuer made femblance as though he knew me, and yet the same was not denied me: and being come hither but xIII. times, I haue bene marked and reproued:" and faying fo, she went her way, and neuer after came thither agayne. Mithridanes hearyng these

wordes to proceede from the old woman fell into a great rage, deeming the fame reported of Nathan to be a diminution of his own, and faid: "Ah wretch, when shal I be able to attayne the liberality of Nathan's greatest things? and why then goe I about to excel him, when in litle matters I am not able to come neare him? verily I labour all in vaine, if I myselfe do not seeke meanes to rid him of his life, fith croked age is not disposed to dispatch him, I must therfore doe the same with myne own hands. And in that fury making no man priuy to his intent, he rode forth with a fmal traine, and in three dayes arrived where Nathan dwelte, and then commaunded his men in any wife not to be knowen that they came with him, and likewise that they knewe him not, but to prouide lodging for themselues, vntyll sutch tyme as they had further newes from him. Mithridanes then being arrived about evening, al alone, found Nathan walking vp and downe before his faire Palace, without other company than himfelf, who in fimple attire and garment went forth to meete him: of whom Mithridanes, bicause he knew not Nathan, demaunded if he could tell him where Nathan dwelt. Nathan pleafantly made him answer: "My fonne, ther is no man in these quarters that can better tel thee than I, and therfore yf thou please, I wyll bring thee thither." Mithridanes said, that he should doe hym a very great pleasure: but he would not if it were possible bee seene or knowen of Nathan: "And that can I very wel do," faid Nathan, now that I know your mynd. Being then lighted of from his horfe, he went with Nathan, who by and by interteined him with diversity of talk, to his faire Palace: and Nathan incontinently caused one of his feruaunts to take Mithridanes' horse, and faid vnto him in hys eare that he should wyth all speede give order to his housholde, that none should tel the younge Man that he was Nathan, which accordingly was done: but after they were in the Palace, Nathan brought Mithridanes into a very fayre chambre, that none mighte fee him excepte futch as he had appoynted to ferue hym: and causinge greate honour to bee done vnto him, hee hymfelfe kepte him company. As they two were together, Mithridanes asked him (to whom hee vsed convenable reverence as to his father) what he was? whom Nathan answered: "I am one of Nathan's pore seruaunts, that

from the time of my youth haue bene broughte vp wyth him, and neuer aduaunced me to any thing but to that which you fee: wherefore, although euery man greatly prayfeth him, yet haue I no cause to commend hym." These wordes gaue some hope to Mithridanes, by better aduife and furety to execute his wicked intente: and Nathan asked him very curteously what he was, and for what bufinesse he was come thither, offeryng him helpe and counsel in that he was able to do. Mithridanes then paused a while before he would make him answere: and in the ende purposyng to put his trust in him, required with great circumstance of wordes his fayth and after that his counfell and ayde. Then he wholy discouered what he was, wherefore he was come, and the cause that moued hym. Nathan hearing those woordes, and the mischieuous determination of Mithridanes, was chaunged and troubled in mynde, notwythstandyng wythout making any semblaunce of displeafure answered him with bolde countenaunce: "Mithridanes, thy father was a Gentleman, and of stoute stomacke, from whome fo farre as I fee, thou wylt not degenerate, by attemptyng fo great an enterpryse as thou hast done. I intende to be lyberall to ech man and praife greatly the Enuye whych thou bearest to the Vertue of Nathan, bycause if there were many sutch, the Worlde which is now myserable, would shortly become prosperous and happye: and doe make thee promyfe, that the intent thou goest about, shall be kepte fecrete, whereunto I can fooner gyue Counfell than any great helpe, and mine aduyse is this: you may see from the place where we now be a lyttle Groaue, about a quarter of a Myle hence, whereunto Nathan in a maner walketh euery mornyng, and tarrieth there a long time: there you may eafily finde him, and do your pleafure: and if you kyll him, you may goe, (to the intent without daunger you may returne home to your owne House) not that way you came, but by that you fee on the lefte hand leade out of the wod, whych although it be not so common as the other, yet is the nearest way and safest for you to passe." When Mithridanes was thus informed, and that Nathan departed from him, he caused worde fecretly to be fent to his Men, which likewyse lodged there, in what place they should waight for him the next day: and when the day was com, Nathan not altering the counsel he gaue to Mithridanes, ne changing any part of the same, went all alone into the little woodde, to receive his Death. When Mithridanes was vp, and had taken his bowe and fword, (for he had none other weapons) he mounted vpon his horse, and rode to the little woodde, where a farre of he espied Nathan, commyng thitherward all alone, and determining before he would fet vppon him to fee him and heare him fpeake, made toward him, and catchyng him by the band vpon his head, faid vnto him: "Old chorle thou art dead." Whervnto Nathan made none other answer, but faid, "I have deserved it." When Mithridanes heard his voyce and looked him in the face, he knew by and by that it was he which had curteously receiued him, familiarly kept him company, and faithfully had gyuen him counfel. Wherupon, his fury affwaged, and his anger converted to fhame: by meanes whereof, throwing downe his fworde which he had drawn to strike him, he lighted of from his horse, and did prostrate himselfe at Nathan his father's feete, and faid vnto him weeping: "I manifestly perceive right louing father your great lyberality, and by what pollicy you be come hyther to render to me your lyfe: whereunto I hauving no right, declared my felfe defyrous to have the fame: but our Lord God, more carefull of my deuoir than my felf, hath euen at the very point, when it was moste needefull, opened the eyes of myne vnderstandynge, which curffed spite and cancred enuy haue closed vp: and therefore, the more you were ready to gratify my defire, the greater punishment I knowledge my felfe to deserue for my faulte. Take then of me if it please you sutch vengance as you thynke meete for myne offence." Nathan caufed Mithridanes to rife vp, kiffinge and imbracinge hym tenderly, and fayd vnto hym: "My fonne, thou needest not to demaund pardon, for the enterprise done, good or euill as thou list to name it: for thou diddeft not go about to rid me of my lyfe for any hatred thou diddest bear me, but only to be accompted the better: be assured then of me, and verily beleue, that there is no lyuing man, that I loue better than thy felf, confidering the greatnesse of thine heart not inclyned to hoorde or gather togither the droffy muck of Syluer, as the myferable do, but to fpend that which is gathered. Be not ashamed for having a will to kill me, thereby to great re-

nowme: for Emperours and greatest kings, neuer streatched forth their power, and racked their Realines, and confequently aspired fam, for other purpose but to kyl: not by murdering one man as thou didft meane, but of infinit numbers, befides the burning of Countries, and rafing of Cities: wherefore if to make thy felfe more famous, thou wouldest have killed me alone, thyne enterprise was not newly to be wondred at, but a thyng in dayly practife." Mithridanes no more excufinge hys wicked intent, but prayfinge the honest excuse, which Nathan had deuised, drew neare vnto hym to enter into further talke wyth hym, which was, how he greatly maruelled, that he durft approach the place, with fo litle rescue, where his death was sworne, and what he meant him selse to tell the way and meanes: wherein he required him to fay his mynde, for disclosinge of the cause. Whereunto Nathan replied: "Maruell not, Mithridanes, of mine intent and purpose, for sithens I was at age disposed to myne owne free will, and determined to do that which thou hast gone about to do, neuer any came to me, but I have contented them (fo farre as I was hable) of that they did demaund: thou art come hither with defire to haue my lyfe, wherefore feeing that thou diddeft craue, I forthwith dyd meane to gieue it, that thou alone mightest not be the man that should depart from hence without atchieuing thy request: and to bring to passe that thou myghtest have the same, I gave thee the best Counfel I could, aswel for bereuing of my lyfe, as for enjoyinge of thyne owne: and therefore I fay to thee agayne, and pray thee for to take it, thereby to content thy felfe, if thou have any pleasure therein: for I do not know whych way better to imploy it. haue all ready kept it foure score yeares, and haue confumed the fame in pleafures, and delights, and do know by course of nature in other men, and generally in all things, that long it cannot reaft in breathing dayes: wherefore I think good, that better it is to geue, as I haue dayly done, and departe with my Treasures, than keepe it till nature cary it away in despite of my Teeth, and maugre that I have. It is a little gift to give one hundred yeares, how mutch leffe is it then to give fixe or eyght of those I have to liue? Take it then if it please thee, I thee beseech: for neuer vet found I man that did defire the same, ne yet do know when I VOL. II.

shall finde futch one, if that thy felfe which didst defire it, do not take it: and if it chaunce that I do finde fome one, I know full well that fo mutch the longer as I shall keepe the same the lesse esteemed it shall be, and therefore before the same be vile and of little price, take it I beseech thee." Mithridanes fore ashamed, fayd: "God forbid, that by separating so deare a thing as is thy life, that I should take it, or onely defire the same, as I did erst, from which I would not diminish yeares, but willingly would of myne owne ad thereto if I could." Whereunto Nathan by and by replyed: "And if thou couldest, wouldest thou gieue them? and wouldest thou cause me do to thee that which I neuer did to any man, that is to fay, to take of thy things which neuer I did of any liuing person?" "Yea verily," aunswered Mithridanes. "Then," fayde Nathau: "thou oughtest there to doe that which I wyll tel thee: which is to remayne here in my house so younge as thou art, and beare the name of Nathan, and I would goe to thine, and bee called Mithridanes." Then Mithridanes answered: "If I had also so great experience as thou hast, I woulde not refuse thine offer, but bicause I am affured, that my deedes woulde diminish the renoume of Nathan, I wyll not marre that in another, which I cannot redreffe in my felfe: and therefore I wyll not take it." After thys talke, and a great deale more betwene them, they repayred to the Palace, vppon the request of Nathan, where many dayes he did great honour to Mithridanes, incoraging and counfelling him, fo wel as he could, dayly to perfeuere in his

high and great indeuour. And Mithridanes defirous to returne home with his company, Nathan (after that he had let him well to know, that he was not able to furpaffe him in liberality) gaue him leaue.

THE NINETEENTH NOUELL.

Mayster Gentil of Carifendi being come from Modena, tooke a woman out of hir grave that was buried for dead, who after she was come agayne, brought forth a Sonne, which mayster Gentil rendred afterwardes with the mother to mayster Nicholas Chasennemie her husband.

READING this History, I confider two straung and rare chaunces: the one a lyberall and courteous act of an earnest louer towards his beloued and hir husband, in leavinge hir vntouched, and not dishonored, although in full puissance to doe his pleasure: the other a lyke liberall offre by presentinge whom he dearly loued, and a newe borne Chylde: both supposed to be dead by hir freendes, and therefore Intoumbed in Graue. Wherewithall is to bee noted the rare and finguler defire of a gentlewoman, by humble fute for conferuation of her honour, although longe time purfued by a Gentleman that reviued hir almost from death, and thought her vtterly to be void of life. To praise the one, and to leave the other not magnified, it were a part of discurtesy: but to extol both with shoutes, and acclamations of infinite praise no dout but very commendable. If comparisons may be made with Prynces of elder yeares, and not to note those of later, truely Mayster Gentil by that hys fact, feemeth not mutch inferior to Scipio Africanus for sparing the wyfe of Indibilis, ne yet to king Cyrus for Panthea the wyfe of Abradatus: although both of them not in equall state of loue, (as wholly estraunged from that passion) like to maister Gentil, who in deed for subduing that griefe and motion, deferueth greater prayfe. For fooner is that torment auovded at the first assault and pinch, than when it is suffred long to flame and raigne in that yelding portion of man, the heart, which once fed with the bayt of loue, is feldome or neuer loofed. To do at large to vnderstand the proofe of those most vertuous perfons, thus beginneth the hiftory. At Bologna a very notable Citty of Lombardy, there was a Knyght of very great respect for his vertue, named maister Gentil Cariffendi, who in his youth fell

in lone with a Gentlewoman called maistresse Katherine, the wyfe of one mayster Nicholas Chassennemie. And bicause during that loue he received a very ill counterchange for his affection that he bare vnto hir, he went away (like one desperate) to be the iudge and potestate of Modena, whereunto he was called. About the time that hir husband being out of Bologna, and the gentlewoman at hir Manour in the countrey, not past a mile and a halfe from the Citty, (whither she went to remayne, bicause she was with childe) it chaunced that she was fodenly surprised with a ficknesse, which was of so great force, as there was no token of lyfe in her, but rather judged by all Phisitians to be a dead Woman. And because that hir neerest Kinne reported that they hearde hir faye, that shee could not bee longe time with Childe, but that the infante must be perfect in her wombe and ready to be deliuered, and therefore affected wyth fome other difease and griefe that would bring hir to hir ende, as a Timpany or other fwelling, rifing of groffe humors, they thought hir a dead Woman, and past recouery: wherefore vpon a time she falling into a traunce, was verily supposed to be dead. Who after they had mourned hir death, and bewayled the fodayn expiration of hir foule, caufed hir to be buried without hope of recouery (euen as she was in that extafie) in a graue of a church adioyning harde by the house wher fhe dwelt. Which thing incontinently was aduertifed master Gentil by one of his frends, who although he was not likely, as he thought, to attayne hir fauor and in vtter dispayre therof, yet it gryeued him very mutch that no better heede was taken vnto hir, thynking by diligence and time shee woulde haue reuyued agayn, fayinge thus in the end vnto him felfe: "How now madam Katherin, that Death hath wrought his wyll wyth you, and I could neuer obteyne durynge your life one fimple looke from those youre gliftering eies, which lately I beheld to my great ouerthrow and decay, wherfore now when you cannot defend your felf, I may bee bold (you being dead) to fleale from you fome defired kiffe." When hee had fayd fo, beyng already Nyght, and hauynge taken order that none should know of his departure, he gat vpon his Horse, accompanied with one only servaunt, and wythout taryinge anye where, arrived at the place where his Lady was buryed, and

opening the Graue, forthwith he entred in, and laying himself downe befides hir, he approched neare hir face, and many times kiffed hir, pouryng forthe great abundance of teares. But as we fee the appetyte of Man not to be content excepte it proceede further (specially of sutch as bee in loue) beyng determined to tarrye no longer there, and to departe, he fayd: "Ah God, why should I goe no further, why should I not touche hir, why should I not proue whyther she be alvue or dead?" Vanquished then wyth that motyon, hee felt hir brefts, and holding his hand there for a certayne tyme, perceyned hir Heart as it were to pant, and thereby fome lyfe remayning in hir: wherefore fo foftly as he could, wyth the helpe of his man, he raifed hir out of the graue: and fettynge hir vppon his Horse before him, secretly caried hir home to his house at Bologna. The mother of maister Gentil dwelled there, which was a graue and vertuous Matrone, who vnderstandyng by her sonne the whole effect of that chaunce, moued wyth compasfion, vnknowne to anye man, placing hir before a great fire, and comfortyng hir wyth a bathe prepared for the purpose, she recouered lyfe in the Gentlewoman that was supposed to bee deade, who fo foone as she was com to hir felf, threw forth a great figh and fayd: "Alas, wher am I now?" To whom the good old woman fayd: "Be of good cheere fwete hart, yee bee in a good place." The Gentlewoman having wholly recovered hir fenses, and looking round about hir, not yet well knowing where she was, and feing maifter Gentill before hir, prayed his mother to tell hir how she came thither. To whome maifter Gentil declared in order what he had done for hir, and what meanes he vied to bryng hir thyther: wherof makyng hir complaynt, and lamentyng the lyttle regard and neglygence of hir frends, she rendred vnto hym inumerable thankes. Then she prayed him for the Loue which at other times he bare hir and for his courtefie, that she might not receyue in hys house any thing that should be dishonorable to hir. Person, ne yet to hir husband, but so soone as it was Daye to suffer hir to goe home to hir owne House: whereunto maister Gentil answered: "Madam, what soeuer I have defired in time past, now am I fully purposed neuer to demaund any thyng specially in this place or in any other but the fafety of your honour, and that I

would doe to myne owne fifter, fith it hath pleased God to showe me that pleafure, as by my meanes you are reuiued from death to life, and to delyuer you to mee in confideration of the loue that I haue born you heretofore: but this good worke, which this Nyghte I have done for you, well deferueth fome recompence. Wherefore my defire is, that you deny me not the pleasure which I shall demaund:" whome the gentlewoman curteously answered, that fhee was very ready, fo the faine were honest and in hir power to Then fayd mayster Gentil: "Mystresse, all your kin and al they of Bologna, doe beleue for a trouth that you bee deade, wherefore there is none that loketh for your recouery agayne: and the pleafure then whych I demaund, is that you wyll vouchfafe fecretlye to tarry here wyth my mother, vntill I retourne from Modena, which shal be with so great expedition as I can: and the cause why I desire the same, is, for that I intend to make a fayre and acceptable prefent of you vnto your husband in the prefence of the principal of this City." The gentlewoman knowing hir felf to be greatly bound to the knight, and that hys request was honest, was content to doe what hee demaunded. Albeit shee defired earnestly to reioyce hir frendes for hir recouered life, and fo promifed vppon hir faith. And vnnethes had she ended hir talke, but she felt the pain of chyldbirth: wherfore wyth the ayde of the mother of maister Gentil, she tarried not long before fhe was deliuered of a fayre Sonne, which greatly augmented the ioy of maister Gentil and hir. Mayster Gentil commaunded that fhe should have al thyngs that were necessary to be ministred vnto hir, and that she should be vsed as his owne Wyse. Then he pryuily returned to Modena, where when he had a while supplied his office, he returned to Bologna, and prepared a great feast at his house, the same morning that he arrived, for divers gentlemen of the city, amongs whom Nicholas Chasennemie was one. When the company of the bidden guests wer com, (the gentlewoman in fo good health and lykyng as euer fhe was, and hir Child wel and lufty), he fate down amongs them doing vnto them incomparable myrth and pastime, and serued them bountifully wyth dyners fortes of meates. When dinner was almost done, having before told the Gentlewoman what he ment to doe, and in what manner

she should behaue hir selfe, he began thus to say: "My Maysters, I do remember that whilom I have hearde tell that in the Country of Perfia, there was a goodly custom (as me feemeth) that when fom one was disposed to do great honour vnto his friend, he bad hym home to his house, and there shewed him the thing whych he loued best, were it wyfe, woman, or daughter, or what so euer it were, affirming that like as he disdayned not to shew the same, which outwardly he loued best, even so he would if it were possible, willingly discouer his owne heart: whych custome I purpose to observe in this City. Ye of your curtese have vouchsafed to do me fo great honour, as to repayre vnto this my fimple feaft, which benefite I wyl recompence after the Persian manner, by shewing vnto you the thinge which I loue moste deerely aboue any in this worlde, or hereafter shal be able to loue so long as my life endureth: but before I doe the fame, I pray you to tell mee your opynyon in a doubte whych I shall propose. There was a certayne person whych in hys house had a good and Faythfull Seruannte who became extremely fick: that Person without attendyng the end of his diseased servaunt, caused him to be caried into the midst of the streate wythout any further care for him. In the meane tyme there came a straunger by, who moued by compassion of the ficke feruaunt, bare him home to his owne house, where wyth great care and diligence, sparing no cost or charge, made him to recouer his former healthe: I would now fayne know of you, whither for retaining and vfing the feruice of that feruaunt, his first maister by good right myghte complayne vpon the seconde, if he should demaund hym agayne, or by demaunding of him agayne, the fecond not disposed to restore him, might susteyne any damage." The gentlemen after many opinions and arguments debated too and fro amonges them, and at length all concluding in one mind, gaue charge to Nicholas Chasennemie, (bicause he was an eloquent talker) to make the answer: who first praising the Persians custome, said that he was, (with the rest) of this opinion. that the first maister had no further title in his servaunt, having in futch necessity not onely forfaken him, but throwen him into the streate, and that for the good turnes whych the second maister had don him, he ought by good right to be hys: wherefore by kepyng

him, he did no wrong, force, or iniury to the first. Al the rest at the Table (which were very difcret and honest persons) fayd altogyther that they were of hys opinion. The knight content with that answer, and specially bycause Nicholas Chasennemie had pronounced it, affyrmed that hee was likewyse of that minde, and afterwards he fayd: "Time it is then that I render vnto you the honor which you have done me, in manner accordingly as I haue promyfed. Then he called vnto him two of hys Seruaunts, and fent them to the Gentlewoman, whom hee had caused to be apparelled and decked very gorgeously, praying hir by hir presence to content and fatisfie al the company. And she taking in hir armes hir little faire fonne, came into the hall, accompanied with the two Seruauntes, and was placed (as it pleafed the kynght) befides a very honest gentleman, and then he sayde: "Syrs, behold the thing which I loue best, and purpose to loue aboue all worldly things, and whither I have occasion so to doe, your eyes may bee Iudges." The gentlemen doing their reverence unto hir, greatly praifed hir, and faid to the Knight that ther was good reason why fhe oughte to be beloued: Vpon which commendations they began more attentyuely to behold hir, and many of them would haue fayd and fworne that it had bin shee in deede if it had not bin thought that she had bin dead. But Nicholas beheld hir more than the rest, who very desirous to know what she was, could not forbeare (when he faw that the Knight was a little departed from the place) to aske hir whyther shee was of Bologna, or a straunger. When the Gentlewoman faw hir husband to ask hir that question, the could fearer forbeare from making aunswere, notwithstanding to atchieue that whych was purpofed, she helde hir peace. Another asked her yf that little Boye was hers: And another if shee were the Wyfe of mayster Gentil, or any kin vnto hym: vnto whom shee gaue no answere at all. But when maister Gentil came in, one of the straungers fayd vnto him: "Syr, thys gentlewoman is a very good creature, but she seemeth to be dumbe. Is it true or not?" "Syrs, fayde maister Gentil, "that is but a little argument of hir vertue for this time to hold hir peace." "Tell vs then (fayde he) what is she?" "That wil I do very gladly," fayd the knight, "vnder condition that none of you shall remove out of his place for

any thing I fpeake, vntill I have ended my tale:" which request being graunted, and the table taken vp, maister Gentil which was fet downe by the Gentlewoman, fayd: "My maysters, this gentlewoman is the loyall and faithful fernant, of whom earst I propounded the question, whom I have releeved from amids the streate, whither hir kin, little caring for hir, threw hir as a vile and vnprofitable thing: and haue by my great care brought to passe, that I haue discharged hir from death, vpon an affection which God knoweth to be so pure and perfect, as of a lumpe of dead lothsome flesh hee hath revived so fayre and freshe as you see: but to the intent you may more playnly vnderstand how it is come to passe, I will open the fame in few words." And beginning at the day when he fell in loue with hir, he particularly told them, what had channel till that time, to the great marnell and admiration of them that heard him, and then added these woordes: "By meanes whereof, if your minde be not chaunged within this litle time, and specially master Nicholas, of good right she is my wife, and none by iust title can clayme hir." Whereunto none at al made answere, looking that he shoulde have proceeded further. In the meane while Nicholas and the rest that were there, fell into earnest weepinge. But maister Gentil, rifing from the borde and taking in his armes the little childe, and the gentlewoman by the hand, went towardes Nicholas, and fayd vnto him: "Rife vp fir goffip, I do not restore vnto thee thy Wife, whom thy frends and householde did cast into the Streat, but I will geue thee this Gentlewoman my Goffip, with the litle childe, that is, as I am affured begotten of thee, for whom at the christening I made answere and promise, and called him Gentil, and do pray thee that she be no leffe esteemed of thee now (for being in my house almost three moneths) than the was before. For I fwere by the almighty God, who made me in loue with hir, (peraduenture that my loue might be the canfe of hir preferuation) that she neuer liued more honestly with hir father, mother, or with thee, than she hath done in company of my mother." When he had fayd fo, he returned towards the Gentlewoman, and fayd vnto hir: "Maistresse, from this time forth, I discharge you of the promise which you have made me, and leaue you to your husband franke and free." And when he had bestowed the gentlewoman, and the chylde in the fathers armes, he returned to his place agayne. Nicholas ioyfully receyued his Wyfe and childe, for the whych so mutch the more he reioysed, as hee was furthest of from hope of hir recouery, rendering inumerable thankes to the Knight and the rest, and moued with compassion hee wept for company, greatly praysing maister Gentil

for that act, who was commended of ech man that heard the reporte thereof. The Gentlewoman was received into hir house wyth maruellous ioye: And longe tyme after she was gazed vpon by the Citizens of Bologna, as a thing to their great wonder reviewed agayne.

Afterwards Maister Gentil continued styll a friend vnto Nicholas, and vnto hys Wyfe and Chyldren.

THE TWENTIETH NOUELL.

Saladine in the habite of a Marchaunt, was honourably receyved into the house of may ster Thorello, who went over the Sea, in company of the Christians, and assigned a terme of his wy se when she should mary agayne. He was taken, and caried to the Sovldan to be his Faulconer, who knowing him, and suffering himself to be knowen, did him great honour. May ster Thorello fell sicke, and by Magique Art, was caried in a night to Pavie, where he found his wy se about to mary agayne, who knowinge him, returned home with him to his owne house.

VERY comely it is (fayeth Cicero in the fecond booke of hys Offices,) that Noblemens houses should styll be open to noble Guestes and Straungers. A faying by the honourable and other Estates to be fixed in sure remembraunce, and accordingly practifed: For hospitality and houshold intertaynment, heaping vp double gayne and commodity. The Guest it linketh and knitteth in fast band of perfect friendship, common familiarity, disporte of mynde and pleafant recreation, the poore and needy it feedeth, it cherisheth, it prouoketh in them deuout prayers, godly bleffings, and feruice in tyme of neede. Hospitality is a thing so divine, as in law of Nature and Chryst, it was well and brotherly observed. Lot disdayned not to receyue the Aungels, which were straungers vnto him, and by reason of hys common vse thereof, and theyr freudly intertaynment, he and his houshold was delyuered from the daunger of the City, escaped temporal fire, and obteined heauenly rewarde. Abraham was a friendly host to straungers, and therefore in his old dayes, and in the barrein age of his wyfe Sara, he begat Isaac. Ietro albeit he was an Ethnicke and vnbeleuyng man, yet lyberally intertained Moyfes, and maried him to Sephora, one of his Daughters. The poore widow of Sarepta interteined Helias, and Symon the Currior disdayned not Peter, nor Lydia the purple filke woman, Paule and his fellowes. Forget not Hospitality, (faith the faid Apostle Paule,) for wyth the same divers have pleased Aungels by receiving them into theyr houses. If Paule

the true preacher of eternall Healthe, hath fo commended kepyng of good Houses which by the former terme wee call Hospitality. then it is a thing to bee yfed amonges those that bee able to mainteine the same: who ought with liberall hand frankely to reach bread and victuals to their acquaintance, but specially to straungers, whych wandering in forein places, be vtterly vnable to helpe themfelues, and peraduenture in futch neede, as without futch curtefie, do perishe. For the further amplification of whych vertue, what shall I neede to remember straunge and prophane Histories? as of Symon of Athens, who was so famous in the same, as the tyrant Crytias, when he wished for the ryches of Scopades and the victories of Agefilaus, forgat not also to craue the liberality of Cimon. Pacuuius alfo, the Prynce of Campania, fo friendly entertained Annibal, as when his fonne to do the Romanes a good turne, would have killed him as he fat at supper, was staied by his fathers request (whom he made privy of his intent before they sate downe.) Pacuuius had he not more regarded the office of hospitality, than the fafety of his countrey, might ful wel by that murder, haue defended the same from the destruction whereunto afterwards it fel. Homere reporteth, that Menelaus fighting a combat with Paris of Troy made invocation and prayer vnto the Gods, that he might be reuenged vpon him for the rape of his wife Helena, to the intent the posterity hearing of his punishmente, mighte feare to polute friendly housholde interteynment. Wherefore, fith hospitality hath bene thus put in vse in elder tyme, practysed in all ages, and the poluters of the same detested and accurssed, and hath notorious commodities incident vnto it, I deeme it so worthy to be frequented in noble men and all degrees, as theyr Palaces and great houses should swarme with guests, and their gates lustring with whole multitudes of the poore to be fatiffied with relief. Sutch hath ben the facred vse and reuerent care of auncient tyme. Sutch hath bene the zealous loue of those whose fieldes and barnes, closets, and chestes have bene stored and stuffed with worldely wealth, that comparing that golden age, gliftering with piety and vertue, to these our worsse than copper days, cancred with all corruption, we shal find the match so like, as darke and light, durt and Aungell golde. Ceafing then of further discourse hereof,

this history following shall elucidate and displaye the mutuall beneuolence of two noble personages, the one a mighty Souldan, an enimy of God, but yet a fryende to those that fauored good entertainment and housekepyng: the other a Gentleman of Pauie, a rich and liberall marchaunt, and a friendly welcomer of straungers. The Souldan demaunding the way to Paule, somewhat digressing from the fame, is not onely honourably conveyed to Pauie, and feasted there, but also sumptuously cheryshed, banketted, and rewarded by the fayd Marchant before his commyng thyther. The marchant man defirous to be one of the holye voyage intended by christian Princes, passed ouer the seas, who put to his shifts there throughe the aduerse lucke receyued by the Christians, became the Souldans Fawconer, and afterwardes knowen vnto him by certaine markes and fignes, is with greater honor intertained of the Souldan, and more richly guerdoned, fent home agayne by Magike Arte to anticipate the mariage of his wife, vnto whom he had prefixed a certaine date and terme to marry againe if before that tyme, he did not returne. All which Noble entertainment, and the circumstances thereof, in this manner do begin. In the time of the Emperour Fredericke the firste, the Chrystians to recouer the Holy Lande, made a generall voyage and paffage ouer the Sea. Saladine a most vertuous Prynce, then Souldan of Babylon, having intelligence thereof, a certayne time before, determined in his own person to fee and espy the preparation which the Christian Princes made for that paffage, the better to prouide for his owne, and having put order for his affayres in Ægypt, making as though he would go on Pilgrimage, tooke his journey in the apparel of a Marchant, accompanied only with two of his chiefest and wifest counsellers, and three feruaunts. And when he had fearched and trauelled many christian prouinces, and riding through Lumbardy to passe ouer the Mountaynes, it chaunced that betweene Millan and Pauy, fomwhat late he met wyth a gentleman named mayster Thorello de Istria of Pauy, who with his houshoulde, his dogges and hawkes, for his pleasure went to soiorne in one of his Manours, that was delectably placed upon the ryuer of Tefino. And when maister Thorello sawe them come, thinckinge that they were certayn Gentlemen straungers, he defired to do them honour. Wherefore

Saladine demanding of one of mayster Thorello his men, how farre it was from thence to Pauie, and whether they might come thither time inough to go in, master Thorello would not suffer his man to speake, but he himself made aunswere, saying: "firs, yee cannot get into Pauie in time, for that the Gates will be shut before your comming." Than fayd Saladine: "tell us then wee pray you, bicause we be straungers, where wee may lodge this night." Maister Thorello sayd: "That will I willingly do, I was about even presently to send one of my men that be here, so far as Pauie, about certayne bufinesse, him wil I appoint to be your guide to a place where you shall have very good lodging," and callinge one of his wyfest men vnto him, he gaue him charge of that he had to do, and fent him with them, after whom he followed: where incontynently in fo good order as he could, caufed to be made redy a fumptuous fupper, and the tables to be couered in a pleafant garden. Afterwards hee went himselfe to entertayne them. The feruaunt talking with the Gentlemen of many thinges, conducted them at leyfure fomwhat out of the way to protract the time, to his maysters house: and so soon as maister Thorello espied them, he with liberall heart and bountifull mynde bad them welcome. Saladine which was a very wyfe man, well perceyued that the Gentleman doubted that they woulde not have come vnto hym if he had inuited them at their first meetinge, and for that cause, to the intent they should not refuse to lodge at his house, he had pollitiquely caused them to be conducted thither, and aunsweringe hys greeting, fayd: "Syr, if a man may quarrell with them that be curteous, wee may complayne of you, who leauinge a part our way which you have caused somewhat to be lengthened, without deferuinge your good will, otherwife than by one onely falutation, you have conftrayned vs to take and receyue this your fo great curtefie." The wife and well spoken Knight, sayd: "Syr, thys curtefie which you receyue of me, in respect of that which belongeth vnto you, as by your countenaunce I may wel coniecture, is very small, but truely out of Pauie ye could have got no lodging that had ben good: and therefore be not displeased I pray you to be caried out of the way, to have a little better intertaynment," and saying so, his men came forth to receyue those straungers, and

when they were lighted, their horffes were taken and conneyed into the stables, and mayster Thorello carved the three Gentlemen to their chambers, which he had prepared for them, where their Bootes were pulled of, and excellent wyne brought forth, fomewhat to refresh them before supper: then he held them with pleafaunt talke vntyll the houre of supper was com. Saladine and they which were with him, could all speake Latine, and therefore well vnderstanded, and they lykewise vnderstoode eche man, by meanes whereof euery of them, thought that the Gentleman was the most curteous and best conditioned Personage, indued with the most eloquent talke that ever they sawe. On the other side it feemed to mayster Thorello, that they were the noblest and Princelik personages, and far more worthy of estimation then he thought before. Wherefore, he was very angry wyth himfelfe, that he had no greater company and better intertaynment for them that night, which he purposed to recompence the next day at dinner. Wherefore hee fent one of hys men to Pauie, being not farr from thence, to his wife, that was a very wife and noble gentlewoman, and afterwards he brought them into the garden where he curteously demaunded what they were. To whom Saladine answered: "we be marchaunts of Cypres trauailing to Paris, about our bufinesse." Then said maister Thorello: "I would to God that this country brought forth fuch gentlemen as the land of Cypres maketh marchants," and fo passed the time from one talke to another, vntyll fupper time came: Wherefore to honour them the better caused them to fit downe at the Table, every of them according to his degree and place: And there they were exceadingly wel intreated and ferued in good order, their supper being farre more bountifull than they looked for. And they fate not longe after that the table was taken away, but maister Thorello fuppofing them to be weary, caused them to be lodged in gorgeous and coftly beds: and he likewyse within a while after went to The feruaunt fent to Pauie, did the message to his mistresse, who not like a woman wyth a womanish heart, but like one of Princely Mind, incontinently caused many of her husband's frends and fernaunts to be fent for. Afterwards she made ready a great feast, and inuited the noblest and chiefest Citizens of the City: apparelling hir house wyth clothe of gold and silke, tapistrie and other furnitures, putting in order all that which hir husband had commaunded. The next day in the morning the Gentleman rose, with whom maister Thorello mounted on horsebacke, and carying with him his Hawks, he brought them to the Ryuer, and shewed them divers flightes. But Saladine demaunding where the best lodging was in Pauie, maister Thorello fayd: "I wyll shew you my felfe, for that I have occasion to go thither." They beleeving him, were contented, and rode on their way, and being about nine of the clock, arrived at the City, thinking they should have ben brought to the best Inne of the towne: but maister Thorello conueyed them to his owne house, where fiftye of the chiefest Citizens ready to receive them fodaynly appeared before them. Which Saladine, and they that were wyth him perceyninge, coniectured by and by what that dyd meane, and fayd: "Maister Thorello, this is not the request whych wee demaunded, your entertainment yesternight was to sumptuous and more then we defired, wherefore giue vs leaue we praye you to departe." Whom maister Thorello answered: "My maisters, for that which ye receyued yesternight I wil giue thanks to Fortune, and not to you: for I ouertaking you by the way, forced you in a maner to make your repayre vnto my homely house: but for thys morninge voyage, I haue my selfe prepared, and likewyse the Gentlemen about you, with whom to refuse to dine, if you thincke it curtesie, doe as yee pleafe." Saladine and his companions vanquished wyth sutch perfuation, lighted, and being received by the Gentlemen in louing and curteous order, were conucied to their chambers, which were richly furnished for them, and having put of their riding apparel, and fomewhat refreshed themselves, they came into the Hall, where all things were in redinesse in triumphant forte. Then Water was brought them to washe, and they placed at the Table, were ferued wyth many delicate meats in magnificent and royal order, in futch wife, as if the Emperour himselfe had bene there coulde not have bene better entertayned. And albeit that Saladine and his companions were great Lordes, and accustomed to see marueylous thynges, yet they wondred very mutch at thys, confidering the degree of the Knight, whom they knewe to bee but a Citizen

and no Prynce or great Lord. When dinner was done, and that they had talked a little together, the weather waxing very hot, the Gentlemen of Panie, (as it pleased mayster Thorello) went to take their rest, and he remayned with his three Guests: with whom he went into a chamber, where to the intent that nothing which he had and loued might be vnseene, caused his honest Wyse to be called forth: who being very beautiful and wel fauored, clothed in rich and coftly array, accompanied with her two yong fonnes, which were like to Aungels, came before them, and gratiously faluted them. When they faw her, they rose vp, and reverently received hir, then they caused hir to fit downe in the mids of them, fporting and dalying with hir two fayre fonnes. But after she had pleasantly entred in talk, she asked them of whence they were, and whither they were going? To whom the Gentlemen made the fame aunswere that they had done before to maister Thorello. Then the Gentlewoman fayd vnto them with fmilinge cheere: "I perceyue then that mine aduice being a woman, is come well to passe. And therefore I pray you, that of your special grace you will do me this pleasure, as not to refuse or disdain the litle present that I shall bring before you, but that you take it, in confideration that women according to their little ability, give little things, and that yee regard more the affection of the person whych offreth the gift, then the value of the ginen thing." And caufing to be brought before every of them two fayre Roabes, the one lined with filke, and the other with Meneuayr, not in fashion of a Citizen, or of a Marchant, but Noblemanlike, and III. Turkey gownes with fleeues of Taffata, lined with linnen cloth, fhe fayde vnto them: "Take I pray you thefe roabes, with the like whereof this day I apparelled my husband, and the other things may also ferue your turnes, although they be little worth, confidering that yee be farre from your Wyues, and the greatnesse of your iorney, which you have taken, and have yet to make, and also for that Marchantmen loue to be neat, and fine in things appertinent to their bodies." The Gentlemen mutch maruelled, and playnly knew that Maister Thorello was disposed not to forget any one part of curtefie towards them, and doubted (by reason of the beauty and richeffe of the roabes not marchantlike,) that they VOL. II.

should not be knowne of mayster Thorello, notwithstandinge one of them aunswered her: "These be (Gentlewoman) very great gifts, and ought not lightly to be accepted, if your intreaty did not conftraine vs, against which no denial ought to be made." That done, when mayster Thorello returned into the chamber, the Gentlewoman tooke her leaue, and went hir way: and then shee furnished the servants with divers other things necessary for them, and Mayster Thorello obtayned by earnest request, that they should tary all that day. Wherefore after they had rested themselues a while, they did put on their roabes, and walked forth on horsebacke into the Citty: and when supper tyme was come, they were bountifully feasted in honorable company: and when bed time approched, went to rest. And so soone as it was day they rose, and founde in steade of their weary Hackneyes, three fat and fayre Palfreyes, and also the like number of fresh and mighty horsfes for their feruaunts: Which Saladine seeing, turned towardes his companions, and fayd vnto them: "I fweare by God that ther was neuer a more liberall Gentleman, more courtcous or better conditioned than this is. And if Christian kings for their part be futch, I meane indued with futch kingly qualities as this Gentleman is, the Souldan of Babylon shall have inough to do to deale with one, and not to attend for all those which we see to be in preparation for inuation of his Country." But feeing that to refuse them or render them agayne, serued to no purpose, they thanked him very humbly, and got vppon their horse. Mayster Thorello wyth many of his frends, accompanied them out of the Citty a great peece of the way: And albeit that it mutch greeued Saladine to depart from mayster Thorello (so farre in he was already in loue with him) yet being conftrayned to forgo his company, hee prayed him to returne, who although very loth to depart, fayd unto them: "Syrs, I will be gone, fith it is your pleafure I shall fo do, and yet I fay vnto you, that I know not what you be, ne yet demaund to know, but so farre as pleaseth you. But what foeuer yee be, you shall not make me beleue at this tyme, that yee be marchauntes, and fo I bid you farewell." Saladine hauing taken hys leaue of those that accompanied mayster Thorello, answered him: "Syr, it may come to passe, that we may let you see

our marchaundife, the better to confirme your beleefe." And fo departed. Saladine then having thus taken his leave, affuredly determined if he liued, and that the Warres he looked for did not let him, to do no leffe honor to mayster Thorello, then he had done to him, and fell into great talke with his companions of him, of his Wyfe and of his things, acts and deedes, greatly prayfing all his entertaynment. But after he had trauayled and vewed al the west parts, imbarkinge himselfe and his company, he returned to Alexandria, throughly informed of his enemies indeuors, prepared for his defence. Mayster Thorello returned to Pauie, and mused a long time what these three might be, but he coulde not so mutch as gesse, what they were. When the tyme of the appoynted pasfage for the Chrystians was come, and that great preparation generally was made, Mayster Thorello notwithstandinge the teares and prayers of his Wyfe, was fully bent to go thither, and havinge fet all thinges in order for that Voyage, and ready to get on horsebacke, he fayd vnto hir whom he perfectly loued: "Sweete Wyfe, I am goinge as thou feeft, this Iourney, aswell for myne honour fake, as for health of my foule: I recommende vnto you our goodes and honor: And bycause I am not so certayne of my retourne, for a thousand accydentes that may chaunce, as I am fure to goe, I praye thee to doe mee thys pleafure, that what fo euer chaunceth of mee, yf thou haue no certayne newes of my life, that yet thou tarry one yeare, one Moneth, and one day, the same terme to begin at the day of my departure." The Gentlewoman whych bytterly wept, answered: "I know not dear husband how I shal be able to beare the forrowe wherein you leaue mee, if you goe awaye: But yf my Lyfe bee more stronge and sharpe, than forrowe it selfe: and whether you lyue or dye, or what so euer come of you, I wyll lyne and dye the Wyfe of Mayster Thorello, and the onely spouse of hvs remembraunce." Whereunto mayster Thorello sayde: "Sweete Wyfe, I am more than affured that touching your felfe, it wyll proue as you do promise: But you beyng a younge Woman, fayre, and well allyed, and your Vertue greate and well knowne throughoute the Countrye, I am fure that many greate Personages and gentlemen (if any fufpytyon bee conceyued of my Death) wyll make requestes to your brethren and Kindred, from whose pursute

(althoughe you be not disposed,) you can not defende your selfe, and it behoueth that of force, you please theyr wil, whych is the onely reason that moueth mee to demaunde that terme, and no longer tyme." The Gentlewoman fayd: "I wil doe what I can for fulfilling of my promyfe: And albeit in the ende that I shall bee constrayned to doe contrary to my lykyng, be affured that I wyll obey the charge whych nowe you have gyuen me: And I moste humbly thanke Almyghty God, that hee neuer brought vs into these termes before this tyme." Theyr talke ended, the Gentlewoman weepyng embraced mayster Thorello, and drawyng a Ryng from hir Fynger, she gaue it hym, sayinge: "If it chaunce that I dye before I fee you, remember me when you shal beholde the fame." He receiuinge the ring, got vp vppon his horse, and takinge his leaue, went on hys voyage, and arrived at Genoua shipped himself in a Galley, and toke his way, whereunto wind and weather so fauored, as wythin fewe dayes he landed at Acres, and ioyned wyth the army of the Chrystyans: wherein began a great mortalytye and Plague, duryng which infection (what fo euer was the cause) eyther by the industrie or Fortune of Saladine the rest of the Christians that escaped were almost taken and surprifed by him, without any fighte or blowe stricken. All which were impryfoned in many cities, and deuided into divers places, amongs whych prysoners maister Thorello was one, who was carved captyue to Alexandria, where beyng not knowne, and fearyng to be knowne, forced of necessitie, gaue him selfe to the keepyng of Hawkes, a qualitie wherein he had very good skyll, whereby in the ende hee grew to the acquaintance of the Souldan, who for that occasion (not knowing him that time) toke hym out of pryson, and retayned him for his Fawconer. Maister Thorello which was called of the Souldan by none other name than Chrystian, whome hee neyther knewe, ne yet the Souldan him, had none other thing in his mynde and remembraunce but Pauia, and manye tymes affayed to escape and run away: But he neuer came to the poynt: Wherfore dyners Ambaffadoures from Genoua being come to Saladine, to raunfome certayne of theyr Pryfoners, and being ready to returne, hee thought to wryte vnto his wyfe, to let hir know that he was aliue, and that hee would come home for

foone as he coulde, praying hir to tarry his retourne: Which was the effecte of hys Letter: verye earnestly desiring one of the ambaffadours of his acquayntaunce to doe fo mutch for hym as fafely to delyuer those Letters to the Handes of the Abbot of S. Pietro in ciel Doro, whych was hys Vncle. And Mayster Thorello standing vppon thefe termes, it chaunced vpon a day as Saladine was talking with him of his Hawkes, Thorello began to fmyle and to make a Iesture wyth hys mouth, whych Saladine beyng at his house at Paule did very well note, by which act Saladine began to remember him, and earnestly to viewe hym, and thought that it was he in deede. Wherefore leaving his former talke, he fayd: "Tell me Chrystian of what countrey art thou in the West parts?" "Sir" fayd Mayster Thorello, "I am a Lombarde, of a City called Pauie, a poore man and of meane eftate." So foone as Saladine heard that, as affured wherof he doubted, faid to himself: "God hath given me a time to let thys man know how thankfully I accepted his curtefy that hee vfed towards me, and without any more words, having caused all his apparell in a chamber to be set in order, he broughte him into the same and sayd: "Behold Christian, if amonges al these roabes, there be any one which thou hast feene before. Maister Thorello began to looke vpon them, and faw those which his wyfe had given to Saladine: but he could not beleue that it was possible that they should be the same, notwithstanding hee answered: "Sir, I knowe them not, albeit my mind gineth me that these twayne do resemble the roabes which fometimes I ware, and caused them to be given to three marchaunt men that were lodged at my house." Then Saladine not able to forbear any longer, tenderly imbraced him, faying: "You be maister Thorello de Istria, and I am one of the three Marchaunts to whom your wife gaue those roabes: and now the time is come to make you certenly beleue what my marchaundife is, as I tolde you when I departed from you that it myght come to passe." Maister Thorello hearyng those wordes, began to be both joyfull and ashamed, joyfull for that he had entertained futch a guest, and ashamed that his fare and lodging was so simple. To whom Saladine fayd: maister Thorello, sith it hath pleased god to fend you hither, thynke from henceforth that you be Lord

of this place and not I." and making great chere, and reioyfing one wyth an other, he caused him to be cloathed in royall vestures, and brought him into the prefence of al the Noble men of his country; and after he had reherfed many thinges of his valor and commendation, commaunded him to be honoured as his owne person, of all those which defired to have his favor: Which thing euery Man dyd from that time forth: but aboue the rest, the two Lords that were in company with Saladine at his house. greatnesse of the sodain glory wherein maister Thorello sawe himfelfe, did remoue oute of his mind, his affayres of Lombardie, and fpecially, bicause hee hoped that his letters should trustely be delivered to the hands of his vncle. Now there was in the camp of the Christians the daye wherein they were taken by Saladine, a Gentleman of Prouince, which dyed and was buryed, called maister Thorello de Dignes, a man of great estimation: whereby (maister Thorello of Istria known through out the whole army for his nobility and prowesse) enery man that heard tell that maister Thorello was dead, beleued that it was may fter Thorello de Istria, and not he de Dignes, and by reason of his taking, the truth whether of them was deade, was vnknown: Wherfore many Italians returned with those newes, amongs whom som wer so prefumptuous, as they toke vpon them to fave and affyrme that they faw him deade, and were at his burial: Whych knowen to his wyfe and his friends, was an occasion of very great and inestimable Sorrow, not onely to them: but to all other that knewe him. Very long it were to tell what great forrow, heauinesse, and lamentation his wife did vtter, who certain moneths after shee had continually fo tormented hir felfe, (and when hir grief began to decreafe, being demaunded of many great personages of Lombardie) was counfelled by hir brothers, and other of hir kin, to mary Which thing after she had many times refused, in very great anguish and dolor, finally being constrained thereunto, she yelded to the minds of hir parents: But yet vpon condicion, that the nuptials should not be celebrate vntyll sutch tyme as she had performed hir promise made to maister Thorello. Whilest the affaires of this Gentlewoman were in those termes at Pauie, and the time of hir appoyntment within eight dayes approched, it

chaunced that maister Thorello vpon a day espyed a man in Alexandria, (which hee had feene before in the company of the Ambasfadors of Genoua,) going into the galley that was bound with them to Genoua, wherfore caufing him to be called, he demaunded what voyage they had made, and asked him when they arrived at Genoua? To whom he fayd: "Sir the Galley made a very ill voyage as I hard fay in Creta, where I remayned behynd them, for being neare the coast of Sicilia there rose a maruellous tempest, which droue the galley vpon the shoare of Barbarie, and not one of them within bord escaped, amongs whom two of my brethren were likewife drowned." Mayster Thorello giuing credite to the words of this fellow, which were very true, and remembring himselfe that the terme whych he had couenaunted with his Wyfe was almost expired, and thinkinge that they could hardly come by the knowledge of any newes of hym or of his state, beleued verily that his Wyfe was maried agayne, for forrow whereof he fell into futch melancholy, as he had no luft to eate or drinke, and laying him downe vpon his bed, determined to die: whych fo foone as Saladine, (who greatly loued hym) did vnderstand, he came to vifite him, and after that he had (through instant request) knowen the occasion of his heauinesse and disease, hee blamed him very mutch for that he did no fooner disclose vnto him his conceipt: And afterwards prayed him to be of good cheere, affuring him if he would, fo to prouide as he shoulde be at Pauie, inst at the terme which he had affigned to his Wyfe: and declared vnto him the order how. Mayster Thorello geuinge credit to the words of Saladine, and havinge many times hard fay, that it was possible, and that the like had bene many times done, began to comfort himselfe, and to vse the company of Saladine, who determined fully vpon his voyage and returne to Pauie. Then Saladine commaunded one of his Nycramancers, (whose science already he had well experienced) that hee shoulde deuise the meanes how mayster Thorello might be borne to Pauie in one night, vpon a bed: Whereunto the Nycromancer aunswered that it should be done, but that it behoued for the better doing thereof, that he should be cast into a sleepe: And when Saladine had geuen order thereunto, he returned to mayster Thorello, and finding him fully

purposed to be at Pauy if it were possible at the terme which he had affigned, or if not, to die: fayd thus vnto hym: "Mayster Thorello, if you do heartely loue your Wyfe and doubt least she be maried to an other, God forbid that I should stay you by any manner of meanes, bicause of all the Women that euer I saw, she is for maners, comely behaviour, and decent order of apparell, (not remembring her beauty, which is but a fading floure) mee thyncke most worthy to bee prayfed and loued. A gladfome thynge it woulde have beene to mee (fith Fortune fent you hither) that the tyme which you and I have to live in this worlde, we myght have fpent together, and lived Lordes of the Kingdome which I possesse, and if God be minded not to do me that grace, at least wyse sith you be determined either to dye or to returne to Pauie, at the terme which you have appointed, my great defire is, that I myght haue knowen the fame in time, to the intente you myghte haue bene conducted thither wyth futch honour and trayn as your Vertues do deserve: Which fith God wyl not that it bee brought to passe, and that you wyll neades be there prefently, I wyll fend you as I can in manner before expressed." Whereunto maister Thorello said: "Sir, the effect (bifides your wordes) hath don me fuffycient knowledge of your good wyll, which I neuer deferued, and that whych you told me, I cannot beleeue, fo long as Lyfe is in me, and therefore am most certayne to dye: But fith I am so determyned, I befeeche you to do that which you have promifed out of hand, bicause to morrow is the last day of the appoyntment affigned to my wyfe." Saladine faid, that for a truth the fame fhould be don: And the next day the Souldan purpofing to fend hym the nyght following, he caused to be made ready in a great hall a very fayre and rych bed, all quilted according to their manner (wyth vyluet and clothe of gold), and caufed to be layed ouer the fame, a Couerlet wroughte ouer with borders of very great pearles, and rich precious stones: which euer afterwardes was deemed to be an infinite treasure, and two pillowes sutelike vnto that bed: that don, he commaunded that they should inuest maister Thorello, (who now was lustie) with a Sarazine roabe, the richest and fairest thing that euer anye Man saw, and vpon his head one of his longest bands, wreathen according to theyr

manner, and being already late in the Euenyng, hee and diners of his Barons went into the Chamber wher Mayster Thorello was, and being fet down besides him, in weeping wise hee began to say: "Maister Thorello, the time of our separation doth now approche, and bicause that I am not able to accompany you, ne cause you to be waited vpon, for the qualitie of the way which you have to passe, I must take my leave here in this chamber, for which purpose I am come hither: Wherefore before I byd you farewel, I pray you for the loue and friendship that is betwene vs, that you do remember me if it be possible before our dayes do end, after you have given order to your affayres in Lombardie, to come agayne to fee me before I dye, to the end that I beyng reioyced with your fecond vifitation, may be fatisfied of the pleasure which I lose this day for your vntimely hast: and trusting that it shall come to passe, I pray you let it not be tedious vnto you to visite me wyth your letters, and to require me in thynges wherein it may lyke you to commaund, which affuredly I shall accomplish more frankely for you, than for any other liuing man." Maister Thorello was not able to retaine teares: wherefore to staye the fame, he answered him in few woordes, that it was impossible that euer hee shoulde forget his benefites, and his worthy friendship extended vpon him, and that without default he would accomplish what he had commaunded, if God did lend him life and leyfure. Then Saladine louingly imbracing and kiffing him, pouring forth many teares, bad him farewell, and fo went oute of the chamber: And all the other Noble men afterwards tooke theyr leaue likewise of him, and departed with Saladine into the hal wher he had prepared the bed, but being already late, and the Necromancer attending, and hasting his dispatch, a Phisitian broughte him a drinke, and made him beleue that it would fortifie and strengthen him in his iorney, causing him to drinke the same: which being done within a while after he fell a sleepe, and so sleeping was borne by the commaundment of Saladine, and layd vpon the fayre bed, whereupon he placed a rich and goodly crowne of paffinge pryce and valor, vpon the which he had ingrauen fo plaine an infcription, as afterwards it was knowne that the fame was fent by Saladine to the wife of maister Thorello. After that he put a

ring vpon his finger whych was befet wyth a Diamonde, fo shining, as it seemed like a flamynge Torche, the Value whereof was hard to bee esteemed. Then he caused to bee girte aboute hym, a Sworde, the furniture and garnishing whereof could not easily be valued: and befides all thys, hee honge vppon hys Necke a Tablet or Brooche fo befet wyth Stones, and Pearles, as the lyke was neuer feene. And afterwards he placed on either of hys fides, two exceding great Golden basens, full of double Ducates, and many cordes of Pearles and rings, girdels, and other things to tedious to reherfe, wherewith he bedecked the place about him. Which done, he kiffed him againe, and wylled the Necromancer to make haft. Wherfore incontinently maister Thorello, and the bed, in the prefence of Saladine was caried out of fight and Saladine taried stil, denifing and talkyng of hym amongs his Barons. Maister Thorello being now laid in S. Peter Churche at Panie, according to his request, with all his Iewels and habilliments aforefayd about him, and yet fast a slepe, the Sexten to ring to Mattens, entred the Church with light in his hand: and chauncing fodenly to efpy the rych Bed, dyd notonely maruel thereat, but also ran away in great feare. And when the Abbot and the Monkes faw that hee made futch hast away, they were abashed, and asked the cause why he ranne so fast? The Sexten tolde them the matter: "Why how now?" fayde the Abbot, "Thou art not futch a Babe, ne yet so newlye come vnto the Church, as thou oughtest so lightly to be afraide. let vs goe and fee what bug hath fo terribly frayed thee." And then they lighted many Torches: And when the Abbot and his Monkes were entred the Church, they faw that wonderfull rich bed, and the Gentleman fleeping vpon the fame. And as they were in this doubte and feere, beholding the goodly Iewels, and durst not goe neare the bed, it chaunced that maister Thorello awaked, fetchyng a gret fighe. The Monkes fo foone as they faw that, and the Abbot with them, ran all away crying out, "God helpe vs, our Lord haue mercy vpon vs." Maister Thorello opened his eyes, and playnly knew by loking round about him, that he was in the place where he demanded to be of Saladine whereof he was very glad, and rifing vp, and viewing particularily, what he had about him, albeit he knew before the magnificence of Saladine, now he

thoughte it greater, and better vnderstood the same than before. But feeynge the Monkes run away, and knowyng the caufe wherefore, he began to call the Abbot by hys name, and intreated hym not to bee affrayde: For he was Mayster Thorello his Nephewe. The Abbot hearyng that was dryuen into a greater feare, bicaufe he was accompted to bee dead divers moneths before: but afterwards by divers arguments, affured that hee was maifter Thorello, and so often called by hys name (making a figne of the Crosse) he went vnto him. To whom maister Thorello sayd: "Whereof be you a frayd good father? I am aliue I thanke God, and from beyond the Sea returned hyther." The Abbot (although he had a great beard, and apparelled after the guise of Arabic) crossed hymfelfe agayne, and was wel affured that it was he. Then he tooke hym by the hande, and fayde vnto hym as followeth: "My Sonne thou art welcome home, and maruell not, that wee were afrayd: For there is none in all thys Citty, but doth certaynly belieue that thou art dead. In so mutch as madame Adalietta thy Wyfe, vanquished with the prayers and threates of hir frinds and kin, agaynst hir will is betrouthed agayne, and this day the espousals shall be done. For the mariage, and all the preparation necessary for the feast, is ready." Mayster Thorello risinge out of the rich Bed, and reioyfing wyth the Abbot and all his Monks, praied every of them not to speake one word of his comminge home, vntill he had done what he was disposed. Afterwards placing al his rich Iewels in furety and fauegard, hee discoursed vnto his vncle what had chaunced vnto hym till that time. The Abbot ioyfull for his fortune, gaue thankes to God. Then mayster Thorello demaunded of his vncle, what he was that was betrouthed to hys Wyfe. The Abbot tolde hym: To whom maister Thorello sayd: "Before my returne be knowen, I am defirous to fee what Countenaunce my Wyfe wyl make at the mariage. And therefore, albeit that the religious doe not vse to repayre to sutch Feastes, yet I pray you for my fake take payne to go thither." The Abbot aunswered that he would willingly doe fo. And fo foone as it was Daye, hee fente woorde to the Brydegrome, that he, and a Frende of hys. woulde bee at the mariage: whereunto the Gentleman aunswered,

that he was very glade thereof. When dinner tyme was come, mayster Thorello in the habite and apparel wherein he was, went with the Lord Abbot to the weddinge dinner, where every of them that faw him, did maruellously beholde hym, but no man knew him, bicause the Abbot aunswered them that inquired, that he was a Sarazene, fent Ambaffador from the Souldan to the French Kinge. Mayster Thorello was then placed at a table which was right ouer agaynst his Wyfe, whom he beheld with great pleasure and delight, and perceyued very wel by hir face that she was not well content with that mariage. She likewife beheld him fometimes, not for any knowledge she had of hym, for his great beard and straunge attire, the firme credite and generall opinion also that hee was deade, chiefly hindred it. But when mayster Thorello thought tyme to proue whether she had any remembraunce of him, he fecretly conuaved into hys hande, the ring which she gaue him at hys departure, and called a little Boy that wayted vpon hir, and fayd vnto him: "Go tell the Bryde in my behalfe, that the custome of my countrey is, that when any Straunger (as I am here) is bydden by any new maried woman (as she is now,) for a token of his welcome, she fendeth vnto him the cup wherein she drinketh full of Wyne, whereof after the straunger hath dronke what pleaseth him, he concreth the cup agayne, and fendeth the fame to the Bryde, who drinketh the rest that remayneth." The Page did his message vnto the Bryde, who like a wife Gentlewoman wel brought vp, thinking he had ben fome great perfonage, to declare that he was welcome, commaunded a great cup all gilt, standing before hir, to be washed cleane, and to be filled ful of Wyne, and caried to the Gentleman, which accordingly was don. Mayster Thorello having put into hys mouth the aforefayd ring, fecretly let fall the fame into the Cup as he was drinking, not perceyued of any man, to the intent that she drinking the latter draught, might espy the ringe. When he had dronk, he returned the cup vnto the Bryde, who thankfully receyued the same. And for that the manner of his countrey might be accomplished, when the cup was deliuered vnto hir, she vncouered the same, and pleadging the rest of the Wyne, beheld the ring, and without speaking any word, wel

viewed the same, and knowing that it was the very Ring which she had geuen to maister Thorello, when he departed, tooke it out. And stedfastly did marke and looke vpon him, whom she supposed to be a straunger, and already knowinge him, cryed out as though she had bene straught of hir wittes, throwing downe the Table before hir: "This is my Lord and husband, this is of trouth Mayster Thorello." And runnynge to the table without respect to hys apparell of Cloth of Gold, or to any thinge that was vpon the table, preffinge fo neere him as she could, imbraced him very heard, not able to remoue hir handes from about his Necke for any thing that could bee fayd or done by the company that was there, vntill mayster Thorello required hir to forbeare for that present, for so mutch as the shoulde have leyfure inough to vse hir further imbrace-Then shee left him, and contented hir selfe for the tyme: but the brydale and mariage was wholly troubled and appalled for that sodayne chaunce, and the most part of the Guests excedingly reioyced for the return of that Noble knight. Then the company beinge intreated to fit and not to remoue, Maister Thorello rehearfed in open audience what had chaunced vnto him from the day of his departure vntill that tyme, concludinge with a petition to the Bridegrome, that had newly espoused his Wyfe, that he woulde not be displeased if he tooke hir agayne. The new maried Gentleman, albeit it greeued hym very fore, and thought himselfe to be mocked, aunswered liberally and like a Frende, that it was in hys power to do wyth hys owne what hee thought best. Gentlewoman drawinge of the Rings and Garland which shee had receyued of hir newe Husbande, did put vppon hir finger the Ring which shee founde within the Cup, and likewyse the Crownethat was fent vnto hir by Saladine: And the whole troupe and affembly leauing the house where they were, went home with mayster Thorello and his wyfe, and there the kin and frends, and all the Citizens which haunted the same, and regarded it for a myracle, were with long feaftinge and great cheare in great ioy and triumph. Mayster Thorello departing some of his precious Iewels to him that had bene at the cost of the marriage, likewise to the Lord Abbot and diners others, and having done Saladine to vnderstand hys happy repayre home to his Countrey, recommending himselfe for euer to his commaundement, liued with his Wyse afterwards many prosperous yeares, vsing the vertue of curtesie more than euer hee did before. Sutch was the ende of the troubles of maister Thorello, and hys wel beloued Wyse, and the recompence of their franke and honest curtesies.

THE TWENTY-FIRST NOUELL.

A Gentleman of meane callinge and reputation, doth fall in love with Anne, the Queene of Hungarie, whom shee very royally requited.

Following the preceding arguments treated in certain of the former Nouelles, I wyll now discourse the princely kindnesse and curtefy done to a poore Gentleman, by a Lady of later dayes, Anne the Queene of Hungary, whych Gentleman, though beyonde hys reache to catch what he aspired, fell in loue with that bountifull and vertuous Gentlewoman, thinkinge (by like) that she in end woulde haue abased her Maiesty, to recline to hys vayne and doting trauayle. But she like a Queene, not despisinge the poore mans loue, vouchfafed by familiar speech to poure some drops of comfort into his louinge minde, and once to proue, on whom he fixed his fanfie, reached him a Nofegay, and prayed him to bestowe it vpon whom hee liked best. All which familiar dealings she vsed, to keepe the poore pacient from despayre, that so highly had placed hym felfe. But in end perceyuinge his continuaunce, would not reiect and geue hym ouer, or with Scornes and Flouts contemne the Amorous Gentleman: and that longe loue myght gayne fome deserved guerdon, she never left hym vntyll she had preferred him to a Noble office in Spayne. The noble disposition of this chaft and gentle Queene, I thought good to adioyn next to that of maister Thorella and Saladine: who for curtesie and paffinge mutuall kindnesse, are worthy of remembraunce. And for you noble Dames for a Christall to sharpen your sightes, and viewe the recompence of loue, done by a Queene of passing beauty, and yet most chast and vertuous, that it might somewhat touch your squeymish stomackes and haulty hearts, and lenisie that corrofiue humor, which with frowning face, forceth you to ouerperke your humble fuppliants. A helpinge preservative I hope this Hystory shalbe to imbolden you, in sutes and petitions to their prince and fourraygne: An incoragement (I hope) to be mediators for futch, as by service and warfare have confirmed their faythfull deuoirs for defence of their Countrey. Remember the care the Romane matrones had for those that deserved well of their Common wealth: as how they mourned for Lucius Brutus one whole veres space, for his good reuenge ouer the rauishers of Lucrece: and for Martius Coriolanus, for hys piety and mothers fake, discharging his Countrey from the enemies fiege. Let mistresse Paolina of the priuy Chamber to this Queene Anne, render example for preferment of futch as be worthy to be cherished and esteemed. O how Liberality befeemeth a Queene, no leffe (as one maketh comparison) than the bright beames of the Sunne, or the twinkling starres in the Firmament. Oh how diligence in Gentlewomen, aduaunced to Princes Chambers, no leffe than the greene leaues to braunched Trees, or dyuers coloured Floures in Nofegayes. So flourishing be the fruites that bud from liberality, and freshe the benefites that fucceede of the payneful trauayles fustayned in the futes of feruiceable Gentlemen. This Philippo whom the Queene preferred, and liberally rewarded, was a meane Gentleman, but vet learned and well furnished with commendable qualities. His deserved advauncement may stirre vp ech Gentle heart, to merite and ferue in Common wealth. His warninge and other vertues may awake the fluggish Courtier, from loytering on Carpets, and doinge thinges vnfeemely: His diligence also reviue the blockish sprites of some that rout their tyme in sluggish sleepe, or waste the day in harlotrie and other filthy exercise. Whose example yf they practife, or imitate futch commendable life as becommeth their estates, then glory will followe their deedes, as the shadowe doeth the body. Then welfare and liuelihoode aboundantly shal bee mynistred to supply want of patrimonie or defect of parents portion. And thus the Hyftory doth begin. Not long fithens Queene Anne, the fifter of Lewes, that was king of Hungarie, and wife to Ferdinando Archeduke of Austriche, (which at this day is parcel of the kingdome of Hungary and Boeme,) together with the Lady Mary daughter of Philip kynge of Spayne, and wife of the fayd Lewes, went to keepe hir abode, and foiorne in Hifpurge, a Countrey among the Dutch very famous, where many tymes the Court of the Hungarian Prynces longe space remayned. These two Noble Queenes remained within the Palace of king

Maximilian, Emperour at that time elected, which Palace is fo neare adiovning to the Cathedrall Church, as without fight of the people at their pleafure they mighte by a fecrete Gallerie paffe to the Church to heare divine feruyce accustomably celebrated there. Which vse they dayly observed with theyr Ladies and Gentlewomen, and other Lordes and Gentlemen of the Court. In which church was made and erected a high place in manner of a Closet gorgeously wrought, and in royall manner apparelled of futch amplitude as it was hable to receyue the whole trayn and company attendant vpon the Perfons of the two Quenes. Now it came to passe that a Gentleman of Cremona in Italy called Philippo di Nicuoli, whych in those dayes by reason of the recouery of the Duchie of Milane, by the Frenche, departed Lombardie, and went to Hispurge, and was Secretarie to Signa Andrea Borgo, bicause he was well learned, and could wryte very fayre, and therwithall a proper and very haundfome man. This yong Gentleman very mutch frequenting the Church, and feeing the beauty of Queene Anne, to excell all the reast of the Ladies, adorned and garnished with princely behaviour and Queenelyke qualytyes, not forefeeyng (when hee beheld hir) the nature of loue, whych once being poffeffed, neuer leaueth the pacient til it hath infebled his state lyke the quality of poyson, distillinge through the vaynes, euen to the heart. Which louing venim this Gentleman did drinke with the lookes of his eyes, to fatifefy and content his defired minde by vewinge and intentife confidering hir wonderful beauty, that rapt beyond measure, he was myserably intangled wyth the fnares of blind and deceiptfull loue, wherewith he was fo cruelly inflamed, as he was lyke to forte out of the bounds of reason and Wyt. And the more he did beholde the hyghnesse of hir Maiesty, and the excellency of so great a Lady, and therewithall did weigh and confider hys base degree and Lignage, and the poore state whereunto frowarde fortune that tyme had brought him, the more he thought hymfelfe frustrate and voyde of hope, and the more the perillous flames of loue did affayle and fire his amorous heart, kindlinge hys inward partes with loue fo deepely ingraffed, as it was impossible to be rooted out. Mayster Philippo then in this manner (as you have heard) knotted and intrapped within the 2 B VOL. II.

fillets and laces of loue, fuppofing all labour which hee should imploy to be loft and confumed, throughly bent himselfe with all care and diligence to atchieue this hygh and honorable enterprife, whatfoeuer should come of it: whych effectually he pursued. For alwayes when the Queenes were at church to heare deuine feruice, he fayled not to bee there. And havinge done his duetyfull reuerence, whych very comely he could do, he vied to bestow himselse dyrectly ouer agaynst hir: where delitinge in the beauty of the Queene whych dayly more and more inflamed his heart, would not depart from thence tyll the Queenes were disposed to goe. And if perchaunce for fome occasion, the Queenes went not to Church, maister Philippo for all that (were his businesse neuer so great and needefull) would vouchfafe at least wife to visite the place, where he was wont to fee his Lady. Sutch is the ordinary force of loue that although liberty of fight and talke be depryued from the pacient, yet it doeth hym good to treade in the Steps of that Ground where his Mistresse doth vsually haunt, or to see the place vppon whych she eased hir tender corps, or leaned hir delicate elbowes. Thys young man bayted, and fed in amorous Toyes and Deuyses, now armed with hope, and by and by disarmed by defpayre, revolued in hys mynde a thousand thoughts and cogitations. And although he knew that hys Ladder had not steps inow to clyme fo hygh, yet from his determined purpose hee was not able to remoue: but rather the more difficult and daungerous hys enterpryse seemed to bee, the more grew defire to prosecute and object hymfelfe to all daungers. If peraduenture the Queenes for their disport and pastime were disposed to walke into the fieldes or gardens of the Citty of Hispurge, he fayled not in company of other Courtiers to make one of the troupe, beinge no houre at rest and quiet if he were not in the fight of Queene Anne, or neere the place where shee was. At that time there were many Gentlemen departed from Lumbardy to Hispurge, which for the most part followed the Lord Francisco Sforza the second, by whom they hoped when the Duchy of Mylane was recoursed, to be reftored to their countrey. There was also Chamberlayne to the fayd Lorde Francesco, one mayster Girolamo Borgo of Verona betwene whom and mayster Philippo, was very neere freendship and

familiarity. And bicause it chaunseth very seldome, that feruent loue, can be kept fo fecrete and couert, but in some part it will discouer it selfe, mayster Borgo easily did perceyue the passion wherewith mayster Philippo was inflamed. And one mayster Philippo Baldo many times being in the company of mayster Borgo and Philippo, did marke and perceive his love, and yet was ignorant of the truth, or voyde of coniecture with what Gentlewoman he was inamored. But feeing him contrary to wonted custome altered, and from vsual mirth transported, fetchinge many fighes and strayninges from his stomake, and markinge how many times he would steale from the company he was in, and withdraw himselfe alone, to muse vppon hys thoughts, brought thereby into a melancholy and meane estate, having lost his sleepe, and stomak of eating meate: iudged that the amorous Wormes of loue did bitterly gnaw and teare his heart with the nebs of their forked heades. They three then being vppon a time together, debatinge of divers thinges amonges themselves, chaunced to fall in argument of loue, and maister Baldo, and Borgo, the other Gentlemen, fayd to mayster Philippo, how they were wel assured that he was straungly attached with that passion, by marking and confidering that new life, which lately he led contrary to former vse, intreating him very earnestly, that he would manifest his loue to them, that were his deere and faythfull frends, tellinge him that as in weighty matters otherwife he was already fure what they were, euen fo in this he might hardily repose his hope and confidence, promifinge hym all their helpe and fauour, if therein their indeuour and trauayle might minister ayde and comfort. Hee then like one rayled from a trance, or lately reuiued from an extafie, after he had composed his Countenaunce and Gesture, with teares and multitude of fobbes, began to fay these woordes: "My welbeloued freendes, and trufty companions, being right well affured that yee (whose fidelity I have already proued, and whose fecret mouthes be recommended amongs the wife and vertuous), will keepe close and couert the thinge which you shall heare me vtter, as of futch importaunce, that if the yong Romane Gentleman Papyrus had been here, for all his filence of graue matters required by hys Mother, I woulde vnnethes have dysclosed the same vnto

hym. Indeede I cannot deny, but must needes confesse that I am in loue, and that very ardently, which I cannot in futch wyse conceale, but that the blinde must needes clearely and euidently perceyue. And although my mouth would fayne keepe close, in what plight my passions do constrayne my inward affections, yet my face and straung maner of life, which for a certayne tyme and space I have led, doe wittnesse, that I am not the man I was wont to bee. So that if shortly I doe not amend, I trust to arrive to that ende whereunto every Creature is borne, and that my bitter and paynful life shall take ende, if I may call it a lyfe, and not rather a lyuing death: I was refolued and throughly determined, neuer to discouer to any man the cause of my cruell torment, being not able to manifest the same to hir, whom I doe only loue, thinking better by concealinge it through loue, to make humble fute to Lady Atropos, that shee woulde cut of the thred of my dolorous lyfe. Neuerthelesse to you, from whom I ought to keepe nothynge fecrete, I wyll dyfgarboyle and vnlace the very Secretes of my Minde, not for that I hope to finde comfort and reliefe, or that my passions by declaration of them, will leffon and diminishe, but that yee, knowinge the occasion of my death, may make report thereof to hir, that is the only mistresse of my life, that shee vnderstandinge the extreme panges of the truest louer that euer liued, may mourne and wayle hys loffe: which thinge if my feely Ghost may knowe, no doubt where foeuer it do wander, shall receyue great ioy and comfort. Be it known vnto you therefore, the first day that myne Eyes hehelde the divine beauty and incomparable favor of that superexcellent Lady Queene Anne of Hungary, and that I (more than wyfedom required) did meditate, and confider the fingular behaviour and notable curtesie and other innumerable giftes wherewith shee is indued, the same beyond measure did so inslame my heart, that impossible it was for me to quench the feruent loue, or extinguish the least parte of my conceyued torment. I have done what I can to macerate and mortefie my vnbridled defire, but all in vayne: My force and puissaunce is weake to match with so mighty an aduerfary. Alas fyres, I knowe what yee will object agaynft mee: yee will fay that mine ignobility, my byrth and stocke be no meete

matches for futch a personage, and that my loue is to highly placed, to sucke reliefe: And the same I do confesse so wel as you. I do acknowledge my condition and state to base, I confesse that my loue (nay rather I may terme it folly) doth presume beyond the bounds of order: For the first tyme that I felt my selfe wrapped in those Snares, I knewe her to beare the Port amonges the chyefest Queenes, and to bee the peerelesse Pryncesse of Chrystendome. Agayne, I knew my felfe the poorest Gentleman of the Worlde, and the most myserable exile: I thought moreover it to be very vnfeemely for me to direct my mynde vpon a wight fo honorable, and of fo great effate: But who can rayne the Bridle, or prescribe lawes to loue? What is he that in loue hath free wil and choyse? Truely I beleeue no man, bicause loue the more it doth feeme to accorde in pleafure and delight, the further from the mark he shooteth his bolte, having no respect to degree or Haue not many excellent and worthy personages, year Dukes, Emperours and Kinges, bin inflamed with the loue of Ladies, and Women of base and vile degree? Haue not most honorable dames, and Women of greatest renoume despised the honor of theyr states, abandoned the company of theyr husbands, and neglected the loue of theyr Chyldren, for the ardent loue that they haue borne to men of inferiour fort? All Historyes be full of examples of that purpose: The memoryes of our auncestors be yet in fresh remembraunce, whereof if they were ignorant vnto you that be of great experience, I could advouche affured testimony: Yet thus mutch I fay vnto you, that it feeme no newe thing for a man to be ouercome by his owne affection: It is not the Nobility of hir state, or for that shee is a Queene, it is not the consideration of one parte or other, that moved me first hereunto: But love it is, that is of greater force than we our felues bee of, which many tymes maketh that to feeme lawfull, which altogether is vnlawful, and by fubduing reason maketh the great potentate lorde tributarie to his wyl and pleasure, whose force is farre greater then the lawes of Nature. And albeit that I neuer hope to attayne to prosperous end of this magnifike and stately loue, whych more and more doth seeme infortunate, yet I can not for my Lyfe else where apply the same, or alter it to other place: And consumynge still

through faithful and feruent loue borne to the Queene, I have forced and constrained my self by al possible meanes to gyue ouer that fond and foolish enterprise, and to place my mynd else where: but mine endeuour and all my labour and refistance is employed in vayne: Yea and if it were not for feare of eternall damnation, and the loffe of my poore afflicted foule (which God forbid) myne owne Handes before this time had ended my defires. I am therefore determined (fith that I can attaine no successe of Loue, and that God doth fuffer me to be inspyred with that most honourable and curteous Lady, beyond all order and estimation) to content my felfe with the fight of those hir fayre and glistring eyes, farre excelling the sparcling glimpse of the Diamonde or Saphire, and to ferue, loue and honour hir, fo long as life doth last within this feeble corpes: Vpon whose radiant and excelling beautie, my hope shall continually feede: and yet I am not so far voyd of vnderstandinge, but that I do most euidently know none other to be the guide of thys vnmeafurable loue, but folly most extreme." Vpon the end of those words he let fal many teares, and being staied with fobbs and fighes he was able to speake no more. And in very deede he that had feene him, would have thought that his heart had bene tormented with most bitter and painfull passions. Now they being very attentiue to his pytifull oration, were attached with incredible forrow, thinking that they had ben in a dreame by hearing of this discourse, and stode styll a while one loking upon an other, without speaking word: Afterwards comming to themselues, distraughte almost, for the greate admiration and wonder to heare him speake those words, mayster Girolamo and Baldo, with fuafible arguments went about to counfell him to withdraw his fonde and foolysh mind, praying him to place the fame elsewhere, shewing him the impossibility of hys enterpryse, and the great peril that might succeede thereof. But they spake to a man that seemed to be deaf, who replied, that hee neither coulde or would give over his love, that had already made fo depe impression, what so euer came of it: Notwythstandyng they ceased not still with sharp admonitions to beate into his head, the fonde begynning of his foolish loue: and not onely at that tyme, but continually when they were together, they dyd theyr

best by oft repetition of his vayne conceipt, to let him vnderstande his manyfest error: but theyr labour and friendly lessons were to no purpose: Wherefore mayster Borgo, determined to giue him ouer, and to attende what would fuccede therof. Mayster Philippo continuing hys pursute, neuer faylyng to be at church when he knew the Quenes to be ther, at length it chanced that they began to espy his love, for that both of them did mark his order, gesture and demeanure, and did note his oft frequentation of the places where they continually haunted and his manner in placyng himfelfe at the church directly ouer agaynst them, and his common vse in beholding and loking vpon their faces, judgyng thereby that without doubt he was in loue with one of them, or at least with some Gentlewoman of their trayne whereof the two Queenes began to vse fome talk, although not certain vpon whom his loue was bent. Neuertheleffe they wer defirous to know the troth, and expected oportunitie fomtime to diffolue that doubt. In the meane while maister Philippo thought by gazing on theyr beauty, to remoue the fire that miferably did confume the fuck and marow of his bones, feking comfort and relief for his afflicted heart, the more I fay he fought for eafe, the greater he felt his payn: And truely all they that feruently do loue, aspire to that, which otherwife they woulde eschue, by fight of them whome they do loue, not remembering that the more they doe contemplate the beloued beauty, the more increaseth defire, and with defire extreme and bitter fmart. Maister Philippo then lost no occasion or time stil to behold Madame the Queene, were it in the church or courte, or were she disposed for disport and recreation to walke abrode. It chaunced now while things wer at this poynt, the ladies very defirous to know vpon whom maifter Philippo did expend his loue, that fortune opened vnto them a meane to vnderstand the same: It was then about that time of the yere, wherein al floures and roses were by Titans force constrained to adorne and decke ech gardens and place of pleasure, and with their fragrant fmells and odors, to fent the fame in the moneth of May: it was when the Twinnes were dysposed to shroud themselues amongs the hawthorn boughs and honyfuckles that yeld to euery wyght greatest store of delyghts, at what time roses and other sloures at theyr first budding be very rare and scant, sauing in Kings Courtes and prynces Palaces, where futch rarieties by art and industrie be most abundant, and all men have delight to present sutch nouelties to the pryncipall ladies. Vpon a day Queene Anne had in hir hands certayne floures in due order couched in a Nofegay, and for hir difport walked vp and down a very fayre and gorgeous garden, in the company of Queene Mary, and other Ladies and gentlewomen, about that tyme of the day the Sun wearie of trauaile, went to hide him felf in the back fide of the western mountains, wher amongs other of the Courte was maifter Philippo. Queene Anne when she had efpyed him, determined to make proufe with what Ladyamongs them all, mayster Philippo was in loue, and sporting hir felf with fofte and prety walkes vp and downe the garden, pleafantly iefting with diverse there attendant, (as the maner is of like Ladies) with trimme and pleafant talk, at length happed vpon maifter Philippo, who although he was in communication with certain Italian Gentlemen, neuertheleffe his mynde and eyes were fixed vpon the Queene, that whenfoeuer she appeared before him his eyes and face were fo firmelye bent vppon hir, as the beholder might eafily perceiue, that the Vyfage of the Quene was the vndoubted harborough of his thought. Philippo, feeing the Queene come toward him, did honor hir wyth gentle and dutifull reuerence, in futch humble wife, as hee feemed at hir hands pitifully to craue mercy. And truely whofoeuer doth loue with fecret and perfect heart, feemeth to vtter more words to his Lady with his eies, than he is able to fpeak wyth his tongue. The Queene being come vnto him with a grace right graue and demure, fayd vnto him: "You Gentleman of Lombardie, yf these floures which we have in our hands were given vnto you liberally to vse at your pleasure, and required to make some curteous present of the same to one of vs the ladies here that liked you best, tell mee I pray you, to whether of vs would you give the fame, or what would you do or fay? Speake frankely we pray you, and tell youre mynde wythout respect: for thereby you shall doe to vs very great pleasure, and we shal know to whether of vs you beare your chiefest loue. For it is not to be supposed, that you being a young man, can spende your time without loue, being a naturall quality in enery creature."

When mayster Philippo felt the swete voyce of the Queene pl fantly to pierce his eares, and hearde that he was commaunded the loue of hir that he loued, not onely to tell whome he lou best and most intierly, but also hir whom he worshipped and seri in heart, was almost besides hymselfe, sutch was the tickly ioylitie that he felt in hys heart, whose face was taynted w a thousand colors and what for superfluous loue and ioy, whe the like he neuer tasted before, fell into an extasie, not able render answere. But when he had recouered stomack, so well he coulde with foft and trembling voice, he answered the Que in this wife: "Sith your maiesty (to whom I yelde myne hum thanks for that curtesse) hath vouchsafed to commaund me (besi the infinite pleafure and honour, for which eternally I shal star bound to your highnesse) I am ready sincerely and truely to d close my mind, being promised by your maiesty in opening of same, to deserue great thanks: Wherfore your pleasure be fuch I do fay then, with all due reuerence, that not onely here thys tyme, but at al times and places wher it shal please god appoint me, being not able to bestow them in other fort than the he, but wer they more precious and fayre, the more joyfull I sho bee of them. These floures I say shall of me right humbly presented to your maiesty, not bicause you be a Queene and a royal Race (whych notwythstandinge is a great vertue) I bicaufe you bee a Phœnix, a rare Lady, and of all the troupe 1 fayrest, garnished with infinit gifts, and passinge vertues, for ye merites worthy to be honoured wyth farr more excellent gi than these simple floures be, as she that (aboue all other Lad that line at this day) is the honour and onely glory of all wom: hoode of our age, as fhee that is the Paragon peereleffe of vniuerfal worlde." when he had fayd those words, he held peace. The Queene with great delight hearing the ready as fwere of the yong Gentleman, fayd vnto hym: "And we do g you thanks for the great honor and commendation done vi vs." When she had fayd so, without further talke, she went so vfing pleasant talke and sport with divers that wayted vpon l Queene Anne now vnderstode, and so likewise Queene Mary, wh of them the yong Lumbard Gentleman did accept for his fouerai Lady, whose love she disdayned not, but in her mynde rather commended, efteeming him better than euer she did before: and lyke a discreet and wyse Lady gaue him infinite prayse. She did not now as other women wont to do, who when they fee themselues of birth more noble, or of degree more ample than their louers be (whych gift they receyue through the fauor of the heauens) do not only despise them, but mock them, and their faythfull service, and many tymes with fayned countenance and diffembled words do extol them and fet them vp aloft, and by and by almost with one breath, exchanging their fayned prayfe into rebuke, they thruft them downe headlong from the tipe of hope and comfort, to the bottomlesse pit of despayre: and the fuller she is of sloutes, the finer Girle esteemed. But farre better is she to be regarded, that not findinge in hir hart to loue hir futer, will frankly tell him at the first, that she cannot like hym, nor fashion hir mynde to loue him, and requiring him not to feede his minde with vayne hope, or contriue the tyme with words and lookes, and pray him to feeke fome other that can better fanfy his person than she: And although perchance a man do very feruently loue a woman, and that it wer great forrow and grief vnto him to bee cast of, and receive such refufall, yet in myne opinion it were leffe griefe openly to receive that repulse, than to be fawned vppon, and flattered with fained talke, and for the time choaked with the baite of vaine hope, and afterwards become ridiculous, and gired by the fcorneful. I am affured, that the woman which giueth hir feruant futch repulse, shall bee counted mutch more cruell, than Maistresse Helena was to the scholler of Paris, after he was returned from the vniuersitie to Florence, written by Boccaccio in his Decamerone, and hereafter in place described. But let vs retourne to maister Philippo, who although hee coulde not imagine ne conceiue the intent, wherfore Queene Anne made that demaund, yet the fame was very deare and acceptable vnto him, vppon the which he neuer thought, but felt great contentation in his mynd, and was more iocund and pleafant than he was wont to be before. On the other fide the Queene, which was very discrete and wife, when she saw maister Philippo at the church or other place to make obeyfance vnto hir very curteously requited the same, bowing hir head to him agayn,

(which she neuer vsed but to Barons and Knights of great reputation) declaryng thereby how wel in worth she regarded his reuerence made vnto hir: Whereat he received maruellous pleafure and delight, hoping for none other recompence at hir handes, than continuance of futch curtefies and honourable entertaynment. Amongs certayne Italians that were vppon a Day affembled in the presence chamber of Queene Anne, waiting there vpon Madonna Barbara the wyfe of Maister Pietro Martire Stampa, who wyth hir two daughters were gone to falute the two Queenes that were that time together: There was also maister Philippo, with whom Borgo and Baldo reasoned of diverse matters: And as they wer in talke, both the Queenes came forth, which was the occasion, that al the lords and Gentlemen attended, vppon whose approch, ech man rose vp, and bareheaded expected whither the Queenes would goe. Quene Anne perceyuing a company of Italians together, left Queene Marie, and went ftreight to them, and very gently inquyred of dyuerse of the Gentlemen, their names, and of what partes of Italy they were, then she came to the place where they III. were standing together, and curteously asked first maister Girolamo, what his name was, of what countrey, whether he were a Gentleman? To whom reuerently he faid: "that his name was Girolamo Borgo, a Gentleman of Verona." Mayster Baldo likewife being demaunded the same, answered so well as he coulde: "that he was a Gentleman borne, of an auncient house in Milane, and that his name was Philippo Baldo." When she had received theyr answere with cheereful and smiling countenance she returned to maifter Philippo, inquyryng of him also his name and countrey, and whether he were a Gentleman or not? Whom maister Philippo after his duety done reuerently answered: "Madame, my soucrain Lady and only mistresse, I am a Gentleman, and am called by the name of Philippo dei Nicuoli, of Cremona." The Queene making no further demaundes of any of the other Gentlemen, fayd to Mayster Philippo: "You say true sir, I dare warrant you to be a Gentleman in deede, and hee that fayd the contrary, should declare himfelf to be voyd of Iudgement what a Gentleman is." She fayde no more, but from thence with Queene Mary and the whole trayne she went to Church. All they that hard the Queene speake those

words, dyd wonder, and could not deuise what shee meant by them, notwithstanding ech man thought that the Queene bare to maister Philippo singuler good will and fauour. He (as it was his custome) full of diverse cogitations, whose head was building of great cities, went to church, bestowing himselfe in his wonted place, reuoluing in hys mind the Queene's words fpoken vnto him. And although he could not perceive to what end that honorable lady had spoken them, yet hee thought that hir maiesty had done him great honour. And verily the humanity and curtefy of a Lady, fo excellent and noble is worthy to be extolled with infinite prayles, who being of high estate and lineage, and the wife of a Prince that proceded of the stirpe Imperial, not only did not disdaine to be beloued of a man of so base degree, and banished from his own Country, but also with great care and diligence did deuife, and in effect declare that she was the same whome the Italian yong gentleman did loue as partly it was euidently to bee perceived, not for other purpose doubtlesse, but to do some Noble deede couenable for the greatnesse of hir estate, and incident to the feruent loue of the amorous yong Gentleman, which afterwardes in very dede she accomplyshed. But howe many be there in these dayes, I doe not speake of Queenes and Pryncesses, but of simple and private Gentlewomen, that beyng of meane worship, indued with some shew of beautie, be without good conditions and vertue, who feeying themfelues beloued of fome Gentlemen, not fo enriched with the goods of Fortune as they be, do fcorue and mocke them, thynking themfelues to good to be loked vpon, or to be once moued of vertuous loue, fcornfully caffing their face at one fide, as though the futers were vnworthy their company? Howe many likewyse be possessed and ouerwhelmed with pryde by reason Nature more propicious vnto them then other, be descended of some great parentage, that will accompt a great iniurie done vnto them, if any gentleman except he be rych, do make fute to loue them? Again a great number of women (I fpeake of them whose minds do not so mutch aspire to fame or honour as they feeke their delights and brauerie to be mainteined) bee of this trampe, that they care not whether theyr louers bee difcrete, well condicioned, vertuous and gentle, fo that theyr pursses be full of money, or theyr shapes amiable, not waying the valour and good condicions of the minde, ne yet a thousand other qualities that ought to garnish a Gentleman, whereby all vertuous Gentlemen dayly do growe beautiful, and be enriched wyth greater perfections. Some there be that fixe their minds vpon those, that be of goodly personage, although void of good behauiour, louing rather a piece of flesh with two eyes, than an honest man well furnished with vertue. Thynk not yet for all thys, that herein men ordinarily bee more wyse than women, althoughe they ought to bee accomplished with greater witte: but to fay the truth, they all be spotted with one kind of pitch, that warfare here in the large campe of this present worlde: whereof it commeth to passe, that light loue as we see to beare no good foundation, and to have no longe continuance, even fo the end and conclusion to confume like the beauty of the floure. And therupon many times it chaunceth, that when loue is not grounded but vpon transitorie beauty, which doth dissolue like a windy cloude, the little heat thereof doth not wax more hote, but rather congealeth to frost, and many times converteth into hatred and mischiefe most cruel. A worse thing yet than this is in common practife: There be many that wyll needes bee counted and called gentlemen, bycause they come of Auncient and Noble race, and being growen vp to man's state, doe appeare in shapes of men, but are altogether without approued manners, vtterly ignorant what the nature of Gentle is, accomptying themselues to be ioly fellowes, when in company of other as bigge beaftes as them felues, they contriue theyr time and make their bragges, vaunting that Sutch a woman is at my commaundment, and futch a man's wyfe I do keepe, futch a one is my companion's friende: whereby they bryng many women, yea and of the best fort, into slaunder and infamie. Diverse Gentlewomen also bee so fond, and of so simple discretion, that although they know and clearely perceyue thys to be true, yet allured with the personages and beauty of sutch Roisters, passe not to give the rayne to these vnbridled Iades, not foreseeing (lyke ignorant Woodcockes) that in fewe dayes through their own temeritie, they incur the common shame of the vulgar people, being pointed at in the streates as they goe: where sutch as be wyse and discrete, doe

dayly feare the least suspition that may be conceived. There is no woman that is wyfe, but so neare as she can, wil shunne and auoyde all occasion whereby slaunder may aryse, and will chose vnto hir amongs a number, futch one as can best please hir fansie, and as with whome for hys vertue and honesty she purposeth to match hir felfe in maryage, which is the final ende of all honest loue. Howe be it Nature hath not framed enery creature of one metall, ne yet Minerua infused lyke brayne into euery head. And truely this our age dothe breede many fayre and worthie Women, whose condicions bee good and honest, adorned with comely qualities, the Generofitie, floutnesse and Valoure of whose myndes doe deferue fyngular prayfe and eftymatyon. And what is hee, chauncynge vppon a curteous and Vertuous Dame, that wyll not gyue ouer the Loue of all other, to honour and loue hir for euer? But wee have digreffed too long from our Hystorye, and therefore, retourning to the same agayne, I say, that Fortune the guide of maister Philippo, was fully determined to bestow hir fauor vpon him: For besides that the Queene dearely estemed his loue, it feemed that all thyngs wer vnyted and agreed to fort his enterpryfe to happy fuccesse. The Queene had to her Gouernesse Madonna Paola dei Cauali, a Gentlewoman of Verona, very auncient and graue (aduaunced to the callyng, by Madonna Bianca Maria Sforza the wyfe of the Emperour Maximilian) whom Queene Anne required dylygently to procure for hir, futch Rithmes in the Thuscane language and other Italian workes, as were to be found, bicause hir dysposition was to be conversant and familiar in that tongue, and employed great diligence to learne and exercife the fame, wherein shee attained sutch perfection, as all Italians coulde very well vnderstande her. Now (as the good lucke of mayster Philippo woulde haue it) he that day went to the Courte alone, continually edeuifinge if it were possible, at al tymes to be in prefence of the Quene: Whome fo foone as Madonna Paola efpyed, bicaufe she familiarly knew him went vnto him, and fayd: "My welbeloued friend maister Philippo, bicause the Queene hath great delight to learn our tongue, and therein already hath fome towardnesse, as by hir common speakying of the same you may perceyue, this mornyng at hir vprifing shee gaue me a great

charge to procure for hir, certayne Italian Rithmes, who befides those bookes in that tongue already prynted, gladly defireth to fee fome trymme deuises of diverse learned men that make in oure Daies. specially hir mind is earnestlye disposed upon Rithmes cunningly composed, whereof I thinke you have some store by reason of your delight in that exercise: Wherefore I thought good to repayre vnto you, and doe heartily pray you, to make hir Maiesty pertaker of sutch as you have, wherein you shal do hir great and grateful feruice, and I shal remain continually bound vnto you: befides that I doe purpose when I present them vnto hir, to make hir privile that I received them at your hands, which bicause of the love shee beareth to our Natyon, she wyl fauorably accept, and the fame no doubte when opportunitye ferueth, liberally reward." Maister Philippo in curteous wife thanked the gentlewoman, and faid, that he was forry he was not able better to fatisessie hir request, bicause in that countrey he had small store of futch defired things, neuertheleffe he would make diligent fearch, to get fo many as were possible to be found, either amongs the Gentlemen that followed the Court, or elfe where they were to be gotten. In the meane time, he fayd, that he would deliuer those few hee had, and bring them vnto hir that night, praying hir to commend hym to the good grace, and fauour of hir maiesty. And fo he tooke hys leaue, and went strayght to hys Lodging, where diligently he began to fearch among his writings (the gladdest man in the Worlde for that occasion offered) and founde amonges the fame divers rithmes which hee thought vnworthy to passe into the handes of so great a Lady, saving the third Rithme or Chapter, as we commonly call it, made by a notable Doctor of the lawes, and excellent Poet called M. Niccolo Amanio, of Crema, who no doubt for making of vulgar rithmes, thereby expreffing the amorous affections of Louers, was in our time without compari-And bicause the same was so apt for the purpose of mayster Philippo his loue, as could be defired, he wrote the fame fayre (being in deede a very fayre sheete of Paper,) which soundeth to this effect.

Quanto piu cresce (Amor) Paspro tormento, &c.
The more (O Loue) thy bitter pangs augment,
Melting by times my sad accensed spreete,
The more to burne I feele my selfe content:

And though ech day a thousande times I fleete
Twixt hope and dreade, all dolour yet and smart
My glorious proofe of enterprise makes sweete.

The fire so high which kindled hath myne hart,
As by loue's slames none euer had (I know)
So lofty source of heate in any part,

Sweete then my torments are, fweete is my woe, Sweete eke of loue the light, fweete the conceyte From fo high beames, fallen in my breaft, groe.

Sutch power of porte, futch maiesty most gret I tremble to beholde, and do confesse My lot to base, so worthy a blisse to get.

But will herein my Reafon doth suppresse, And those fayre eyes, where loue himselfe ny lies, Armed with lookes of ioy and gentlenesse,

Lookes that vpliftes my foule aboue the Skies, And in each coast al cloudes expelling cleane, Do teach ten thousand pathes to Paradise.

My Goddesse braue, Angelicall Sirene, Fayrenesse it selfe, Dame Beautie's sacred heire: What mounts of ioy may match my happy paine,

Whose scaling hope how so ensue dispeire,

Leues vaunt of thoughts, which once so highly slew
As honour, all that earth besides doth beare,

Comparde to this, but baggage were to vew.

When Mayster Philippo had written out these verses, immediately he returned to the court, and caused Madona Paolo, to be called vnto him by one of the Gromes of the Chamber, to whom he sayd: "Maystresse Paola, I have brought you a ditty, that is very trim and prety, which I pray you deliver to the Queene, and I will do what I can to get other." Maistresse Paola tooke them, and went into the chamber, and findinge the Queene alone, sayd to hir: "Madame, this morninge yee commaunded me to get you some

Italian Rithmes, and vpon inquirie I haue receyued these few verses of mayster Philippo, secretary to the Lord Andrea Borgo, who hath promifed to bring me other." The Queene hearing hir speake those words, smilinge received the Paper, and read the same: the sense whereof she liked very well, thinking that mayfter Philippo had bene the compositor of the same, and that of purpose he had made them for hir, whereby shee was out of doubt that it was shee that mayster Philippo so feruently loued, and the better hir opinion was confirmed, bicause some of the words tended to the state of hir personage. confidering the valor of hys minde, she prayfed Nature, for that in a man fo basely borne shee had sowen the seeds of a gentlemanlike and noble heart, greatly to hir felfe commendynge the yong man. Then she conferred the whole matter wyth hir Coofin Queene Marie: which was a wyfe and comely Ladye, and vpon that loue they vfed many discourses, more and more having in regard the behauiour of that yong Gentleman. Queene Anne determined, when conveniently shee might, to rendre to mayster Philippo, for his great loue condigne rewarde: and studying still how to requite his curtesie, euer when she saw maister Philippo, shee vsed him with her wonted chere and grateful falutation (which thinge onely every honest gentleman ought to expect that is indued wyth reason at the hands of a pryncesse so noble and worthy, as a reward fufficient, the inequality of the parties confidered.) Whereof mayster Philippo was the best contented man of the world, and durst not hope for greater guerdon, continuing his wonted lyfe fed hym felf stil with that beloued fight, in futch wyfe as many Gentlemen enuied the fauor borne vnto him by the Queene, who for none other cause did vse that curtesy, but for that fhe faw him to be Vertuous and well learned: continually efteemyng futch as wyth learning or other gyftes of the mynd were indewed: and when occasion chaunced, shee vouchesafed to bestowe vpon them curteous intertaynment and lyberall rewardes. It fortuned about that time that the Emperor Maximilian died, Charles his nephew (which was the Emperor Charles, the fifth,) then beyng in Spayne, by reason of whose death the Lord Andrea Borgo, purposed to fend one of hys Gentlemen to kyng Charles. 2 C VOL II.

for the confirmation of that lyuing he enioyed, given vnto him for his long and faythfull feruyce by the faid Maximilian. Amongst al he chose this maister Philippo, for his wisdome and experience in futch affayres. Which don, he went to the Queenes, and gaue them to vnderstand that shortely he would send his Secretarie into Spayne, and told them the cause, humbly praying them both, that they would write their fauorable letters in his behalf. The Queenes knowing what payne and trauell hee had fuftayned in the fernice of Maximilian, and what danngers he had paffed, were very willing therunto. Now Queene Anne remembred that she had convenient time to recompence maister Philippo for hys long loue born vnto hir: and bicause she was the most curteous Lady of the world, and therwithal most bountifull and liberal, and not onely with comely talke and gesture: but also in effecte willing to do them good, whome she honoured in minde, concluded what to do, requiring the Lord Andrea to fend his Secretarie vnto hir, when he was ready to depart, for that besides Letters, she woulde by mouth commit certain businesse for hir to do in the Courte of Spayne. When the Lord Andrea was gone, Queene Anne began to deuise with the other Queene what she mighte doe for mayster Philippo, who prayed Queene Anne, after she had commended him in letters, to suffer hir to make the ende and conclusion of the same. Whereupon both the Queenes wrote many letters into Spayne, to king Charles, and to the Lord Chancellour and other Noble men, whome they thought to bee apte and mete ministers to bring the effect of their letters to passe. When the Lord Andrea had put all thinges in order for that dispatch, he fayd to mayster Philippo, (which was now furnished with all thyngs necessary and apertinent for that long voyage:) "Philippo, remembre this day that you goe to Quene Anne, and tell her, that I require you to come vnto hir, to know if she would commaund you any feruice to the Catholike Kynge, where you shall humbly offer your fernice, in what it pleafeth hir to commaunde: you shall also tel hir what things I have gyuen vnto you in charge by speciall commission." Neuer could more pleafant talke found into the eares of maifter Philippo, than this, who for that he should bothe see and speake vnto his Lady before his

departure, and for that she would commit vnto him the doing of hir affayres in Spayne, was the gladdest and best contented man of the world. The houre come when he thought good to repayre to the Queene, he went vnto hir, and gaue hir to vnderstand by one of the priny Chamber, that he was attendant there to know hir pleasure. The Quene certyfied of his readinesse to depart, by and by toke order that he should come into hir chambre, who entring the same with trembling heart, and after he had done hys humble reuerence, with great feare and bashfulnesse, said: "Pleaseth your Maiesty, that my Lorde Borgo, being about to addresse mee hys Secretarie into Spayne, to the Catholike King there, hath commaunded me to wayte vpon your hyghnesse, to knowe your pleafure for certain affayres to be don for your maiefty: Wherfore may it please the same to employ mee, your humble servaunte, I shall thinke my felf the happiest man of the world: A thing so bleffed and joyfull vnto me, as no benefite or commoditie can render vnto me greater felicitie." Then he dysclosed vnto her thee rest of his meffage, which was committed vnto hym by his lord and maister. The Oueene beholding hym wyth mery countenaunce gently fayd vnto hym: "And we for the trust we have in you to do our message and other affayres in Spayne, haue requyred you to come hither: And bycaufe we knowyng you to be a Gentleman, and affured that you wyll gladly do your endeuour in any thing that may do vs pleasure, haue chosen you ahoue any other. Our wyl and commaundement is, that fyrst you delyuer these letters, conteining matters of great importance to the hands of the catholike King, and that you do our humble commendations to his maiesty. Then al the rest accordingly as they be directed, which principally aboue other things we pray you to dispatch vpon your arrivall: And if we bee able to do you any pleasure, eyther for your preferment, or for other commodity, spare not to write vnto vs your mynd, and (we doe affure you) the fame shalbe efectually accomplyshed, to the vttermoste of our indeuour, whych we do of our owne motion frankely offre vnto you, in confideration of the fidelitie, worthinesse, and honeste behauiour alwayes knowen to be in you." Mayster Philippo hearynge these wordes was replenyshed with sutch ioy, as he thought hymselfe rapt into

the heavens, and his heart felt futch pleasure, as it semed to flote in some depe sea of delights: and after the best maner he coulde, thanked hir for hir curtesie: and albeit (he fayd) that hee knew hymfelf vnworthy of that fauor, yet he dedicated the fame to hir commaundement, furrendring himselfe as a slaue and faythful feruant to hir maiesty. Then vppon his knees, to his great contentation he kiffed hir hands, which of hir felfe she offred vnto him, and then renerently he toke his leane. When hee was gone oute of the chamber, he met with the Queene's Coferer, that attended for him, who taking him aside, did put into his hand a purse with 500, crowns, and the maister of the horse presented vnto him a very goodly and beautifull horfe, wherewith maifter Philippo was fo well pleafed, as he was like to leape out of his skin for ioy. Then he toke his iorney and arrived at the Courte in Spayne, where at oportunity, he deliuered his Letters to King Charles, and accomplished other busines and message prescribed vnto him by Quene Anne: And when he had dispatched the Queene's other letters, he attended the bufinesse of his Lord Andrea Borgo. The king perufed the Contentes of the letters fent vnto him by his fifter and kynfwoman, fo did the Lord Chauncellour, (which at that time was the Lord Mercurino Gattinara,) and other, to whom the Queenes had written: whereby the king was folicited to stand good Lord, to the Lorde Andrea Borgo, and likewife exhorted him to be beneficial to mayster Phylippo, whom for his good condicions and experience they had fent vnto him in the ambaffage. Vpon a day the king moued by the Lorde Chancellor, caused maister Philippo to come before him, to whom kneling before his maiesty, the king said these words: "The testimony and report fo honorably made of you by the two Queenes, from whom you brought vs letters, and the hope which we have to find you a faithful and profitable feruant, and to be correspondent in effecte to the tenor of those letters, moueth vs to accepte you into the numbre of one of our Secretaries, wherein before our presence you shal sweare vnto vs to be faithfull and true." Maifter Philippo that expected for no futch dignity, maruelled at the Kyng's wordes, and there by oth ministred vnto hym by the Lorde Chauncellour was receyued into his feruice, and exercyfed that

office, in fingular fauor of the King, to the great satysfaction of al men. And after that King Charles was elected Emperor, knowing the experience that maifter Philippo had in the affaires of Italy, and specially in Lombardie, he commytted vnto hym all matters touchyng the state of the region, which so happily came to passe to maifter Philippo, as besides the ornaments of vertue and wifedom, he acquired greate riches, and yet he continually ferued and worshipped the Queene as his noble patronesse and worthy mystresse. Tel me now ve faire Ladies and Gentlewomen! What shall we fay of the princely behauiour and noble disposition of this Queene? Truly in my judgment, the deferueth that prayfe and commendation that may be attributed to the moste excellente Ladye of the Worlde, who never gave over her faythful fervant tyl she had bountifully with hir own hands and commendation, rendred vnto hym a most Pryncely rewarde. And as the sunne in beautye and bryghtnesse doeth surmounte the other furniture of the Skies, euen fo Magnyfycence, and liberality in ech Lady doth excell all other vertues, specially in those personages, that keepe the state of Princes. But to conclude, mete and requisite it is, that yee beautify this most curtuous and liberall Queene wyth due prayfes: For furely in my judgement, if all Women would confer theyr heades and Wittes together, and deuise Hymnes and Sonnets of Liberality,

they can neuer fufficiently be able to celebrate the prayfe and glory of thys Queene.

THE TWENTY-SECOND NOUELL.

The gentle and iust act of Alexander de Medices Duke of Florence, vpon a Gentleman whom he fauoured, who having rauished the Daughter of a poore Myller, caused him to mary hir, for the greater honour and celebration whereof, he appoynted hir a rich and honourable Dowry.

If the Force of Vertue were apparant at the fight of eye, it would be deemed to be of leffe value than the greatneffe thereof deferueth (for fundry causes rising in the mindes of men) and that by performinge the little which rested for th'entier perfection of hir whole vnited glory. Now because that hir effects be diverse, and that dynerfly they be vied, the examples also of futch diversity, do variate and make diverse the affections of men: some to follow that quality and other that part, proceeding from the whole and perfect body of vertue, which hath caused some to win the price of modesty and temperance in their deedes, other full of magnanimity (not familiar to many) have refifted the affaults of fortune. Many other have embraced that only honor whych is the nourice of ech good act, whereby they have either wel ruled the state of free citties, or guided the armies of mighty Monarchs. And futch whilom the cities of Rome, Athenes, Sparta, and the auncient Monarchs of the Medes, Persians, and the Assyrians did see. I wil omit a good company of the fage and wyfe, which have appayfed the troubles of Citties, the inquietations of Palaces, the cries of Iudgement feates, the diffimulation and deceiptfull flatteries of Courts, the carefull griefs which the householder by gouernment of his house and family doth sustaine and feele, of purpose more frankly to retire to the study of sapience, which alone is able to make a man happy, and worthy to be partaker of the diuinity. But aboue al, I wil prayfe him which not fubiect to the law lyueth neuerthelesse like him that is most thrall thereunto, or without respect of bloude or frendship shall exercise Iuftice vpon his dearest and best beloued: as in olde time Manlius and Torquatus at Rome, the people of Athenes towards

one Timagoras, who beyond the duty of the Ambassador of a frank citty, fel down on his knees and worshipped the Persian king. And in our time the Marquize of Ferrara, by doing to death his own fon for adultry committed wyth his mother in Law. And yet Iustice may fauour of some cruelty, which rather turneth to shame than praise: as Ihon Maria Visconte Duke of Milan, when he caused a couetous priest to be buried quick with the corps of him whom he had refused to bury without money, the history wherof is hereafter remembred. So as mediocrity of punishment ought to be yoked with the rigor of law, for the mitigation thereof. And beholde, wherefore the great Dictator Iulius Cæfar loued better to gavn the heart of his enemies with mercy, than vanquish and bring them to obedience with massy manacles and gives of Iron. Moreouer in our age Alphonsus of Aragon (the true Sampler of a iust and Righteous Prynce) dyd not hee esteeme (when hee strayghtly befieged Gaiette) the Vyctory to be more Gloryous and better gotten, which is done by composition and gentlenesse, than the bloudy conquest, colored wyth teares and bloud of a poore fimple people? And truly princes, and great lordes, specially they which newly (without fuccession received from their ancestors) arriue to the gouernment of some commonwealth, ought continually to have before their eies, an honest severity for the holines of the law, and a graue mildnesse, to moderat the rigour of their duety: For by that meanes right is mainteined, the heart of man is won, fo wel as by violence: and the state of gouernment taketh so good footing, as the winde of no fedition afterwards can remoue the same, beinge founded vpon a sure stone, and framed vpon a rock durable for a long tyme. Whereof wee haue an example of fresh memory of a kinde act, full both of wysedome and of gentle feuerity, in a prynce of our time, who wythout effusion of bloud punished with rigor enough, a trespasse committed, and sweetely remitted the payne vpon him, which merited grieuous, nay mortall punishment, as at large you shall see by the discourse that follow-Alexander de Medices, fauoured by the Church of Rome, (and armed with the Papall standard) was hee that first with great activity and Wisedome inveyed the Seniory of Florence, immediatly vsurping the name, title, and prerogative of Duke. The same

albeit vpon the prime face he was odious to the people of Florence, wroth for lofing of their ancient liberty, and displeasant to the Senatours and potentates, to fee them felues deprined of the foueraignty of Iustice, and of the authority they had to commaund ouer all the Citizens, yet for all that was he indued wyth fo good qualities, and gouerned fo wel his principality, as that which at the beginning was termed Tyranny, was receyued as iust domination, and that which was supposed to be abused by force, seemed to be done as it were by lawfull fuccession. And they counted themselues happy (when they saw their lucke to bee sutch as their common wealth must needs obey the aduice and pleasure of one Prince alone) to have a fourraygn lord, fo wife, fo vertuous and fo ful of curtefie: and albeit in all other things he shewed himselfe prayse worthy, noble, and of gentle kinde, yet in this he vanquished himselfe in himselfe, by that indifferent instice, which made him wonderful, denying the fame to none, and in no one iote shewed himselfe parcial to any, which thought by hym to bee supported in their follies: And that which is more to bee wondred in him, and doth augment the prayse of his integrity in judgement, was, that he punished in another the thynge, which hee ought to have pardoned and remitted, hee hymfelfe beinge attaynted wyth that dysease. But thys good Duke applyed to Reason, to tyme, and to the Granity of the fact and quality of the offended persones: For where the greatnesse of a deede surpasseth all occasion of pardon and mercye, there the Prynce, Judge, or Magistrate ought to dispoyle and put of his sweetest affections, to apparell himselfe with rigor, whych reacheth the knyfe into the hand of the Ruler, of purpose that pryuate familiaritie, do not in ende rayse in the subiect's hearte a contempte of superiours, and unbrydled licence. lawleffe to line at their pleafure. Now the thing which I meane to tell, confifteth in the proofe of a rare and exquisite Prynce. which feldome or neuer harboureth in yong age, the heates whereof can not but with greate difficultie, feele the coldnesse and correction of reason: And likewise the causes from whence wisdome's force proceede, do rest in longe experience of things, whereby men waxe olde in ripenesse of witte, and theyr deedes become worthy of prayle. This Duke Alexander ordred fo wel his estates, and kepte futch a goodly and plentifull Court, as the same gaue place to no Prynce of Italy, how great or rich fo euer it was, which noble court he kept aswell for his owne garde and honor as to shew the natural floutnesse of his corage, not vsing for all that any insolencie or vnseemely dealing agaynste the haynous and auncient enemies of his familie. Amongs his gallant troupe of Courtiers, which ordinarily attended, there was a Florentine gentleman, very neare the Duke, and the beste beeloued of them all. This yong Gentleman had a Manor hard by Florence, where he was very well and flately lodged, which caused him many times to forsake the City, wyth two of his companions, to recreate himself in that pleasant place. It chaunced vpon a time, he being in his fieldish house, besides the which there was a Myll, the maister of the sayd Myll had a paffing fayre daughter, whom thys Gentleman did well marke and beholde, and with hir beauty beecame straungely in loue, in whom also appeared some Noble port, that exceded the bloud and race whereof she came. But what? The heavens be not to spare distributers of theyr gifts, but sometimes they divide them with the least measure, and at some other times in equall weight or greatest heape, to them that be of the basest forte and popular degree, so wel, as to the greatest and of most noble race. Rome fomtimes hath feen a bondman and flaue, fomtimes a Runnegate's fonne, for his wit and Courage to beare the Scepter in his hand, and to decide the causes of that lofty people, who by fleyghts and practifes aspired the Empyre of the whole worlde. And he that within our Fathers remembrance defireth to knowe what great Tamberlane of Tartarie was, the aftonishment and ruine of al the East partes, shall well perceyue that his originall forted from the vulgar forte, and from the lowest degree that was amongs all estates: whereby must be confessed, that the goodnesse of nature is futch and fo great, as she will helpe hir nourice children (whatsoeuer they be,) the best she can: Not that I meane to infer hereby, but that the bloud of Predecessors, with the institution of their Posterity, mutch augmenteth the force of the spirit, and accomplisheth that more fincerely whereunto nature hath giuen a beginninge. Now to com to our purpose, this yong Courtier, taken and chayned in the bands of loue, fettred and

clogged wyth the Beauty and good grace of that Countrey wench, forethought the meanes how he myght inioy the thynge after which hee hoped. To loue hir he deemed it vnworthy of his degre: And yet he knew hir to be futch (by report of many) as had a very good Wit, tongue at wyll, and which is more esteemed, a Paragon and mirror of chafte life and modesty. Which tormented this amorous Mounfier beyond measure, and yet chaunged not his affection, affuring himselfe that at length he should attayne th' end of his defires, and glut that his vnfatiable hunger, which preffed him from day to day to gather the foote and fauorous frute which Louers fo egerly fue for at maydens handes of femblable age, who then was betweene xvi. and xvii. yeares. This Louer dyd to vnderstand to hys companions his griefe and frensie, who fory for the same, assayed by all meanes, to make him forget it, telling hym that it was unfeemely for a Gentleman of his accompt, to make himselfe a fable to the people, which would come to passe if they knew how vndifcretely hee had placed hys loue: and that there were a number of fayre and honest gentlewomen more to whom befides conuenably and with greater contentation he might addresse the same. But he which mutch leffe faw, than blind loue himselfe that was his guid, and he that was more bare of reason and aduice than the Poets sayne Cupido to be naked of apparell, would not harken to the good counsel, which his companions gaue him, but rather fayd that it was loft time for them to vie futch spech, for he had rather dy, and indure all the mocks and fcoffs of the world, than lofe the most delicate pray (in his mynde,) that could chaunce into the hands of man, adding moreouer, that the homelynesse and rudenes of the country, had not fo mutch anoved his new beloued, but she deserved for hir beauty to be compared with the greatest Minion and finest attyred gentlewoman of the Citty: For this mayden had but the ornament and mynionnesse which nature had enlarged, where other artificially force by trumperies, to vsurpe that which the heavens deny them. "Touching her vertue let that passe in silence, sithens that she" (quod he fighinge) "is to chaft and vertuous for one whom I would choose to daly withal: My defire is not to make hir a Lucrece, or fome of those auncient Matrones, which in elder yeres builded

the temple of woman's Fortune at Rome." The companions of this louer feeing how he was bent, promifed him what they were able to doe, for accomplishment of his will, for the which he thanked them very heartely, offring like duty, where fortune should prepare the proofe of their affection and neede of his amorous service: In the mean time, conceiuing in his minde fome new deuice, which fo foone as he had found out was not able to be brought to paffe, and knowing that the duke feldome would have him out of his fight, began to inuent lyes, doing hym to vnderstand that he had necessary occasion, for a certain time, to remain and be at his country house. The duke which loued him, and who thought that either he had fom fecret ficknes, or els fom wench which he was loth to discouer before his companions, gaue him leave for a month, which fo pleafed this amorous Gentleman, as he lept for ioye, and was not able to rest one hour before he had found out his frends and companions, to mount on horsback to visit hir that had vnder hir power and obeisance the best portion of him, which was his hart and his most fecret thought. When he was come to his Countrey house, hee began to stalke abrode, and daunce a round about the Mill, where his beloued did dwel, who was not fo foolish, but by and by suspected whereunto those goings and commings of the Pilgrim tended, and for what pray he led his Dogs in leafe, and caused so many Nets and Cords to be displayed by hunters of euery age and fexe, who to discouer the Countrey, assayde by beating the Bushes, to take the Beaste at forme: For which cause she also for hir part, began to fly the snares of those Byrders, and the raunging of the Dogs that vented after hir, strayinge not from the house of the good man hir Father: whereof this poore louer conceyued great dispayre, not knowinge by what meanes he might rouse the Game after which he hunted, ne finde the meanes to do hir vnderstand his playnts and vnmeasured griefe of heart, the firme loue, and finceere mynde wherewyth he was fo earnestly bent, both to obay and loue hir aboue all other: And that which most of all increased his payne, was that of so great a troupe of messages whych he had fent, with giftes and promisses the better to atchieue his purpose, no one was able to take place or force (neuer fo little) the chastity of that sober and modest mavde. It

chaunced one day as this Gentleman was walking a long a wode fide newly felled, hard adjoyning to his house, by whych there was a cleare and goodly fountayne shadowed betweene two thick and lofty Maple trees, the Myller's Daughter went thither for water, and as she had set downe hir payles upon the fountaine brink, hir Louer came vnto hir, litle thinking of futch a joyful meeting, which he wel declared by these words: "Prayfed be God, that when I hoped least of this good hap, he hath sent me hither, to see the onely substaunce of my ioy." Then turninge his face towards the mayden, fayd vnto her: "Is it true that thou art heere (or do I dreame) and fo neare to him that most defireth to gratyfie thee in any thynge wherewyth it may pleafe thee to commaunde him? Wilt thou not have pity vpon the paynes and griefs which continually I indure for the extreme loue I beare thee?" And faying fo, he would have imbraced hir. But the mayde, which cared no more for his flatteries, than before she did for his presents and messages feeing the same to tend to nothing else but to hir ruine and great dishonor, wyth stout countenaunce, and by hir lively colour declaring the chaft and vertuous motion of her bloud, fayd to this valiant Gentleman: "How now, fyr, do you thinke that the vilenesse of myne apparell, holdeth leffe vertue, than is vnder the rich and fumptuous Ornaments of greatest Ladyes? Do you suppose that my bringing vp hath bred in me futch grofe bloud, as for your only pleasure, I should corrupt the perfection of my minde, and blot the honour which hitherto fo carefully I have kept and religiously preferued? Be fure that fooner death shall separate the soule from my body, than willingly I would fuffer the ouerthrow and violation of my virginity. It is not the part of futch a Gentleman as you be, thus to espy and subtlely pursue vs poore Countrey maydens to charme vs with your fleights and guilfull talke: It is not the duety of a Gentleman to subborne sutch vaunte currors to discouer and put in perill, the honour of chaste maydens and honest Wyues, as heretofore you have done to me. It ought to fuffice, that you have received shame by repulse of your messengers, and not to come your felfe to bee partaker of their Confusion." "And that is it, that ought to moue you fweete heart" (aunswered he) "to take pitty vpon my griefe, so playnly feeing that vnfaynedly I doe

loue you, and that my loue is fo well planted, as rather had I fuffer death, than occasion the least offence that may displease you: Only I befeech you, not to fnew your felfe fo cruel vnto him, who disdayning all other, hath made you so frank an offer both of himselfe and of al that he hath to commaund." The maide not greatly trusting his words, feared that he prolonged time to make hir stay till hys feruants came to steale hir away: And therefore without further aunswere, she taking vp hir payles, and half running till she came neere the Myll, escaped his hands, telling hir father no part of that talk betwene them: who began already to doubt the treason, deuised by the Gentleman, agaynst the pudicity of his daughter, vnto whom he neuer disclosed his suspition, were it that he knew hir to be vertuous inough, and constant to refist the luring affaults of love, or confidred the imbecillity of our flesh, and the malice of the same, which dayly aspireth things thereunto defended, and by lawes limitted and prescribed, which lawes it ought not to excede, and yet therof it wisheth the abolishment. The Gentleman seeinge that the mayden had forsaken hym, and little efteemed hys amorous onfet, outraged for loue, and chafed wyth choler, spake these wordes to hymselfe: "Ah foolish and dastard louer, what didst thou meane when thou hadst hir fo neere thee, in place fo commodious, where shee durst not gaynefay thee that thou didft no better purfue hir? And what knowest thou if shee came of purpose to ease thy payne and to finish thy troublesome trauels? Surely I suppose she did so, but that shame and duety forced hir to vse those wordes, to make mee thinke, that lyghtly she would not bee ouercome by perfuafions: And put the case that it were not so, who coulde haue let mee to take by force that, whereunto willingly she would not accorde: But what is she to be reuenged of sutch an iniury? She is for conclusion the daughter of a Miller, and may make hir vaunte, that she hath mocked a Gentleman, who beinge alone wyth hir, and burninge wyth loue, durst not staunch hys thirst (although full dry) fo neere the fountayne: And by God (favd he rifing from a greene banke neere the fountayne's fide) if I dv therefore, I wyll haue it eyther by loue or force." In this wicked and tyrannicall mynde, hee returned to hys place, where his com-

panions feeing him fo out of quiet, fayd vnto him: "Is thys the guise of a gentle minde, to abase it selfe to the pursute of so fimple a Wench? Doe not you know the malice of that fexe, and the guiles wherewith those Serpents poyson men? Care you so little for a woman as the doth for you, and then wyll the imbrace you and make mutch of you, whose only study is (which I beleeue) to frame hirselfe agaynst all that, for which humble sute is made: But admit, that women hath fome qualities to draw men to loue them, to honour and ferue them, which if it so be truely that office and dutifull deuovre ought to be imployed in feruice of them, that be honourable and in spirite and iudgement of gentle kinde, which no doubt wil counteruayle the merite of futch a futer: And certeffe I am of opinion that a man may vaynely confume a yere or two in purfute and feruice of this mealy Countrey wench, so well as addresse his loue in the obedience of some favre and honest Gentlewoman: which courteously and with some fauour wyll recompence, the trauayles of hir feruaunt, where that rude and fottish gyrle, by pryde will vaunt and looke a loft, at the honor done vnto hir, despise theym whose worthvnesse she knoweth not, and whom neyther she nor the best of her seede, be worthy to ferue in any respect: will you know then what I thinke best for you to do? myne aduice is then, that one of these euenings, she be truffed vp in a Maile and brought hither, or in some place els where you thinke good, that you may enjoy at pleafure the beauty of hir whom you do praise and wonder at so mutch: And afterwards let hir dissemble if she lust, and make a Iewel of hir chastity when she hath not to triumph ouer you, by bearing away the victory of your purfutes." "Ah my good friend," aunswered the desperate louer, "how rightly you touch the most daungerous place of al my wound, and how foueraygne a falue and plaister you apply therevnto: I had thought truly to intreate you of that, whereof euen now you have made the ouerture, but fearing to offend you, or to mutch vsurpe vpon your friendship, rather had I fuffer a death continuall, than rayle one point of offence, or discontentation in them, which so frankly have offred to doe me pleasure, whereof (by God's affistaunce) I hope to be acquited with all duety and office of frendship. Now resteth it, to put in

proofe, the effect of your deuife, and that so shortly as I can: In like manner you fee that the terme of my heere abode, will shortly expire, and if wee be once at the Courte, impossible it is for me to recouer fo good occasion, and peraduenture she wil be maried, or fome other shal cary away the pray after which I have beaten the Bush." The plot then of this mayden's rape, was resolued vpon, and the first espied occasion taken: But the louer which feared least this heat of his companions would coole, sollicited them fo mutch, as the execution was ordayned the following night: which they did, not fo mutch for the pleafure of their frend, to whom in futch aduentures they ought to deny all helpe, (fith frendship ought not to passe, Sed vsq; ad aras, as Pericles the Athenian sayd, so far as was sufferable by the lawes of God) as for that they wer of nature of the felf fame tramp, which their passionate companion was, and would have made no conscience to enterpryse the same for themselves, although the other had not tolde them hys affections: These bee the Fruictes of vnruled Youth. wherein onely the Verdure and greennesse of the Age beareth greatest sway, the wyll whereof reason can not restrayne, which fooner reclineth to the carnall part, than to that which tendeth to the honest repast and contentment of the mynd. The next night, they three accompanied with v. or vi. feruauntes (fo honest as theyr maifters) gaue the onfet in armure and weapons well appointed to defende and hurt, if any refistance were made, they myght be able to repell theyr aduerfaries. Thus about two of the clocke in the night they came to the Mil, the Heauens hauyng throwne theyr mantell ouer the vaporous earthe, and dymmed hir Face with theyr vayle obscure and darke, and yet not futch, but that the ayre was cloudye cleere: and when no man doubted of fo great offence, and of futch vnhappy rape, they brake into the poore Miller's House, beetwene whose armes they toke away his daughter deare, and almost dead for feare, piteously began to cry for help, defending herfelf fo well as the could from those Theeues and Murderers. The defolate father raging with no leffe fury then the Hircanian Tigre, when hir Faucons be kylled or taken away, ran first to one, and then to another, to stay them from carying of hir away, for whom they came. In the end the amorous rauisher of

his daughter fayd vnto hym: "Father, Father, I aduyfe thee to get thee hence if thou loue thy lyfe, for thy force is too weake to refift so many, the least of whome is able to coole this thy foolish heart and choler, for the whych I would be fory, for the great Loue I beare vnto thy daughter, who (I hope) before the depart my company, shal have wherewith to be contented: and thou cause to pacifye this thine immoderate rage, which in vayne thou yalpest forth agaynst this troupe." "Ah false Knaue and theefe," (sayd the honest pore man) "it is thou then, which by thine infamous filthinesse and infaciable knauery, doest dishonor the commendable fame of my daughter, and by like meanes shortness the hoped yeres of me hir poore vnhappy father, loofinge through thy wickednesse, the staffe and stay of myne olde aged life? Thynkest thou Traytor, that living till this day (for all my povertye) in reputation of an honest Man, in myne olde Dayes will become an vnshamefast and vyle Minister and Chapman of my daughter's maidenhoode and virginity? No knaue thinke not that I forget the wrong received of thee, for which by fome meanes or other, I wyll purchase iust reuenge vpon thee or thyne?" The Gentleman caryng little or nothyng for the old man's wordes, hauyng in hys hand his defired spoyle, commanded his Men to marche before with the Mayden, leaving behind the poore olde Man which thundred against them a thousand bitter cursses, threatning and reuyling them, by all the termes he could deuife, defirous (as I think) to have them turne backe to kyll him. But thereunto they gaue fo little heede, as when he wylled them to leaue his daughter behynde them: to whome the amorous courtier addressing himfelfe, began to kysse hir, and assayed by all meanes with pleasaunt Woordes and many sweete promisses to comfort hir: but the poore Wenche knowing full well, that they wente about to play the Butchers wyth her Chastitye, and to commyt Murder wyth the floure of hir Virginity, began to cry fo piteously with dolorous voice, as she would have moved to compassion the hardest Hartes that euer were, excepte the Hearte of hym which craued nothyng more than the spoyle of that his sweetest Enimy. When the poore Wenche faw hir Vertue ready to be spoyled by one, who (not in Maryage ioyned) wente aboute to vyolate and possesse the

fame, and knewe that afterwardes hee woulde vaunte hymfelfe for the Victorye of futch a precious pryce: "Alas (quod she) is it possyble that the Souerayne Iustyce of God can abyde a Myschiefe so greate and curffed, and that the Voyce of a poore Wretched afflicted Mayde cannot he heard in the presence of the Myghty Lord aboue? Why may not I nowe rather fuffer Deathe, than the Infamy whych I fee to wander before myne Eyes? O the good olde Man my deare and louing Father, how farre better had it bene for thee to have flayne mee wyth thy Dagger, betwene the Handes of these moste wycked Theeues, than to let mee goe to bee the praye of those my Foes that seeke the spoyle of Vertue, and the blotte of thy reputation. O happy a hundred hundred tymes bee yee, whych haue already passed the ineuitable tract of Death when ye were in cradle, and I poore vnhappy Wench no leffe bleffed had I bene if pertaker of your Ioy, where now I rest alvue to feele the smarte and Anguish of that Death more egre to support, than that whych deuydeth the body and foule." The Gentleman offended with those complaynts, beganne to threaten, that hee woulde make hir forget hir difordered behaulour, fayinge that shee must change an other tune, and that hir plaints were to no purpose amongs them which cared not, nor yet were bent to stay vppon hir Womanishe teares, Lamentations and cries. The poore Mayden hearinge there refolution, and feeing that shee vaynely dysparckled hir Voyce into the Ayre, began to holde hir peace, whych caufed the Louer to speake vnto hir these wordes: "And what my Wench? Dost thou thinke it straunge, that for the heate of loue I beare to thee that I should force futch violence? Alas it is not malyce nor euill wyll that causeth me to doe the same, it is loue whych cannot bee inclosed, but must needes breake forth to manyfest his force. Ah that thou hadest felt, what I doe suffer and indure for love of thee. I beleeve then thou wouldest not bee so hard hearted, but have pitty vppon the griefe whereof thou shouldest have proved the vehemence." Whereunto the mayde aunswered nothinge but Teares and Syghes, wringing hir Armes and Handes, and fometymes makinge Warre vppon hir fayre Hayre. But all these Feminine Waylinges nothinge mooued thys Gallant, and leffe Remooued hys former defire to have VOL. II.

hir, which hee atchieued in dispite of hir Teeth, so soone as hee arryued at his owne House. The remnaunt of the Night they lay together, where hee vsed hir wyth all sutch kynde of flatteringe and louinge Speech, as a Louer (of longe tyme) a Suter could deuise to do to hir, whom at length he dyd Possesse. Now all these slatteringe Follies tended onely to make hir his owne, to keepe hir in hys Countrey House for hys Pleasure. Shee that for hir Age (as before is sayd) was of condition Sage, and of gentle mynde, began subtilely to diffemble and fayne to take Pleasure in that which was to hir more bitter than any Aloes or Woode of Myrrha, and more agaynst hir heart than remembraunce of Death, whych styll shee wyshed for remedy of hir gryefe, and Voluntaryly woulde haue killed her felfe lyke a Lucrece, if the feare of God, and dreadfull loffe of Body and Soule, had not turned hir mynde, and also hoped in God that the Rauysher should repayre the fault whych he committed, and beare the penaunce for his temerity, whereof she was no whit deceyued, as vee shall perceyue, by that which presently doth follow. Now whilest the Rauisher tooke his pleasure with his Rape, the miserable father made the Ayre to found with his complaints, accufinge fortune for letting the Whorish varlet so to passe, wythout doing him to feele the lustinesse of hys age, and the force that yet reasted in his furrowed face, and corpse withered with length of yeares. In the end knowing that his playnts, curfes, and defire were throwne forth in vayne, perceiuing also his force vnequal to deale with futch an Ennimy, and to get agayne by violence hys stolne Daughter, or to recouer hir by that meanes whereby she was taken away, he determined the next day to go and complaine to the Duke: and vpon that determination he layd him downe to fleepe vnder the trees, which ioyned to the fountayne, where fometimes the Courtier had communed with his daughter. And feeing that the Element began to to shewe some splendent hue Interpaled with coulours of White, Yealow, and Red, Signes preceedinge the rifinge of fresh Aurora, started from his sleepe and tooke hys way to Florence, whither he came, vpon the openinge of the Citty Gates. Then going to the Pallace of the Duke, he tarried vntill he saw the Prynce goe forth to fernice. The good man feeing him of whom he attended to receyue succour, fauour, and instice, began to freat,

and rage for remembraunce of his receyued wronge, and was ashamed to see himself in place not accustomed: and although it grieued his heart wyth hardy speach to presume in presence of so many, yet the iust anger and defire of vengeance emboldned hym fo mutch, as kneelinge vpon his knees before the Maiesty of the Duke, aloud he spake these woordes: "Alas (my Soueraygne Lord) if euer your grace had pity vpon a desolate man, full of dispayre, I humbly befeech the fame that now you do regard the mifery which on enery fide affayleth me. Haue pity vpon the pouerty of that vnfortunate olde man agaynst whom one hath done sutch wrong, as I hope by force of your vertue and accustomed instice, you wil not leave a fin fo detestable without deserved punishment, for respect of mischieses that may insue where sutch wickednesse shalbe diffembled without due correction." Sayinge so, the great teares ran downe his hory Bearde, and by reason of his interrupted fighes and continual fobbes, the panting of his stomack might easily haue bene perceived all riveld for age, and Sunneburned with heate and continuall Countrey trauaile: and that which moved most the standers by, was the ruefull loke of the good old man, who casting his lookes heare and there, beheld eche one with hys holowe and dolorous Eyes, in futch wife as if he had not spoken any word, hys countenance would have moved the Lords to have compassion vpon his misery, and his teares were of sutch force, as the Duke which was a wyfe man, and who meafured thinges by reason's guide, prouided with wisedome, and foreseeinge not without timely judgement, would know the cause whych made that man fo to make his plaint, and notwithstanding affailed (with what suspition I know not) would not have him openly to tel hys tale, but leading him afide, he fayd vnto him: "My frend, albeit that greeuous faultes of great importance, ought grieuously and openly to be corrected, yet it chaunceth oftentimes, that he which in a heate and choler doth execution for the guylt (although that iuftly after hee hath difgested his rage, at leasure hee repenteth his rigor and ouer fodaine feueritie,) offence being naturall in man, may fometyme (where flaunder is not euident) by mild and mercyfull meanes forget the fame without infringing or violating the holy and civil conftitutions of Lawmakers. I speake thus mutch bicause

my heart doeth throbbe that fome of my house have don some filthy faulte against thee or some of thine. Now I would not that they openlye should be slaundered, and yet lesse pretend I to leave theyr faultes vnpunished, specially sutch as by whose offensive cryme the common peace is molested, wherein I desyre, that my People shoulde lyue. For which purpose God hath constituted Prynces and Potestates as shepheardes and guides of hys flocke, to the ende that the Týrannicall fury of the vitious, mighte not destroy, denoure and featter the impotente flock, of no valoure if it be forfaken and lefte forlorne by the mighty Armes of Pryncipalities and Monarchyes. A finguler modesty doubtlesse, and an incredyble example of Clemencye in hym, whome hys Cytyzens thoughte to be a Tyrant and vniust vsurper of a free Segnyorye, who so privily and with futch familiarity, as the Friend could wish of his companion, hearkened to the cause of the poore Countrey man, and moreouer hys modesty so great, as hee would it not to bee knowen what fault it was, or elfe that the offenders should publikely bee accused, offering for all that to be the reuenger of the wronge done vnto the poore, and the punisher of the iniury exercised agaynste the defolate, a worke certainly worthy of a true Chrystian Prince, and which establisheth kingdomes decayed, conserueth those that be, rendring the Prynce to be beloued of God, and feared of his Subjects. The pore olde man feeing the Duke in fo good mynde, and that accordingly hee demaunded to know the wrong don vnto him, the Name of the factor, and that also he had promised him his help and ryghtfull correctyon due vnto the deserved fault, the good olde man I fay conceiving courage, recited from poynt to poynte the whole discourse of the rape, and the violence done, vppon hys poore vertuous Daughter, declaring besides the name and surname of those which accompanied the Gentleman, the author of that conspiracy, who (as we have already fayd) was one that was in greatest fauor with the Duke: who notwithstanding the Loue that he bare to the accused, hearing the vnworthinesse of a deede so execrable, faid: "As God liueth this is a detestable facte, and well deserueth a sharpe and cruell punyshment: Notwithstanding freend. take good heede that thou doeste not mistake the same, by accusing one for an other, for the Gentleman whome thou haste named

to be the rauisher of thy daughter, is of all men deemed to bee very honest, and doe well assure thee that if I finde thee a lyer, thy heade shall answere for example to eche false accuser and flaunderer in time to come. But if the matter be fo true as thou haft favde, I promise thee by the faith I beare to God, so wel to redreffe thy wrong, as thou shalt have cause to be thoroughly satisffied with my juffice." To whome the good olde man thus answered: "My Lord the matter is fo true, as at this day hee keepeth my Daughter (like a common strumpet) in his house. And if it please your highnesse to send thither, you shall know that I do not falfely accuse or vtter lying woordes before you, my Lord and Prynce, in presence of whom as before the mynister and Lyeuetenaunte of God, Man oughte not to speake but truely and religeoully." "Sith it is fo," fayd the Duke, "get thee home to thy house, where God willing, I will be this day at dinner, but take hede vpon thy life, thou fay nothing to any man what fo euer he be: for the rest let me alone, I will prouide according to reason." The good man almost so glad for his good exploit, as the day before he was forowful for his loffe, ioyfully went home to his homely house and Countrey Cabane, whych he caused to be made ready so wel as hee could, attending the comming of his deliuerer, fuccor, support, and judge, who when he had heard feruice, commanded his Horfe to be made ready: "For (fayd he) I heare fay there is a wylde Boare haunting hereby, fo well lodged as is possible to see: wee wyll goe thyther to wake hym from his sleepe and ease, and vse that pastime til our dinner be ready." So departing from Florence, he rode straight vnto the Mil wher his dinner was prepared by hys Seruauntes. There he dined very foberly, and vfing fewe words vnto his company, fate stil al pensiue, musing vpon that he had to doe: For on the one fide the grauitie of the facte moued him rigorously to chastise him which had committed the same. On the other fide the loue which he bare him (mollifing his heart) made him change his minde, and to moderate his fentence. The Prynce's minde, thus wandering beetwene loue and rigor, one brought him worde that the Dogs had roulde the greatest Hart that euer he sawe: which newes pleased him very mutch, for by that meanes he fent away the multitude of his Gentlemen to follow the chase, retaining with him his moste familiar friends, and those that were of his privy and fecrete councel, whom he would to be witnesses of that which he intended to doe, and causing his hoast to come before him, he fayd: "My friend, thou muste brynge vs to the place whereof thys Mornynge thou toldest me, that I may discharge my promyfe." The Courtyers wondred at those Woordes. ignoraunte whereunto the same were spoken: but the good Man whose Hearte leapte for ioy, as already feelynge some greate Benefyte at Hand, and Honoure prepared for the beautyfyinge of hys House, feeynge the Duke on Horsebacke, ran befydes hym in steade of hys Lackey, wyth whome the Prynce held mutch pleafaunt talke all along the way as they wente togyther, but they had not gone farre, but the Gentleman the Rauysher, wyth his Companyons, vnderstandyng that the Duke hunted there aboutes, came to doe hym reuerence: and his Fortune was futch, as hee nor any of his frends perceived the olde man, by meanes whereof they nothing fuspected what did infue. For that cause the said Rauisher said to his prince: "My Lord, if fortune had so mutch fauored me, as I mighte have knowen of your commyng into these quarters, I would have don my duetie to entertaine you, not as appertayneth to the greatnesse of your excellency, but according to the ability of the least, and yet the most obedient of your feruaunts." To whom the Duke diffembling his anger fayd: "Sir, I dined heere hard by within my tents, not knowing that your house was so neare vs: but sith that I have met you vpon your own Marches and Confines, I wyll not goe hence before I fee your lodging: for fo farre as I can iudge by the outwarde parte of this goodly building, me thinkes the workman hath not forgotten any thing that should serve for the fetting forth and ornament of this parte of the house, which for the quantity is one of the fairest plottes that I have seene." So approching the Castell the Duke lyghted to view the commodities of the place, and specially the image, for whych alone hee was departed from his City, whereof the Mayster of the House (dronke with the fodaine pleafure to fee the Duke there) thought nothyng. So descending into the base Court, they saw a Marble fountaine that discharged the water in foure greate gutters, receiued by foure naked Nimphes, and by them poured into Vessells,

richely wrought with Damaskyne, where was an armed Knyght, lying vnder an hyghe and broade tree, that overshadowed the Fountaine: And hard by, they espied a lyttle doore whych shewed the way into fo fingulare and well planted a Garden, as ever the delycious and pleafant Gardens were of Alcinoe: For in the fame (byfides the Artyfyciall Workemanshyppe, and ordinarye Trauell of the Gardener) Nature produced foure Fountaynes in the foure Corners, makynge the Place and plaine of Garden equally parted in fouresquare forme. Now these fountaynes watered all the fayre knots of the fame, wythout any payne to the Gardener, except to open certayne little Conduicts, whereby the water sprange and ran to what part he thought it needfull. I will heere leave to speake of the Trees and fruictes deuided in fiue forme order, the Laberynthes fubtilely and finely wrought, the fweete Herbers yelding futch contentation to the eye, as if the Duke had not respected the wrong done to the Miller's daughter, the gentlenesse of the mayster of the house, and the singularity of the place, perchaunce might have made him forget himselfe within that little earthly Paradife. And to performe the excellency of that Garden, the workinge hand and industry of man, holpen by the benefite of Nature, had formed within the Ground wherein were bestowed a number of Antiquities, and wherein the immortal voice of an Eccho answered their talke with a triple sounde in that profound and earthly place: which moned the Duke to call the Gentleman vnto him, vnto whom he fayd: "If it bee fo, that the rest of the house doe match with that which I have already seene, I am out of doubt it is one of the fayrest and most delectable houses at thys day wythin the compasse of all Italy. Wherefore my Frende, I pray thee that wee may see the whole, both for the contentation of our Mindes, and also that I may make some vaunt that I haue seene the rarest and best furnished little House that is within the iurifdiction of Florence." The Gentleman bathed in ease and full of pleasure, seeynge that the Duke lyked so well his House. brought hym from chamber to chamber, which was enryched eyther with stately tapissarie of Turkey making, or with riche Tables divinely wrought, vtenfils fo neate and fit, as the Duke coulde cast his eye vpon none of them, but he was driuen into an admiration and Wonder. And the further he went, the greater hee fawe the increase, and almost a Regeneration, or as I may fay, a newe Byrth of rare thinges, which made the littlenesse of the Place more Stately and wonderfull: Wherefore hee greatly esteemed hym in hys Mynde whych had deuyfed the Magnificence of futch a Furnyture. After then that hee had visited the Portals, Galleries, Parlers, Chambers, Garrets, Wardrobes, Closets, and chiefest Romes of that house, they came into a Gallerie, which had a direct prospect vpon the Garden, at the end wherof there was a chamber shut, ouer which sutch Antike and Imboffed worke, as it was maruell to behold, and vpon the garden fide in like workemanship, yee mighte haue viewed a troupe of Nymphes (a long the fide of a woode adioyning vpon a great River) flying from an hierd of Satires, that made as though they would have overrunne them: a pleasure it was to see their gaping mouthes, theyr eyes fixed vpon the place where theyr clouen-footed pursuters were, and the countenance of them, which fo well expressed theyr feare, as there wanted nothing but speache, Moreouer a better fight it was to beholde the Satire Bucks, with dysplayed throte, and theyr fyngers poynting at the hast of those pore fearfull runawayes, as though they mocked theyr fodaine flyghte. Within a while after ye might have feene Hercules lyinge a Bed with his wife, towards whom a Faunus came thinking to enjoy the beauty and embracements of the fleping dame: But fayrer it was to fee how that strong Amphitrionian gaue him the mocke, and strained him so hard, as he thought his belly would burfte. The Duke beholding as he thought, the fayrest Chamber of the house so shut, by and by suspected the truth of the cause: For the Gentleman knowing the comming of the Duke, had withdrawen his woman into the same for that it was the most secrete of his house, and the furdest from all ordinary service. Vpon surmise the Duke demaunded wherefore that Chamber was not opened fo wel as the rest: "I suppose the same to be your treafure house?" (quod hee) "and the storehouse of your most delicate things: Wee pray you let vs looke into it." "My Lord" (favd the Gentleman) "the place is to farre out of order, at this time to shew your grace: Moreouer I knowe not where the Keyes be, for thys

morning the keeper of my house is gone into the city, and I can not tell to whom hee hath delyuered them." The Duke which heard the end of his excuse, not accepting the same for the pryce which the Courtier woulde and thoughte to have folde it, was fure then of that which before he did suspect. Wherfore with furious countenaunce he fayd vnto him: "Goe too, goe too, either with the key, or without the Key, let this door be opened, that I may fee all thy fecretes within." The rauisher seeing the Duke to be earnest, could not tell at the first Face, of what Woode to make his arrowes, stode stil astonned, and was surprysed wyth a newe feare. In the end notwythstandyng, playinge the good fellowe, hee went vnto the Duke, in whose eare smilinge hee whispered (bicause he knew right well that the Duke was an indifferent good companion, and loued fo well his neighbor's Wyfe, as his owne:) and fayd: "My Lord there is a prety wench within, whome I do kepe, and would not shewe hir to any lyuing man but to you." "That is the cause I aske" (sayd the duke) "let vs see hir that I may geue iudgement of hir beauty, and tell you whither shee bee worth the keeping or not." The mayster of the house opened the chamber dore, thinking to have gained mutch, and supposed to infinuate himselfe the better into the fauor of the Duke, but immediatly hee faw himfelfe farre deceived of his accompt. For the ravished and shamefast maiden comming forth of the Chamber with hir hayre about hir eyes, and hir garments berent and torne, hir stomake and breaft all naked and discouered, hir Face and Eyes all blubbered wyth Teares, lyke a desperate woman threw hir selfe at the Prince's feete, crying out: "Ah (my lord) beholde heere and haue pity vpon the most vnfortunate Wenche of all most wretched caytyfe Women, who shamefully and Trayterously hath bene abused and defloured by him, whych impudently dareth to bryng you into the place the wytnesse of hys abhominable and wycked Lyfe." The Duke feeing this fight, and having compassion vpon the Maiden, turned his face towardes the Gentleman and hys Companyons (which by chance wer come thither, as the Duke was entred into the Gallerie) not with milde and pleafaut countenance as hee shewed from the beginning, but with a looke fo graue and feuere, as the hardiest of the company could not tell what to do, or what anfwere to make hym. Vpon them than began the ryghteous Prynce to vomit his dyspleasure, sayinge: "Is this the innobling of the Bloud whereof thou art descended, to rauyshe thy Neyghbors and my subjectes Daughters, that duetyfully lyue vnder myne obeyfance and protection? Doest thou thus abuse the familiaritie whych hytherto I have shewed vnto thee? Thinkest thou that the Lawes be peruerted together with the chaunge of the common Wealth of Florence? No, I affure thee, for fo long as the Soule shal abyde within my body, I will be he that shal pursue the wycked wyth all extremitie, and shall not indure the oppressyon of the pore, enough afflicted with their own proper mifery. O God could I have thought that a Gentleman of my House, woulde haue bene fo prodigall of his honour, as to foyle hys Hands fo filthily by rauishing of them which ought to be required, and to dishonour them in place where their Vertue ought to shine for generall example? I cannot tell what stayeth me from cutting those curffed Heades of yours from of your shoulders like arrant Traytors and Theues as you be. Get ye hence, ye infamous villaynes and beaftly Ruffians, the troublers of your Neyghbors rest, and the spoylers of the fame of hir, that is more worth than all ye together." Then speaking to the Mayde hee fayd: "Rise vp my wench, and on me repose thy comfort, for I promise the by the faith of a Gentleman, that I will do thee futch reason, and vse thee so vpryghtlye as bothe my Conscience shal be quieted, thou contented, and thine honour restored for the wrong and iniury whych it hath receiued of these Gallantes." And by and by he commaunded the Miller to come before him, and all those whom he had brought wyth hym to affift his doings, before whom he caufed to be brought both the rauished maiden, and the condempned of the rape: vnto whom he faid: "This is the pray my friends that I fought after, which I have taken without toyles, nets, or chaunting of the Dogs. Beholde, I pray you the Honoure whych my Householde Seruauntes doe vnto my House, who ouerrunne the Symple Countrey People, and rauyshe theyr Daughters betweene the Armes of theyr propre parentes, who breake, beate downe, and ouerthrowe the Doores of theyr Houses, that under the Lawes of our City and ought to enioy lyke Pryuiledge of Lybertye and

Franchyze. If one respecte (whych I wyll not dysclose) dyd not impeache and stay mee, I would doe futch cruell iustice vppon the offenders as the posterity should make report thereof. Notwithstanding it shal suffice that they receive this shame before you all, by feeing themselues vanquished of a crime, which for expiation and reuenge, deferueth most shamefull death, and to receyue of mee for proofe of mercy, an vndeferued pardon of their fault: with condition neuerthelesse that thou (speaking to the Gentleman Rauisher) shalt take this mayden to Wyfe, for otherwyse thou art not able to repayre the honour thou hast taken from hir) and shalt loue hir fo dearely, as fondly heeretofore she was beloued of thee, to esteeme and loue hir so mutch, as if she were the very fister of me the Duke of Florence, who commaundeth thee for the raunsome and redemption of thy head, prefently to mary hir. I will moreouer, and ordayne by reason of hir father's pouerty, that for the wrong which he hath receyued of you three, that his daughter shall bee indowed wyth two thousand Crownes by him that marrieth hir, and with a thousand of eyther of the two other, to th' entent that if hir husband dy (wythout heire,) shee haue wherewith honestly to mayntayne hir degree, and the honest port of hir house. And hereof I will that without delay a contract be made, and a publike inftrument of good record inrolled, fwearing once agayne before thee, that if I vnderstand, thou vse her otherwise, than a Wyfe ought to bee of hir husband, I will deale futch punishment and correction ouer thee, as all men in time to come shal take example." The Gentleman which expected no better meede than death, joyfull of that fentence, fell downe proftrate before the Duke in figne of confente, and the lyke did his Companions. But the ioy of the Miller and his daughter cannot be expressed, who extolled the vertue and inflice of their Prynce vp into the heauens: to whom with futch humility they rendred theyr humble thanks, as he would doe that faw himselfe in so great calamity, and brought to futch dishonour as earst they were seene to be, by meanes of him that acknowledged one of them for his fonne, and the other for hir lawfull Spoufe. Thus was the mariage confummat in presence of the Duke, with so great love, and content of all partes, as there was rage and trouble for the Rape of the

The Duke beinge retourned to Florence, the Brute of this act incontinently was disparkled almost throughout the Region of Italy, and this judgement no leffe prayfed, than the fentence which Kynge Solomon gaue vppon the Controuersie of the two Harlots for the living childe, which eyther of them claimed for hir owne. And for this cause was hee extolled aboue any other Prynce or Lorde that in tymes passed did commaund or rule the Common wealth wythin the Countrey of Thuscan. In thys wyse that modesty made him worthy of the Principality, which almost against all ryght he had vsurped, and of a prayse whych shall no lesse continue, than the Memory of man is able to extende the fame from one generation to an other, and which those that be Couetous of the prayle of a Prince so vertuous, iust and modest, shal not cease to illustrate and gloriously advance him in open enydence, to the ende that hys like may exercise like things, or of greater confequence, by not fufferinge venemous and vnprofitable hearbs to grow within the Garden of their Common wealth. Wythin the which, a little mildew or vntimely rayne, is able to marre and corrupt all the good Seedes and Plantes fowen, and grifted there before: For commonly wicked Weedes and Bastard

Impes take deeper roote than those that beare a good and fauorous fruict, for conservation whereof, the diligent husbandman imployeth his labour throughout all the Seasons of the yeare.

END OF VOL. II.

BALLANTYNE PRESS: EDINBURGH AND LONDON.



